



My Lilly

By

Mapule Molwele

Hey my name is Nthombenhle Lilly Khumalo I'm the last born of khumkani Khalid Khumalo and Mathapelo Zendaya Unokhanya Thandolwethu Khumalo, I have older siblings which is 8 boys and 2 girls you will get to know them as time goes by. Well I'm turning 17 and I'll be doing my first year as a business science student and I want to go study in joburg because I want to learn how to be independent, one thing I love about our family is that we very close especially us as siblings all 10 of them study here in Cape town my parents bought them a huge house so that they can have some sort of freedom but that is not enough for me I do not

want to live with them not that I don't like them it's just I feel like I'm alone I've always felt like that, something is missing in me and know its because my twin died before I could even meet her. All my siblings are each others best friends yes there is 10 of us but amongst them they have that one person they click with like my sisters are identical twins so they do everything together even with my brothers it's the same, they do include me in their things and everything but I just don't fit in I've tried so many times but it's just not working and I also don't tell them that I sometimes feel alone and lost, but what I love the most is how Owami (my mother that's how we call her we don't call her mom or mommy and it's my dads fault) as I was saying I love how Owami is able to see right through me I do not have to explain myself to her I've always felt like the odd one out and having eyes that have different colors did not even help yes my siblings were there for me whenever some kids tried to bully me and I also know how to stand up for myself it's just I never vocally told my mom how I felt different from all her kids but she always

knew somehow and always knew what to say to make me feel better, enough about that let me give you a short description of myself. I'm short very short, very light skinned, I have long poufy hair I always braid it, I have deep dimples they always show when I speak, laugh or make some facial expressions, my one eye is black and another is bright blue, I have a killer body and since I'm into gymnastics they made my body look nice even though my ass and hips are big but they are toned I also have small boobs and a small waist I actually have a cute six-pack. My hobbies are ridding horses my grandfather bought me a white one apparently I got the love of ridding them from my grandmother his wife and I also kind of look like her I saw her pictures she was white. I'm also into knives I even have a collection and I'm good at using them well the love of knives came from being trained by my parents on how to fight, use guns and knives they always tell us it's just to protect ourselves but I know that my mother is training us to take over her black eye seat and honestly I don't want it I want to start my own

thing just like she did I don't think my other siblings are aware that our parents are training us for the underworld expect me and Thandokuhle I call him kuhle I'm actually much closer to him maybe because his very quiet and hardly talk most of the time when we spend the day together it's always in comfortable silence I think it's our way of communicating even when one of us is angry, sad or happy for some reason we always find ourselves together hiding from everyone and just chilling in silence most of the time we watch the stars at our rooftop we always find each other there. I'm also very close to my grandfather maybe because I remind him of my grandmother we do a lot of things together he sometimes takes me to his business meetings and I chill there looking like his PA that's how I fell in love with the business world hence I'll be studying business science next year.

Now its just after new year's and we all chilling at home even my cousins are here uncle Nkosis kids they are sextuplets 3 boys 3 girls we pretty close we even call uncle Nkosi dad and my dad is daddy.

My parents are also here cuddling I'm chilling next to Kuhle with my head on his shoulder.

Owami: so are you quints excited about going to varsity?

Well I'm part of the quintuplets its 4 boys and me according to mom we were sextuplets and she miscarried one which is my twin I really wish she was here. Back to this topic all my brothers say how excited they are and everything I'm just sitting here looking at them and I didn't even apply to study here in Cape town I applied in one university and it's in Johannesburg lucky I also applied for a bursary and I got it a full bursary from one of the best accounting firms in Africa it's called H Accounting. I know my parents can afford to pay for me but I did that just incase they refuse then I have a solid plan I also have a lot of money saved up and some invested I'm happy my parents always taught us the value of money and through out high school I've been saving so if my parents refuse I can afford to buy myself a house and live

of my savings for at least 5 years. I'm bought back from my thoughts by my dad.

Daddy: Entle and you? How do you feel about moving to a house that has no parents or going into a new environment?

I look at him for a while then I look at mom everyone is waiting for my answer they even quiet looking at me there's too many blue eyes in this room these people look like aliens honestly they are just weird.

Owami: Entle baby talk to us and stop making your funny faces.

Me: sorry ... uhm I didn't apply at the university here in Cape town so I don't think I'll be moving in the with everyone.

Now everyone is just waiting for me to say I'm joking.

Owami: please don't tell me you taking a gap year.

Me: no I'm not.

Daddy: so when your siblings are going to school what will you be doing?

Me: I'll be going to school just not in cape town.

My mother is now just looking at me even kuhle moved just so he can look at me properly. I know my mom is searching for something in my eyes I hope she finds it because I'm not going to change my mind about moving.

Sbusiso: dude can you just tell us what you talking about.

His frustrated well all my siblings look frustrated by me they normally like this whenever they try to get me to talk I don't communicate easily I normally just answer what is asked and if you don't ask me I don't say anything, so they get very impatient with me sometimes it does hurt my feelings when they get impatient because I try to communicate my emotions to them but I find it very difficult to do that so I just end up bottling things. My parents and kuhle and my grandfather are the ones who are patient with me they don't rush me or push me they just create a safe place for me to open up naturally to them. I sigh.

Me: I got accepted at a university in Johannesburg I'll be studying a degree in business science.

Their jaws drop I look at my mother and we stare at each other for a while when she finds her answer she just stands and walks out my dad follows her.

Siyanda: you are not going there Ntombentle and it's not up for discussion.

I raised my eyebrow this one thinks his our father sometimes. I just stand up and leave I go to the rooftop and lay there looking at the stars. After a while I feel Kuhle lay next to me I turn my head to look at him he does the same.

Kuhle: you leaving me.

Me: I'm not.

Kuhle: yes you are you know I'll be alone.

Me: I'll be just a phone call away and you can come visit me any time and I'll always come home to visit.

Kuhle: it's not the same and you know it.

I sigh I know what he means me and him are kind of the same and we understand each other no one understands us.

Me: I would never leave you I promise I just need to do this by myself and you know it.

We look at each other for a while for some reason we always communicate better through our eyes I assure him that I'm not leaving him. Finally I see his doubt disappear slowly.

Kuhle: why Johannesburg?

Me: honestly I don't know I just chose it.

Kuhle: ill call you everyday.

Me: you promise?

Kuhle: yes I promise and you must take care of yourself I hope you being away you find what you looking for so you can be fully happy.

Me: me too. I hope you make a friend when you get to varsity.

Kuhle: I highly doubt that will happen Khumalo kids are unable to make friends yall are weird as fuck.

I just chuckle because his right we can do anything but make friends. We then chill in silence I fell asleep on his chest and I woke up in bed in the morning around 4am I decided to go to the gym when I got there I found Owami fighting two robots Gosh my mother is goals hey I really aspire to be like her strength is amazing I sit there and look at her do her thing, when she was done she took a break I walked towards her and gave her some water she drank and she gave me gloves I put them on. I fought for a while as usual she beat the fuck out of me but I'm honestly better than before I just need more practice and clean up here and there then I'll be good as her.

Owami: you really leaving?

Me: yes.

Owami: but I don't understand why Entle wami why are you leaving us?

Me: ma I'm not leaving I'm just going to school in another province not a different continent, plus you will be able to visit me at anytime and I can come home whenever I feel home sick.

Owami: okay why do you want to stay in another province?

Me: Owami I need to find a piece of myself I have a void and I don't know how to fill it maybe a different environment will do it I don't know and besides that I want to be able to stand by myself.

I say this softly looking at her, her eyes get teary as she is looking at me I can see she just wants to fill in that void but doesn't know how she just wants to make me happy I love her so much.

Me: I love you ma I'm not leaving you or anyone please don't hold me back.

She just hugs me tightly my mom is being dramatic hey. A week past I did my registration online next week I'll be moving to Johannesburg I'm actually very excited my grandfather was not really happy about me moving but since he spends most of his

time there for business purposes he is kind of okay with it. Owami got me a two bedroom apartment in one of her properties and dad got me a black BMW and I'm happy with it because it won't bring too much attention to me the last thing I need is to be driving a very expensive car while I'm just a student that is just unnecessary attention. For some reason everyone has decided that it's best they accompany me honestly these aliens are going to bring me too much attention I don't need that.

We now flying to Johannesburg we using the private jet and these people are just loud I can't wait for them to go back I need my silence. We finally arrive and now my excitement is over the roof we get to my apartment well I didn't even decorate it but I'm happy with how Owami made it in my style I like it plus this complex has a gym so I'm good she even bought my bow and arrow. Remember I told you I like knives well I actually like anything sharp I'm very good at shooting arrows this hobby I pick up when I was with my grandfather he took me with him to some farm he

was there for business and I was there for the horse rides then I saw a small boy shooting arrows and he taught me so now its actually one of my favorite things to do and I'm good at it I need to look for a farm close by that will allow me to go for horse rides and bow arrow shooting. My parents decided to go to Soweto to my grandmother so I'm left with these aliens and they very noisy I'm sure my neighbors are complaining. We all slept in my two bedroom apartment we were squeezed and I felt happy to have them here I'm really going to miss being around them and their noise.

Eventually everyone left and today I went for my orientation and everything went well I got lost a few times and no I didn't make any friends people look at me weirdly I know its because of my eyes and it doesn't help that I also stare them when they staring at me. It's been a good few weeks and now we in the middle of February and honestly so far I'm loving the fresh air but I do miss my family I talk to kuhle everyday my dad calls me every morning even my grandfather. I'm part of the gymnastics team at the varsity and I'm happy I

joined a kick boxing class too I enjoy them very much even though the guys find me sexy at first but now they fear me since I kick ass mommy taught me well. I just left campus its around 7PM I was in the library finishing my assignment as I drive back to my apartment I decide to go to the garage to get some snacks its Thursday I do not have classes on Fridays so I'm stocking up for binge watching movies and series. I just parked my car I walk inside I'm currently looking at all these snacks I love snacks always have them. I take about 5packs of chips 2 big packs of sweets and 2 of popcorn I'm not a fan of chocolate I never buy it as I'm busy I hear gun shots outside and a car speeding off I get scared but I decide to go look when I walk out I see a man laying on the floor bleeding and his starting to choke on his blood I see the patrol attendants just standing there looking at him I run to the guy his been shot on his chest and upper abdomen I think its four bullets I try to stop the bleeding but it's not working I have both my legs on his sides I'm basically on top of him when I see that trying to apply pressure is not

working I stick my four fingers in his bullet holes then he slowly stops choking on his blood and the blood has stopped oozing out I look at him he looks dark skinned I see his hazel eyes look at me and he smiles I look at my hand and realize that I can not move it or he will die I reach for my phone in my pocket I call the ambulance and explain what is happening they tell me they will be here in 5 min I look back at this guy.

Me: hey you going to be okay just breath slowly and don't sleep keep your eyes on me okay.

I say softly eventually I hear the ambulance they finally figure out how to get us both in the car because I'm not allowed to move my hand I can see that the guy wants to sleep now they busy doing what ever on him and I'm still on top of him with my fingers inside of him. I tell them to drive to a private hospital but definitely not my dads he would kill me and ship me back to Cape town once he finds out I put myself in such a situation. As soon as the we get to the hospital they attend us we were moved to the surgery room and I was still

on top with my fingers inside him, they do their thing this is actually fascinating after a while I was told I can remove my fingers what a relief I was starting to experience some cramps from my muscles. I then later go home I'll come check on him tomorrow I took an uber to the garage and I drove home it was now around 4am I took a shower I was covered in blood I throw away I'm bloody clothes I fell asleep immediately. As I was sleeping I started to have a weird dream I saw my grandmother and my twin sister she looked exactly like me it's just her hair is longer and she looked so beautiful they were both dressed in white dresses she smiled at me I smiled back.

Her: my name is Nobuhle your twin sister. I need you to listen to me because you can not stay long here. Whenever you need me just call my name three times and I'll be there okay.

Me: I don't understand.

Her: Nthombenhle just call Nobuhle three times and I'll be there.

She then pushed me I felt like I was falling from a very high building by the time I was about to hit the floor I woke up fast sweating and shaking and breathing fast I look over the window and its already morning the sun is shining bright.

Me: Nobuhle Nobuhle Nobuhle

I said in a whisper holding my blankets for dear life, it suddenly got windy in my room then she appeared I got so scared and jumped back screaming I'm seeing ghosts this is not real.

Her: calm down I'm not here to hurt you Nthombenhle.

She said softly something about her is calming. Her aura is warm and nice I found myself relaxing we kept eye contact all this time she also has one blue eye and one black eye.

Me: you not real you dead I think I'm going crazy.

Her: you not crazy okay. Yes I am dead but my spirit is not, I found a way to reach out to you so I can communicate with you whenever. Our ancestors were not really happy about it but I

convinced them I can't take it when you busy feeling alone and lost it bothers me because I feel whatever you feel and whenever you like that I can not do my job properly as protecting you and our siblings. Nthombenhle you not alone you've never been alone I've always been here for you just couldn't see me. Unfortunately the void you feeling I can not fill but someone is going to fill it so do no worry about that with time you'll see things will fall into place so please stop feeling lost and alone you hurting me.

I was in tears already but I did feel better that she is here as for the void I guess I have to wait after that small conversation she disappeared I took a deep breath I checked the time it was around 11am. I woke up and took a shower I fixed my bed and decided to go to the hospital just to check up on that guy I don't even know his name but luckily some nurse remembered me so she showed me his room, the moment I walked my heart started to race and I started feeling some butterflies in my stomach okay this is weird he was sleeping peacefully without a shirt you can tell he hits the

gym because his actually very big maybe close to my dads body. He is dark skinned it's very smooth and its covered in tattoos I cant see them properly because he has a bandage across his chest his facial hair and hair looks well groomed he has a neat mohawk bushy eyebrows Gosh he looks so hot I'm staring at him and he starts to open his eyes I take a step back when his eyes are done scanning the room they land on me we stare at each other with no one saying anything I really don't know what to say he has small hazel eyes my stomach is really feeling weird right now I think I should leave I was about to walk out when the doctor walked in.

Doctor: finally you awake hey.

Me: hi I was just leaving.

Doctor : no wait I need to talk to you.

Hot guy: where am I?

Gosh his very deep voice just made my knees weak.

Doctor: at the hospital you were shot and when you fell I think you hit your head hard do you remember what happened?

Hot guy: uhmmm... no I don't remember. Who am I?

Eh... me and the doctor looked at each other this is going to be a problem.

Doctor: looks like you experiencing temporary memory loss don't worry about it everything will come back slowly I'm just going to keep you for a night lucky the bullets did not do that much damage thanks to you Miss sticking your fingers in him other wise we would be talking a different story. I'm only keeping him here just to ensure that everything is okay when he gets home you will have dress his wounds I will have a nurse show you okay.

Wait what?? I do not know this man.

Me: doctor I do not know this man I just saw him laying there bleeding and I just helped.

The doctor looks at me then back at him I think it just registered that this man has no where to go. He sighs.

Doctor: then hospital bill? I can not keep him here forever we need the bed for other patients.

I sigh. God what have I got myself into?? I look at this guy and he just have has a blank face on. Looks like I'm going to hide this man in my apartment.

Me: okay fine I'll settle the bill and sign his discharge papers tomorrow is there anything else?

Him: you might have to bath him too for a week or two as he cant move his upper body that much then two weeks later he can come for a check up he should be okay by then.

Me: okay

The doctor checks on him and a nurse comes to show me how dress his wounds after when she went to bath him I just left and went to the mall I bought him everything he might need when he lives with me from clothes to toiletries I hope I

took the right size. This man has to get his memory back fast I cant hide him forever . When I'm done I buy us food and drive back. When I walk in he turns to look at me and smiles my stomach starts going that weird thing and my knees feel shaky. I put the food on the table and everything else I put in the cardboard. I take out the food I start to eat he is just looking at me.

Me: you not hungry?

Him: it hurts when I try to move my hands please feed me.

Me: okay.

I stand and sit on the bed facing him I take his food and start to feed him while I eat all this time his looking at me I think this guy is weird and I don't know what are these things I feel in my body every time I'm near him. Well today I just had him discharged we just arrived at my apartment and I his now chilling watching tv me and him don't talk and I'm good with that I go prepare his bedroom

when I'm done I go cook then dish up for him and myself in one plate I feed him while I eat when I'm done he takes his medicine and go sleep I just go to study. I go to sleep around 2am I wake up early I go check on him and his up already its around 8am.

Me: morning

He looks cute when he just woke up.

Him: morning.

Me: do you want to bath first or breakfast first?

Him: I think bath first.

Me; okay I'll be back.

I go back to my room I fix my bed I wear my spots bra and tights my body is out there my boobs are B cups my six pack is out to play these tights show all my ass and hips honestly I look hot lucky my hair is in a cornrows I'm going to give him a shower because its easier but there is no way I'm going to be naked with him in there. I walk back to his room and his sitting there shirtless Gosh this man is hot. He looks at me and his jaw drops he

swallows his spit I walk to him and stand in front on him between his legs I remove his bandages I keep getting goosebumps whenever my hand touches his skin and his breathing different.

Me: are you okay?

Him: uhmmm... yes yes... I'm I'm fine

His stuttering okay weird when I'm done removing them he follows me to the bathroom I open the water in the shower and wait for the right temperature I tell him to come in he walks in and he still has his underwear on but it looks bigger on his penis his very tall my head is just below his chest for fuck sakes his just huge and sexy and this water is just making everything extra I see all his muscles whenever he moves they move with him I wash his upper body when I'm done I look down.

Me: I think you have to take that off.

Him: uhmmm... okay

Me: can I take it off for you since you cant move much.

Him: okay

I remove his underwear and his dick jumps out looking hard with veins my eyes pop I look up at him shocked why is his dick this big okay I've never seen a dick before but this is does not look normal.

Him: I'm sorry I just cant control him.

Me: okay.

After I remove it I clean him up I go on my knees and wash his legs and feet when I'm done I tell him to turn around I was his firm bums I hear him chuckle when he turns around I was his penis I have to wash it too right? As im busy cleaning it up I hear him moan I look up to him and his eyes are small and red he looks down at me.

Him: I think that's enough washing for the day

His voice sounds deeper even though he said that whispering. I feel a tingle sensation in my viginia.

Me: okay .

When his we done I dry him up and we go to his room I lotion him I love touching his skin it's so smooth and dark it's like chocolate I want to lick it.

Gosh Lilly stop thinking like that. I bandage him as soon as I'm done I hear a knock I run to the window to see and it's my grandfather shit shit shit I run to his room I tell him to go to my room and stay there and be silent. I take off the spots bra and tights I even forgot his in my room I wrap the towel around me I turn and find him looking down okay good I walk out and open for Baba.

Me: morning Baba.

He walks in and kisses my forehead.

Him: morning princess how are you?

Me: I'm well thanks I just took a shower and how are you?

Him: I'm okay I'm actually glad you took your shower already I wanted you to accompany me to a meeting it's at this other farm close by I'm sure you might like to ride a horse.

Yes I want to go with him but I cant leave Mr. sexy alone I need to come up with an excuse a good one even.

Me: eish baba I would love to tag along but I cant I have to study and finish my assignment that's due on Wednesday can we go next Friday?

Him: that's no problem princess let me leave then or I'll be late I'll see you during the week okay.

Me: okay baba I love you

Him: I love you too

He stands I walk him to the door he kisses my forehead and leaves the moment I close the door I breath out I'm glad he didn't suspect anything but knowing him his probably waiting for me to come clean anyway I walk back to my bedroom I find him laying on my bed naked why didn't he put on a towel?

Me: his gone you can go get dressed

Him: okay

He leaves my room I go take a quick shower I settle for a baggy shirt and sweat pants I go to the kitchen I find him watching cartoons I make breakfast and dish up for us I go back to him and feed him while I eat after I give him his medication

the rest of the day we spend binge watching my series and eating junk I ordered in so I wont be cooking that's what I normally do on Sundays I chill and do absolutely nothing. For some reason he ended up falling asleep on my lap now I'm just staring at him I wonder what's his story why would someone want to kill him if only I knew his name then I would check him out on the internet or Instagram or Facebook or something. I cant even ask kuhle about this he would kill me I'm still staring at him he really looks pretty I touch his nose he moves a little and I stop I wonder if his lips are soft I've never been kissed all the guys either fear me or my brother so this is the closest I've been to a guy who is not family. I touch his lips gently they feel smooth I move to his beard on his chin and its soft. He opens his eyes and finds me looking at him I just carry on with what I'm doing I move my hand to his chicks I squeeze them a little they very soft like marshmallows or a baby's bum I keep analyzing his face he has a scar that cuts through the corner of his bushy eyebrows I put my

finger on it all this time his looking at me when I'm done I go back to look at the tv and eat my snacks.

Me: tomorrow I have to go to school I leave early and you probably will be sleeping so I'll bath you when I come back I will leave food for you in the fridge you will just have to warm it up but I'll come during my lunch break to check up on you. If you hear someone knock please don't open at all.

Him: okay.

The next day I wake up at 4am I go to they gym I come back take a shower make breakfast I check on him and his sleeping. I take my school bag and car keys and I leave as I lock the door the girl next door does the same I normally see her around she looks like a typical slay queen I have nothing against girls who have blessers I'm sure they have their own reasons that have nothing to do with me plus it's not my place to judge at the end of the day you an adult and fully capable of making your own choices. As I walk to the parking with her behind me.

Her: hey I'm Lerato I live next door

Me: hey I'm Lilly

Her: it's nice to finally meet you I've been meaning to speak to you but you look scary and very beautiful.

Me: it's okay I get that a lot and you also look beautiful.

Her: thank you let me go I have to catch a taxi.

Me: it's okay I can drop you off I'm sure we going to the same campus I think I saw you the other day.

Her: thank you so much you just saved me hey.

We drive to campus with her talking apparently she's doing her second year in marketing she's okay I guess I cant say much about her eventually when we get to campus she sees her friends and they start screaming at each other causing a scene I immediately leave her there I don't like drawing attention to myself. I go for my classes it's now lunch time and luckily my class after lunch is canceled so I just go back I find sexy marshmallow stretching in the middle of the lounge I just look at him.

Me: hi.

Him: hey how was school?

Me: it was just fine nothing interesting happened.
And did you manage by yourself this morning?

Him: yes I even took a shower by myself .

Me: uhmmm

Minus one problem I don't think I want to see his
big wee-wee again I go make myself a sandwich he
says he doesn't want one I sit in front of the tv and
start eating he keeps looking me and back at the tv
why is he being weird.

Him: you don't talk much do you?

Me: nope

Him: okay. Do you have friends I've never seen you
talk to them or about them but you always receive
calls at night or you have a boyfriend?

I look at him with my eyebrow raised.

Me: I don't have friends or a boyfriend I receive
calls from my family since they live far.

Him: where are you from

Me: Cape town

Him: okay

We go back to silence eventually later I study and cook and go to sleep that's normally my routine I really need to find a farm close by.

Amukelani Michael Hlangwane

My name is Amukelani Michael Hlangwane I'm currently stay with this girl she said her name is Lilly she's so beautiful but very intimidating I wonder why her eye have different colors, let's not even talk about her body every time I go to sleep I just get a wet dream when she took a shower with me I felt like dying. Every time her beautiful hands touched me I would get goosebumps she makes me feel foreign things I have never been scared of girls but this one is another thing even the way she looks at me it makes my heart race her eyes are really scary but something draws me to her I've never been comfortable with chilling with a girl even though she doesn't talk much but I enjoy her company. I actually remember everything I'm even shocked that she doesn't know me I'm

actually famous everyone knows me because of my business which is a Accounting firm called H Accounting and I own a lot of taxis here in Gauteng and Limpopo I got shot because some stupid man wants to take my routes by force when I refused he started a taxi war honestly I believe I'm fair I'm not greedy if he wanted to use my routes he should have asked nicely and we would've came up with a deal that will benefit both of us there are a lot of taxi guys who use my routes they just pay me a certain percentage and they happy with it because it's not even that much so I don't understand where is this idiot coming from. The reason I'm still here is because the moment I step out that door people will recognize me I'm sure some think I'm dead or something right I just want to heal fast so I can leave I don't want them to find me here they might hurt Lilly and it will be mu fault. A part of me wants to tell her what is going on but she just scares me. Let me quickly give you a description of myself. I am 26 years old and rich and very hot and handsome girls always throw themselves at me I have one daughter she is 3 years old with a girl

called Palesa she was just a fuck buddy next thing she was pregnant maybe she wanted to trap me I don't know but it didn't work I've never been in a relationship before but that might change because of Lilly I think I love her and how selfless she is. I'm the only son amongst 3 girls my father passed away when I was doing grade 11 he left all his businesses to my mother I'm Tsonga and I'm from Limpopo Giyani. Well my mother ran down all my dad's businesses and we got broke within 3 years luckily he left trust funds for all his children but my two older sisters blow it on useless things and dropped out of school now they both have 3 children each with different fathers my little sister is doing her grade 11 well my mother used her trust fund once she got broke so I pay her fees I don't mind because she is the only one at home who uses her brains as for my mother and sisters I send them money and support their kids because I know if I don't those kids will suffer. Today it's Friday she is here she said she doesn't have classes on Fridays I'm feeling much better now I honestly can't take my eyes off her she's concentrating on

her cartoons I actually find her very different there's something about her that I cant put my finger on.

Me: Lilly.

Her: uhmmm...

Me: I remember everything

She turns to look at me with those eyes, why is she so intimidating. I tell her the whole story hoping she doesn't see me differently from now on because I want to make her my woman as I'm telling her why I got shot and that I need to leave so I can go fix this mess she's just looking into my eyes without moving them I cant read her facial expression.

Her: okay.

Me: that's it? Just okay?

Her: did you expect me to say something else?

Me: I don't know I just didn't expect just 'okay'.

She shrugs her shoulders and goes back to the tv I honestly don't know what to think.

Me: do you see me different now that you know I'm in the taxi business?

She turns again to look at me.

Her: no

Then she goes back to her tv. One thing I've noticed about her is she doesn't easily open up.

Me: so if I asked you out on a date would you go out with me?

She looks at me again with her cute expression even her deep dimples are showing my god she's so beautiful I'm going to marry her.

Her: I don't know

Me: okay I'll ask you out when I'm done fixing this mess I don't want you to get hurt in the process .

One thing I've realized ever since I came here and spend time with Lilly I've found nothing but peace she has a way of calming my spirit I like it. She stands up and walk to her room and comes back with a comb I see her trying to upbraid herself well let me do that for her because I always did my sisters and mother I even know how to braid hair.

Me: let me help you with that.

She was hesitant at first then she gave it to me she set on the floor between my legs and I start taking off the hairpiece my god her hair is so soft and beautiful and long I think it's just over her shoulder blade. When we done we go to the bathroom to wash it she bands over the bathtub I take the shower handle and adjust the water temperature I start to wash her head while I massage it and she keeps moaning my god I feel like my dick is going to pop when I'm done I blow dry her my god her hair is so beautiful I neatly tie it into a bun I give her mirror and she smiles I think it's the second time I see her smile the first time it was when I thought I was dying.

Her: how did you learn how to do hair like that?

Me: I have 3 sisters and I'm the only guy.

Her: okay thank you.

Later we have dinner you know every time I see her eat she hardly uses her cutlery unless she has too she really has nice small hands her nails are

also done. As I was saying I think she hates eating with cutlery its actually cute. When we done eating I help her wash the dishes all this time we quiet when we done I decide to risk it all I hug her from behind I feel her freeze. I whisper in her ear.

Me: relax I will not hurt you I just want to say thank you for what you've done no one would have done what you did for a stranger not only did you save my life but you paid for my hospital Bill's and nursed me back to health and not once did you make me feel unwelcomed in your home.

She turns around and looks up at me I pick her up and she wraps her legs around me I put her on the counter and stand between her legs I keep my eyes on her I think that's how she communicates and right now I can see that she's trying to process what is happening.

Me: I think I'm in love with you.

She looks in my eyes for a while like she's searching for something.

Her: I don't know what to say.

Me: you don't have to say anything please let me make you happy that's all I ask.

Her: I've never had a boyfriend before.

Me: let me be your first I've also never had a girlfriend before

LILLY

I'm sitting here on the counter looking at this beautiful marshmallow asking me to be his girlfriend I do not even know how to girlfriend, what exactly do girlfriends do? I don't even know what to do with a boyfriend. This is just a lot hey.

Me: I don't know Amu.

Him: you don't have to give me an answer now.

Me: okay

I look down on his full lips I wish I knew how to kiss I would just smash my lips on him I was pulled back from my thoughts by someone calling me.

....ppppsssst entle entle

I look over his shoulder is we Nobuhle. For fuck sakes couldn't she choose a better time to appear I didn't even call her.

Nobuhle: kiss him

Me: what??

Amu looks behind him to see who am talking too I quickly turn his face and smash my lips on his okay now I don't know what to do I let him go and look down can this world open up so I can jump in.

Nobuhle: I'm sure he tastes nice uhmmm...

I look over again why is she still here I swear people are going to think I'm crazy talking to a ghost. Amu pulls my attention back to him by touching my chin he slowly moves forward and softly kisses me.

Me: I cant kiss

I say on his lips he chuckles and tell me to follow his lead he now has both his hands on my chicks, my hands are on his waist I feel him take in my bottom lip my head tilts on the side next thing I feel his tongue softly move in my mouth gosh this

is so nice I could do this the whole day if this is what girlfriends do then I'm sold. We both pull out to catch our breath he has his forehead on mine then he looks at me and smiles I'm just staring at his lips I think I found my new favorite snack I'm disturbed by someone again.

....psssst Entle Entle

I look behind him again its Nobuhle doesn't this one have a job to do for the ancestors like buy them bread or something.

Nobuhle: how was your first kiss?

She asks excited I feel like screaming at her but I can't because Amu will definitely think I'm crazy so I just ignore her. Eventually we go prepare for bed now I'm in my bed smiling touching my lips trying to remember his lips. I'm disturbed by Nobuhle.

Nobuhle: I say go to him and taste him again clearly you liked his lips.

Me: why do you appear in odd times what's wrong with you?

Nobuhle: I'm sorry I just wanted to see my twinie get her first kiss I'm never going to experience that so I wanted to see.

Me: Nobuhle you can not pop up when I'm with people especially when I'm kissing someone.

Nobuhle: stop being dramatic no one can see or hear me except you.

Me: exactly my point people are going to think I'm crazy talking to myself.

Nobuhle: we both know you don't care about what people say or think about you.

Me: can you just go away I want to sleep now.

Nobuhle: no tell me how he tastes first.

Me: no.

Nobuhle: please Entle pretty please I'll leave once you tell me.

Me: fine he tastes like marshmallows.

She screams dancing what kind of ancestor is this.

Me: can you leave now.

Nobuhle: okay goodnight baby I'll be watching you anyway his coming to sleep with you enjoy and don't do things I wouldn't do.

Me: what are you talking about.

I hear a knock on the door I look back at where she was standing and she's gone just great I go open and its Amu standing there with his chocolate self in boxers.

Him: can I please sleep with you I just want to hold you.

I look at him and his serious I've never slept with a boy before. What if I snore or fart I really like farting in my sleep imagine trying to hold in my fart because his sleeping with me.

Him: Lilly

He says waving his hand on my face.

Me: okay

I say as I move he walks in and gets into my blankets I switch off the lights and join him he pulls me closer and I climb on top of him his laying on his back he wraps his strong arms around me

my head is on his chest I can hear his heart beat I feel him kiss my forehead and whisper I love you I immediately fall asleep.

I wake up in the morning alone in bed I reach for my phone it's around 7 am I remember in slept on top of Amu. I see breakfast on my stand I sit up and reach for it there's also a note I open it and it reads' morning my angel I had to leave while you were sleeping because I don't like goodbyes I'll be gone for a while to fix some things as soon as I'm done I promise I'll come back for you please take care of yourself love Amukelani'. I sigh I hope he comes back soon. Today I'll b going out with my grandfather so I go take a shower and get dressed in high waist black Jean's and a white golf shirt I tuck it in and wear my white kicks I straighten my hair and let it lose. I hear a knock on the door I know it him so I grab my bag and phone and go open I see him standing there in his military boots, black military pants and a long sleeve white t shirt that shows off his muscles, I swear my grandfather doesn't look like his in his 60s he looks like his in his 40s even when his with my dad they look more

like brothers but honestly he really takes good care of himself he eats right, goes to the gym often we even go for facials together. I jump in his arms he spins me around while I giggle I miss him so much he puts me down and kisses my forehead we interrupted by Lerato from next door.

Lerato: hey friend

Eh... a whole friend?? I raise my eyebrow and look at her I honestly don't like this chick there's just something wrong with her so I just look at her, when she realizes I'm not going to greet her she greets Baba and he greets back I turn around and lock the door.

Me: Baba let's go we going to be late.

Him: okay

He takes my hand and we walk away. We jump in his mustang and he drives off.

Him: you really don't like her?

Me: no I don't.

He laughs and we rap along to the music we finally get to the farm he told me about I'm get excited I

meet the owner and we go horse racing Gosh riding a horse is so fun the adrenaline is amazing as always I come out first. Luckily the farm has bow and arrow shooting section so we go there well Baba is not really good at this so he normally let's me do my thing while he stands next to and ask me 21 questions his standing there with his arms folded on his chest as I'm aiming my arrow on the board.

Me: Baba

Him: Nthombi ka baba.

Me: have you ever been in love?

I shot my arrow and it hits the center I look up at him and his looking down at me with his eyebrow raised. I stare back at him waiting for his answer.

Him: where is that coming from?

Me: Baba please answer the question.

I take another arrow and aim again.

Him: yes I've been in love before and I'm still in love with the same woman.

Me: who is she?

Him: your grandmother.

I shoot again and turn to look at him.

Me: how did you know that you were in love with her?

Him: okay how about we go have lunch and continue this conversation because I'm hungry.

Me: okay me too let's go.

We drive out the farm and go to a nice restaurant its cozy and has this African feeling, we find a corner booth and settle there a waiter comes to attend us and we order. Our food finally arrives and we dig in.

Him: so tell me about this boy who has you asking me love questions.

I look at him.

Me: there is no boy.

Him: I know there is boy because if there wasn't then you wouldn't have asked me those questions,

just tell me I promise I will not look for him or spy on you.

Me: these is no boy Baba.

He sighs and looks at me for a while.

Him: Nthombi ka Baba you know I love you right?

I nod my head.

Him: that means your happiness is more important to me. Right now I'm not talking as your grandfather but as your best friend I would love if you could tell me about the new guy in your life so I can give you advice wherever you need it please don't tell me his name the grandfather in me will go dig up some dirt on him and make him disappear just tell me your story of how you met and how he makes you feel.

I look at him for a while and I can see his being sincere but I'm honestly scared to tell him because at the end of the day he is my grandfather before anything so talking boys with him it's a bit weird.

Me: okay there's its guy I meet...

I tell him everything from the day of the garage scene to this mornings note, by the time I'm done his still looking at me like something is wrong with me.

Him: you lived with a stranger for a week Nthombenhle?

Me: yes and I know that was me playing risky with my safety but I couldn't just leave him there when he lost his memory.

He sighs and looks at me again.

Him: okay I will let that slide for now if something like this happens again im getting you 30 body guards and we not negotiating. Now back to you loving him I don't know how to feel about that I feel like you growing up to fast for my liking but from the little you have told me shows that he does love you and speaking from a Male point of view when we say we will come back we do come back all we need is time and patience and like you said he is in the taxi industry and there is a war going on let him be a man and fix it so he can be with you openly but promise me to take things slow it looks

like his going to be your first everything so please take baby steps if you feel pressured or uncomfortable tell him and if he loves you enough he will understand and if he breaks your heart I will break his neck and everyone that is related to him.

I smile at him honestly my grandfather is my first love I don't know what I would do without him. We continue having our conversation over lunch then he takes me to a knives shop I'm so happy right now I see a tactical combat karambit neck knife I take it I put my thumb on the hole and start playing around with it well this would make a great weapon for fighting I know the blade goes over my fist when I hold it properly so it's easy to cut you by just giving you one punch and if I stab you with it, it will do more damage compared to a normal knife.

Me: Baba can I please have two of these

Him: alright.

He buys them for me and drives me back to my place I pack an over night bag I'm going to sleep

over at his penthouse I know we will be watching movies the whole night.

It's just after the June holidays and I'm flying back to Johannesburg my semester marks are great I enjoyed Cape town home was amazing even my siblings I missed them so much kuhle and I still ghost them to chill in silence Baba and I still go out on our dates my Instagram looks nice with the pictures of the restaurants we try I have around 30k followers plus I always post pictures of me and Baba in matching outfits for some reason we always dressed the same we don't even talk about it. I'm still waiting for Amu I miss him so much I even sleep with his clothes sometimes. I just got to my apartment and there is no groceries so I decide that I'll go tomorrow to buy I'm just tired right now so I order in.

Its Saturday morning I wake up and put my music on blast I start to clean my apartment as soon as I'm done I go into the shower I'm in such a good mood I'm even singing by the way I can sing just like my mom I'm the only one who took her

beautiful voice as soon as I'm done I wear my white lace underwear I love sexy underwear there is just something about it I look at my body on the mirror and demn I really look hot hey, I go to my closet and pull out my very tight strapless orange dress my whole body is out to play you can even see through the dress that I have a six pack take out my nude red bottom heels I kind of have thick legs so heels really look nice on me even my mother has told me countless times that I must not fear to show them off so today the world is about to see I pull my hair into a high beat bun I lay my edges I do a cat eyeliner and lip gloss I'm not a fan of make up or lipstick I just have a black eyeliner and mascara and all types of lip glosses I take a few pictures and post them on Instagram I take my wallet and car keys and go to the mall the moment I walk out it's all eyes on me even the girls are drooling at me honestly I feel like turning back I just remembered why I don't like showing off my body like this but since I'm here I just ignore the looks and go start with my grocery shopping I walk to the wine aisle and buy a few bottles and

move to my favorite the snack aisle as I'm busy putting in my snack a small baby girl comes running down laughing she bumps into me I think she is about 3 years I look down at her and she looks up at me she's beautiful caramel skin cute little afro tied into three buns she looks so much like Amu even her hazel eyes I think my mind is playing tricks on me, now this little girl is in a staring contest with me I really don't know what to say to her or what to do I find kids and babies very weird first they are very small like have you seen their tiny hands and why do babies have big eyes let me not get started on the fact that they don't have teeth at least this one has but she is just as awkward as the rest of them why is she even looking at me? As we busy looking at each other I hear his voice:

.....: Nyeleti how many times must I tell you to stop running around...

He stops talking when he finds me looking at him. Here stands the man I've been waiting for the past 4 months looking sexy as ever in his blue Jean's

and a black t-shirt we stare at each other for a while and we get interrupted by this lady she puts her hands on his chest.

Her: baby daddy let's go why are you standing here?

I still have my eyes on him and his still looking at me I feel some pain on my chest so I turn and carry on with my shopping my heart is really breaking he asked me to wait for him and his busy playing happy families with who ever the fuck that is. A huge part of me is angry as soon as I'm done I go pay and push my trolley to my car I find him leaning on my car with his arms folded on his chest his looking at me this whole time I just pass him and open my boot I put in my food and go into my driver seat I lock the doors immediately he tries to open my passenger door when he realizes that its locked he decides to stand right in front of my car I look at this stupid peanut head clearly he never got the memo about me I am my mother's daughter I put my car on reverse lucky there was no car behind me I stop and look back at him I

smile and put the gear into drive I press the accelerator hard my wheels spin and it jumps off I drive straight to him and he doesn't move I bump him and he rolls over my roof as I do a handbrake turn I look back on my review mirror I see him moving on the floor and security is running towards him I drive off and go home. The moment I close my door I breakdown and cry my heart hurts so much I end up passed out on the kitchen floor when I wake up I see Nobuhle sitting next to me looking sick.

Me: Nobuhle what's wrong? Are you sick?

Her: it's you Entle.

Me: me?? What did I do?

Her: your heart is hurting and that hurts me too.

I look at her I didn't know my heartbreak would affect her like this.

Me: I'm sorry

Her: it's okay now tell me why are you sad like this?

Me: its Amu I saw him with his girlfriend and child today

Her: did you talk to him?

Me: no.

Her: what did you do Entle?

Me: why do you assume I did something Nobuhle?

Her: because I know you.

Me: I didn't do anything.

She looks at me with the "really " look I just roll my eyes.

Me: okay maybe I ran him over with my car just a little.

Her: you did what??? Are you crazy?

Me: I said a little I didn't kill him.

Her: that is not the point Entle? Gosh you just like your mother hey. I honestly don't know what to do with you.

Me: mxm.

AMUKELANI

I'm laying here in the hospital bed with my broken ribs and a broken arm I never thought she would really run me over like that and that handbrake turn she learned that somewhere no ordinary driver can pull that off especially a female. My God I just fell in love with her even more when I saw her standing there with my daughter I saw my whole future I saw the mother of my kids and my wife and that dress she was wearing gave me a boner same time I couldn't even utter a word the way she was so beautiful it was like I was seeing her for the first time and the idiot Palesa had to ruin everything I send her home with one of my taxi guys she really annoyed me I'm sure my Angel thought I lied to her. I've been going to her apartment for the past two weeks and she's not been there I guess she just came back. She really ran me with her car I smile at that thought now I can't wait to get out of here and go see her I'm interrupted by my best friend Tshepo walking in.

Tshepo: and than wena? What happened.

Me: eish my wife ran me over with her car.

Tshepo: you mean your imaginary girlfriend?

That's another thing my friends think Lilly is my imaginary girlfriend because I don't know her full name so I could not look her up on social media to show them I never asked her full name she just said she is Lilly to me and me going to her apartment and not find her did not help, so all my friends think I'm crazy.

Me: I'm serious I saw her at the mall today.

I tell him the whole story and his busy laughing at me mxm. I can't wait for the day they meet her so that they can shut up. I spend a few days at the hospital I just got discharged so I go to my house I live alone in a double story house it's a four bedroom house it's big for one person but I like it only Nyeleti my baby girl comes here for sleep overs all the other girls I take them to hotels but since I meet Lilly I haven't been with anyone oh and palesa also knows where I live for obvious reasons. When I get home I go shower and get dressed my ribs feel better but my arm has a cast I call one of my taxi drivers to take me to her

apartment when I get there it's around 2PM on Thursday I know she's back from school I knock and wait I hear her feet first as soon as she opens she looks at me while sucking her lollipop she's in a baggy shirt and those weird animal shoes.

Me: hi

Her: hi

Me: can I come in?

She moves aside and I walk in the first thing I see is a lot of different knives on the table I don't know how to react to this so I just stand there looking lost she walks past me and goes to sit down she takes a cloth next to her and starts polishing her knives while sucking her lollipop she looks badass. I swallow hard I think I'm dying today. I walk and sit opposite her I clear my throat she's still not minding me she's just concentrating on her knives why does she even have so many knives I hope she is not a psycho.

Me: Lilly

She looks at me. I swallow again she's so scary plus these knives are not helping.

Me: I'm sorry about what happened at the mall. I should have told you that I have a daughter, she is 3 years old and that girl you also saw is her mother her name is Palesa we've never dated or anything like that we were just sex buddies then next thing she was pregnant ever since then all we do is co-parenting. I've been coming here in the past two weeks and you were not here please forgive me for hurting your feelings I did not forget you I told that I'll be back for you.

All this time she's been cleaning her knives not looking at me.

Me: Lilly

She stops what she is doing and looks at me for a while.

Her: are you hungry?

I smile I know I'm forgiven she's such a hard nut to crack hey

Me: yes.

She immediately stands up and go to the kitchen to dish up for me I miss her food she cooks really nice. She comes give me my food on a tray as she normally does and she goes back to her knives.

Me: thank you... why do you have so many knives?

Her: I like them.

Me: uhmmm okay.

This knife conversation we will have it another time. When she is done she puts them away neatly she cleans up and takes my plate then she goes to sit where she was sitting and looks at the tv.

Me: Lilly please come here.

She stands and comes to sit next to me I pull her to my chest with my one hand and she positions herself comfortably I have my hand around her small waist.

Me: I've missed you so much Angle.

Her: I've missed you too I thought you forgot about me.

She says softly.

Me: I would never forget the woman I fell in love with.

We cuddle until we both decide to go to sleep.

Me and Lilly have been spending time together for the past few weeks and one thing I've come to realize is that she is crazy when she is really ticked off and she is very smart and I learnt that she is claustrophobic I realized she never takes elevators or close the door when using the toilet and her apartment is very spacious even her bedroom she even keeps the window open even when she goes to sleep at first I thought it was just a habit and when I asked her she told me ever since then I'm always cautious about where we spend our time. I've been going to the rank to check on things and everything is good besides my friends teasing me about my imaginary girlfriend I do post her on Instagram but I hide her face I normally post her her cute hands and feet I love them so much. I was on an interview as the owner of H Accounting but I choose to be at the rank and let someone else run my company so they wanted to know why I don't

run my company and they asked me who is she because I never show her face or tag her well I don't even know her Instagram handle I have about 100k followers and I'm not private the last thing I need is these people invading her privacy and what I know is that my woman hates attention and I don't think she is aware of who I am. Once I show her off her world is going to change. Today she told me she is going to her gymnastics competition I didn't even know she is a gymnast but now I understand because her body shows she hits the gym often so I decided to take Nyeleti with me to go watch her and meet her officially. I just picked her up from Palesas home she lives in Soweto with her mom and siblings. As soon as I got her I drove to the location and it's full my baby girl is excited we got seats on the front the competition starts and demn this shit is so intense the flips they do is amazing even Nyeleti has her eyes glued on them next thing my girl come up she has those tights on she is walking barefoot she looks so beautiful Nyeleti starts to clap her hands excited she runs towards her and hugs her legs I think she

remembers her face I quickly go get her. The music starts she is one of those who dance from the ropes that hang in the air I don't know what they called but she is demn flexible hey my jaw is on the floor one thing I've noticed about the girls here is that they have small bodies with muscles but my woman has a fat ass and hips she looks nothing like a gymnast when they done she took number 1 for her varsity it was nice I even took a boomerang of her spinning in the air and posted her again. When we done we went to wait for her in the car eventually she comes and hops in the back she just greets us I can see she is a bit uncomfortable my Nyeleti on the other hand is busy asking me 21 question I find a restaurant that I know that its not crowded I step out and open the door for my two girls the moment we jump out Nyeleti holds Lilly's hand I smile at her as she's busy having a staring contest with her I hold her other hand and we walk in we look like a hot family I sswear.they show us the table I open the chair for both of them we order in I order a burger for Nyeleti she loves them Lilly orders the same I honestly don't know where all

the food she eats goes I think it all goes to her ass because she eats everything at first I thought she on some diet but nope I was lying to myself. When our food comes she immediately cuts Nyeletis burger into four sections so that she can eat it I'm just looking at her all this time we've never said a word to each other even my talkative Nyeleti is quiet and attached to my Lilly they keep eating from each other's plates it's cute to watch I quickly snap a picture of their hands on the plate and post it I see my phone ring immediately its Palesa I'm not taking it she knows I have Nyeleti for the weekend. Later we go to Lilly's apartment the two girls have been holding on to each other Nyeleti cries when she tries to leave so we decide to spend the weekend there lucky I had her overnight bag in my car and I have some of my clothes here I don't know when is Lilly going to come to my house because every time we try to go there something comes up. I've asked her to be my plus one to one of my friends wedding I'm one of the best men there and she agreed it's now time for these people to see my imaginary girlfriend. I

wake up on a Saturday morning and both my girls are not in bed I find them in the dinning table the both studying my Nyeleti is busy trying to write something on her paper she has different colors pens and a book the way she is holding that pen is just weird Lilly is busy typing something on her laptop I see they already had breakfast I just go to kiss her chick and move to Nyeleti who is murdering this book with her pens I kiss her too she looks at me and smiles I think Lilly's behavior is rubbing of her like she's really quiet but happy I don't know how explain it.

Today is the day of the wedding I told Lilly that I cant come pick her up as I'm one of the grooms man so I had to be there before everyone we all happy.

Tshepo: so your imaginary Lilly is coming today?

I turn to look at him and all my friends laugh mxm we will see who has the last laugh today. This wedding is actually a traditional modern wedding even our suits have that traditional print going on its actually beautiful I think this is how my

wedding with Lilly must be like. Eventually we get to the venue and people are already there I look for Lilly but I don't see her.

Tshepo: I don't think your imagination got the memo about Lilly coming here.

They all bust out laughing we standing at the alter waiting for the bridesmaids and the bride and stupid Palesa is one of the bridesmaids she wanted to be my partner I straight up refused I do not want anything to cause problems in my relationship plus Lilly had knives people will die here. Eventually the bridesmaid come and the bride everything goes well at the alter we go take pictures and we go to reception I decide to call Lilly because now I'm getting really worried she should be here by now.

Her: Snuggles

She says in her soft voice that's how she calls me.

Me: where are you? Are you okay?

Her: yeah I just pulled up in the parking there was an accident when I was driving here so it took longer for me to get here.

Me: okay I'm already at reception I'll see you now.

Her: okay bye.

I hang up and walk inside I take my seat and stupid Palesa is sitting on Lilly's chair.

Me: Palesa that seat is taken you need to move.

Tshepo: yes Palesa imaginary Lilly is coming move please

He says giggling and the guys laughing Palesa was about to say something and suddenly the guys are quiet looking at the door with their jaws on the floor I turn to look and there is my Lilly in her Zulu traditional attire, she has a short yellow skirt on it has beads her waist has beads and her shoulders, her leg has beads around her one knee and both her ankles have those white things she's wearing white Nike kicks she has a black bra that has beads even both her hands have beads her hair is straightened out she has nice beads on her head

that hang to her forehead she holding a short stick that has beads she looks so beautiful. Her eyes are search for me when they finally land on me she smiles and walks to me I stand up the moment she gets to me she wraps her hands around my neck and goes on her toes and pulls my head down to kiss her my one hand goes around her waist to pull her closer and the other on her ass she gives me a soft kiss and pulls out.

Her: hi

Me: hi

Her: I'm sorry I'm late.

Me: it's okay the accident must have been bad.

Her: yeah I think two people died and the rest went with an ambulance one was even stuck in the car the had to cut through it.

Me: I'm happy you here there are some people I want you to meet.

She looks at me with her beautiful scary eyes I know she hates people and meeting new people. I kiss her forehead and let her go I turn and they all

have their eyes on us I feel Lilly tense on my hand I look down on her and she is looking at everyone one by one she does that when she meets people it's like she is trying analyze them. I turn to look at Palesa.

Me: I told you that seat is taken and yet you still sitting here.

Her: but I got here first.

She looks at Lilly from her toes up to her face only to find Lilly looking at her with an eyebrow raised and intimidating eyes I see her swallow hard and slowly stand up and leave I open the chair for Lilly and she thanks me I sit next to her and all my friends are still staring at her.

LILLY

These people are busy looking at me and I'm also just looking at them I can tell that they are a bit shocked to see me.

Amu: Angle these are my friends Tshepo my best friend, Tebogo, Lindo, Karabo and Gontse. Guys this is Lilly the woman in my life .

Me: it's nice to meet you all.

They still looking at me like some alien okay they really weird. I turn to look at Amu he looks handsome with a suit on I've never seen him in one he actually never wears anything formal.

Me: I think there is something wrong with your friends.

Amu: No there is nothing wrong with them they just surprised that you actually exist.

I look at him waiting for him to explain.

Amu: they thought that you my imaginary girlfriend apparently I made you up.

I chuckle okay now it makes sense.

Amu: you want food we are about to go dish up or I can go dish up for you.

Me: no let's all go

We all stand there this Tebogo guy looking at me weirdly so I look at him until he decides to look away I hope we will not have problems. We walk up to the food as we busy dishing up I see Lerato

and Palesa across the room pointing at me and talking I didn't even know that they know each other anyway we go back to the table now the guys are talking and not being awkward like before.

Tshepo: please tell me Lilly is it true that you ran him with a car?

I turn to look at Amu his just looking at Tshepo in a bored expression I just giggle thinking about the day.

Me: yea I did.

Amu: you broke my ribs and arm.

Me: it was just a little scratch you fine now.

I say kissing his chick, next thing Lerato and Palesa are at our table I look at them.

Lerato: hey Lilly I tried greeting you the other day when you were with your boyfriend and I don't think you heard me.

She says all smiley with Palesa waiting for some drama to happen these two are very stupid even when they combined and this side Tebogo keeps looking at me and I'm slowly getting irritated and

now all the guys are quiet and Amu is looking at me waiting for some explanation I'll deal with him later.

Me: I heard you I chose to ignore you.

I see their smiles slowly vanish. I carry on eating my food this stew is really good I lick my fingers while closing my eyes and they all looking at me.

Lerato: oh...

Me: is that all you came to ask me? I'm really trying to enjoy my food and you disturbing me.

Lerato: I didn't know that you friends with Amukelani.

Me: his not my friend his my man.

My food is finished I start to eat Amu's food I see these two stupid smirk looking at each other.

Lerato; so the man with the white beard who drives a mustang is the blesser who pays for your rent and car?

Me: Lerato do you really think that you and I are in the same lane? Before you answer that take a good

look at me please don't rush yourself just slowly look at me carefully and then look at yourself then tell me if you really think we in the same lane.

She's now quiet looking everywhere but at me now I see why I never liked her. I'm just looking at her with my eyebrow raised.

Amu: can you two leave you irritating us plus that cheap perfume you have is giving me sinuses.

They look down embarrassed and walk away. I find Tebogo looking at me again. Let me deal with him quickly so I can eat my food in peace.

Me: Tebogo do you have a problem with me?

The guys look at me again.

Tebogo: I'm sorry it's just you look familiar.

I raise my eyebrow.

Tebogo: I'm really sorry I didn't mean to make you uncomfortable.

Tshepo: I'm sorry Lilly what is your full name? Your stupid boyfriend doesn't even know it.

I chuckle because I know he doesn't know my full name and we've been together for months now.

Me: Nthombenhle Lilly khumalo.

They all freeze Amu chokes on his food I just look at him I know their reaction means they know who are my parents.

Tebogo: I knew I know you from somewhere. I always heard that Terminator has a daughter who has one blue eye and one black eye I thought they were lying.

Amu: your father is Terminator and your mother is Blackeye and your grandfather is Godfather?

He asks with a bit of fear in his eyes. I think his going to see me differently from now on.

Me: yes

He just nods his head and goes back to his food now the whole table is silent and tense. They keep stealing glances at me. I do not know how to feel at this moment but I know I'm sad because I'm going to lose him because I'm a Khumalo baby and honestly there is nothing I can do about that I just

want to call my grandpa I want his hug. I stand and tell Amu I'll be back I walk to my car and drive away my eyes get glossy so I cant see the road properly I just pull over on the side. I take out my phone I see miss calls from Amu I ignore them and call my grandpa it rings as soon as he picks up I just sob over the phone.

Baba: Nthomi ka Baba I'm coming just stay right there and don't hang up.

I can hear his running I cry until I pass out I'm woken up by a knock on the window when I open my eyes I see Baba standing there looking worried I unlock the door he opens it immediately and pulls me out the car and hugs me tightly my tears start to come out again thinking about how I'm going to lose Amu just because my father is Terminator and my mother is black eye. He carries me to his car he has one of his guards driving so he sits in the back cuddling me I eventually fall asleep. Later I'm woken up by my father to come eat we are in his penthouse I go take a shower I have clothes here so its no problem I just wore my pjs I

look horrible my cheeks and nose are pink my eyes are swollen and red the color of my eyes look scary next thing I see Nobuhle next to me looking sick again I know it's my fault.

Me: I'm so sorry Nobuhle.

Her: it's okay everything is going to be fine.

She then disappeared. I walk out and go to the dining area I find all sorts of junk food I smile my grandpa comes from the kitchen with juice we settle down and just munch on everything he has not asked me what happened and I know at some point he has to know I just appreciate how his patient with me and not rush or push me to talk when I'm not ready. When we done he decides that we should go to the gun range, later he drives us to a gun range and we start shooting when we done we take a walk in silence holding hands.

Me: he found out who are my parents and you.

He stops and comes to stand in front of me look down at me my eyes get teary and I feel a lump on my throat. I say in a shaky voice.

Me: he looked at me differently I know his not going to want anything to do with me.

My tears are already flowing. He pulls me to his chest, why does seeing my future without him hurt so much? I was perfectly fine before him.

Me: Baba please tell me what I should do? You always know what to do.

Him: you need to breath first. I know you didn't even talk to him about it you probably saw his face and walked away you can not always run when you don't have the answer maybe he was just shocked. I suggest you keep a distance for now and when you ready go talk to him and find out if he really wants nothing to do with you or he was just shocked.

I know his right let me just give him space. We than go to my apartment and pack my books and laptop and all the things I'm going to need while I stay in his penthouse. I kind of hate staying in the penthouse because it's high therefore I have to use the elevator at least when his around I just close my eyes and he carries me to the elevator and keep

talking to me until we get up or I just take the stairs until I get to 20th floor. Being claustrophobic is really not nice especially when the panic attacks come whenever I'm in closed spaces or in crowded places but luckily I come from a fortunate family because they can afford to get me a place that is spacious and on the first floor, even at home I do not use the elevator I always take the stairs. I avoid going to the mall or any places on weekends because I know it's always crowded so I would go on Tuesdays or Wednesdays afternoon. Tomorrow I'm going back to school and I'm excited but now I have a lot of work to do, remember I said I do not want to take over Blackeye I want to start my own thing well in the past few months I have been working on that I started something just like Mel but mine is Sam Sam my mom doesn't know that I'm aware about how Mel works I've always liked being around her growing up and having a photographic memory is actually a blessing I remember everything and anything I put my eyes on or even hear hence I'm good in IT its because of my mom and every time I

asked her questions about something I didn't understand she was always happy to explain plus I took some online short classes for IT. Back to Samsam, I'm now known as Medusa what I do is I clean money for gangs honestly speaking when they clean their it's easy pick their mistakes especially if an auditor is send. My mother always taught me that there always spaces in the tech world whenever there is a shift in the universe it opens spaces that allow people like me do hide things there and you will never find them because it only opens for a few minutes or seconds so it's all about timing. So what I do is create accounts that look like they linked to whatever I want for example if a gang member asks for my services I look at the kind of gang lord he is and what they have normally I advice them in starting their businesses then I send them to ask for investors or go ask for a loan from a bank, the moment they give them the money the investors or bank would maybe give them 50k but I make it look like its 1 million or more the moment the auditor looks the money will trace back from the bank or investors

but from the bank side or investors its 50k. For some gangs since they already have businesses I just work on their finances in detail most mistakes they make is allocate too much money to departments which raises red flags all I do it seem like the company is making more shares with less expenses or ask them if they can have someone look like they are buying shares. The nice part about all of this is that no one knows me and no one can track me that allows me to choose the gang I feel like it has potential to grow and now I work for some gangs that are powerful ever since I started they all have been making more money then expected and I get paid well I just recently bought a bought a huge building with some man who is into property I'm just a silent partner we turning it into a student accommodation. I've heard my parents talk about Medusa and honestly I'm happy that I'm making a name for myself just like my mom did she is honestly an inspiration I look up to her. I miss Amu so much Baba told me that I need to stop running away whenever something is bothering me I must open up to him

and tell him how I feel he also said he will get tired of running after me I need to grow up because communication is important in any relationship and I really need to work on that for now I'm scared to even face him I cant take rejection. I've been going to school and back home for the past week all I do is work and study to avoid day dreaming about Amu.

AMUKELANI

It's now the month of October I have not seen Lilly or heard from her since August at the wedding a lot has happened I'm even scared to go look for her I do stalk her on Instagram she does post pictures and statuses now and than I miss her so much but I know there's no chance for me and her again I ruined everything. What had happened after the wedding is that I was summoned home by my uncles I hardly ever go home because I know my mom and sisters just want me to spend money on ridiculous things even though I support them already, plus my mom is very toxic she has a very sharp tongue she is quick to insult and say hurtful

things especially when you don't give her what she wants so I avoid being around her as much as possible but that doesn't mean I don't love her she is my mother after all. So when I got home actually all my family members where there even the ones I have not seen in the longest time only to find out that the next day is my wedding day I tried to stop it and tell them I have someone in my life but they didn't care they told me that lobola has been paid already and my mother started with her insults so I just married the girl her name is Bongiwe and she now lives with me. She is your village submissive kind of wife so basically she is a house wife and we don't sleep on the same bedroom I do not want her all I do is avoid her she cooks, cleans, do my laundry and all those things I do eat her food though I'm not rude to her or anything like that she does try to talk to me and such but she is not my Lilly I even I had a nice baecation planned for us but that didn't happen because of this nonsense.

It's now the end of November and Bongi and I are trying out things but I still love Lilly deeply but trying never hurt anyone right. I'm busy switching

off the lights and locking up I'm going to bed Bongi now sleeps in my room and yes we did have sex I'm a man at the end of the day so I have needs and she was there so it happened. Nyeleti hates her so much that she hardly wants to come to my house now I have to bribe her all the time it's just frustrating I was about to go up when I received a message from Lilly that says she is outside I quickly go out there she is with her gown and sleepers on she's standing next to a cab when I open the gate the cab drives off she looks so beautiful all my feelings come back hard I hug her tightly I miss her so much I can smell that she has been drinking.

Me: how did you find where I live? Did you see the time?

Her: I looked you up so I can find you and apologize for how I walked out on you the other day.

I take her hand and walked into the house I take her to the guest bedroom and tell her to wait there I'm coming I go back to Bongi and tell her I need to

take care of something she has no problem with that so she goes to sleep and I immediately go to Lilly I find her laying on the bed with her very short pjs I get horny same time she sits up straight and looks at me I honestly don't know what to do she leans in to kiss me and I kiss her back before I know it clothes are flying out we both naked and I'm now looking at her I know she's a virgin and I always imagined breaking her but not like this.

Me: Lilly we can't do this.

She just kisses me I'm so horny maybe this can be a goodbye sex I start to brush my penis on her vagina lips they so soft I slowly push myself in but she's too tight I look at her.

Me: this is going to hurt are you sure you want to do it?

Her: yes I'm sure.

I look at her for a while I love her so much I start to push again I she screams and I shut her up with a kiss im finally in and she's really tight and warm I'm not going to last I start to move slowly trying

to not hurt her my god she is so nice we continue making love until we both come she falls asleep in my arms I look at her and she is the most beautiful person I've ever seen. I slowly get out of bed and go to the kitchen I'm wearing my boxers I want water when I get there I find Bongi snacking on something I honestly think she might be pregnant. I get the water and drink while looking at her.

Her: I thought you left.

Me: no I was in the study making calls.

She walks up to me and wraps her hands around my neck I look at her she was about to say something when Lilly came down wearing my t shirt walking barefoot my God she looks perfect. She looks at me with teary eyes I quickly let Bongi go I walk towards her and she walks back so I stop all this time no one has said anything we haven't taken our eyes off each other I see all the hurt I've caused her I feel a lump on my throat I know there is no come back from this. I say in a shaky voice.

Me: she is my wife I'm so sorry Lilly.

Her tears immediately fall she just walks out the front door without saying a word. My tears also fall I've lost the love of my life let me just let her cool down then I'll take her to her apartment later. Bonggi tried talking to me I snapped at her and she went to sleep now I'm just sitting on the floor in the kitchen it's been a while so I decide to go look for her so I can take her home, when I get outside I don't find her I look for her but she is not here I run upstairs to call her but her phone is here shit shit shit I decide to go drive around and look her but I still don't find her when I get home its already morning and I found Bonggi burning her things I slapped her so hard and left her there crying.

MAX

My name is Maxwell but everyone calls me Max let me tell you what happened last night I was at one of my clubs it was around 2am I decided to go out for some fresh air I stopped smoking about a year ago and ever since I'm always snacking on something to stop the cravings I don't get the cravings like before but now I just love snacks so I

was in my office I just took a pack of chips and walked out as I was standing outside eating my snack looking at these drunk people down the road I see a girl walking alone with just a shirt on you these girls don't like dressing up and now she's here alone in a very dangerous street as I'm looking at her I see 4 hobos go to her when they get to her they start pushing her around now I have to help her before she gets raped I pull out my gun and slowly walk down before I know it she is throwing a punch at one of them next thing she is fighting these guys and she's good so I stop and look at her I cant see her face probably because of her hair and it's dark here I see one of the guys pull out a knife but suddenly it's in her hand she stabs all of them now they all laying on the floor bleeding and groaning I'm really impressed I've never seen a girl fight like this it's like she is a professional she then jumps their bodies and keeps walking she is walking towards my direction so I just wait for her. She was about to pass me.

Me: hi.

She turns to look at me she's short very short her hair is kind of covering her face so I can not see her properly she is covered in blood.

Me: let's get you cleaned up you don't look good.

She looks at herself and back at me we stand there for a while with her looking at me eventually she nods her head. I try to take her hand but she pulls away shaking her head okay this is going to be a problem .

Me: okay I will not touch you just follow me and stay close.

She nods her head I walk to the bouncer and tell him I'm leaving when we done I go to my range rover I love big cars all this time she is following me I open the door for her when she climbs in I see she is not wearing any underwear and she has blood between her thighs I hope she was not raped I close the door and go to my side I hop in and look at her she's just looking out the window with tears on her face for some reason her tears break my heart and I don't know why I feel this way because

I've seen a lot of women cry and I just don't care but right now I want her to stop crying.

Me: please stop crying.

I say coldly I carry on driving and I get to my complex I park and open the door for her she jumps out and I walk away she follows me I live in some nice very expensive flats I live in a bachelor's pad when I get to the lift I press and wait for it she is standing next to me.

Her: can we please take the stairs

Her voice is sweet and a bit scratchy maybe because she's been crying, but it made my heart skip a beat it's even racing.

Me: I live on 18th floor so no.

Her: okay I'll find you there.

She turns and walks away I see her look around when she finds what she's looking for she walks to the fire escape stairs and goes up the stairs this girl is fucking crazy why would she go up a flight of stairs when there is an elevator it finally opens but I don't go in fuck this shit since when do I care

about bitches I don't even know why she's here I walk in the elevator and press 18 it finally opens and I stand at my door waiting for her why do I feel bad? After a while I see her coming down the corridor she comes and stands next to me my heart starts to race again I just open the door and we walk in I live in a one bedroom bachelor's pad so it has one bed she walks past me looking around I show her the bathroom so she can take a shower. I go make something to eat I'm hungry so bacon and cheese sandwiches will be fine I can hear the shower is on so I go to my bedroom and when I pass the bathroom the door is open even the shower door and it's making a mess on the floor there is water everywhere now I'm really annoyed pull out my boxers and a shirt I'm busy looking for an extra blanket and pillow but I cant find it as I'm busy I hear her behind me.

Her: do you have a mop I can use to clean the floor.

I turn around and freeze I feel hot very hot and sweaty and heart is racing too fast I put my hand on my chest I'm just staring at her. She has my

white towel around her body it's short its tight around her hips I didn't notice she has such a goddess body her hair is wet and tied up into a bun I can clearly see her face even though her eyes are swollen and her nose and cheeks are pink I think it's from the crying she's so beautiful her pouted pink lips they look juicy I never seen such a beautiful person she looks unreal even her eyes are scary they look bloodshot red. She snaps her fingers in my face pulling me back to reality I blink a couple of times and clear my throat.

Her: the mop

Me: oh...uhm let me go get it you can wear those clothes I put on the bed.

I go get my lotion and body spray I give it to her and quickly walk out I don't think I can stay in there with her for too long I breath out the moment I get to the kitchen I drink a glass of water and go take the mop I find her in my room dressed up she even found my shoes she's looks cute in my clothes everything just looks big but my boxers

look tight on her big ass and hips I feel my dick jerk.

Me: when you done come eat.

She nods her head and walks out. I breath out I didn't even realize I've been holding my breath I go to the kitchen and sit on the high chair I start to eat while I go through my phone she comes and sits next to me she smells just like me. She takes her food and starts eating she looks cute chewing she is just staring into space I see a tear drop I feel like someone is pinching my heart I slowly wipe it with my thumb she looks at me in my eyes she looks broken and hurt I think her eyes are two different colors or maybe I'm seeing things I stand up and pull her into my arms she just sobs painful I carry her to my bedroom I lay her gently on the bed but her grip around my neck is so tight I cant breath.

Me: I can't breath loosen up your grip.

Her: please don't leave.

Me: I'm not going anywhere I just want to take off my clothes and get into bed with you.

She hesitated at first and she let me go I took off my pants and shirt I'm left with my boxers I pull the blankets we both get in she I'm comes on top of me she lays her head on my chest I wrap my arms around her small waist I can tell she hits the gym her body feels a bit hard. Having her like this feels right and peaceful something I've never known all my life. I think I need to get her morning after pills when I saw the blood between her thighs I knew what that meant she was probably raped and I also noticed her walk it's like she's in pain that person had better pray I don't find him I'm going to make them wish they never crossed paths with her. Why do I suddenly feel protective of her you know what I don't care I just want to see her smile. I don't know this feeling I have its foreign I never feel anything for women all I do is fuck them and leave but here I am with a woman in my arms and all I want is to protect her and make her smile I hate seeing her cry and broken like this she doesn't look like a weak person I

eventually fall asleep. I wake up in the morning and she's still asleep I slowly get out of bed and go to the pharmacy quickly I get her the pill and buy us breakfast I'm very bad at cooking I only know how to make eggs and sandwiches I go back I find her still sleeping I carefully look at her lips are slightly open and pouted her cheeks look pink and cute, why does she make me feel like this I decide to let her sleep because we slept around 5am I put her food and pills on a tray with a glass of juice I cover it and put it on the side table I leave her a note that I'll be back. I change into gym clothes and head out when I get to the gym I work on the punching bag I feel so frustrated right now she is making me do things that I never thought I'll do for anyone I don't even know her name my friend Mbongeni we call him Bongs brings me back to reality when he holds the punching bag.

Bongs: what's wrong Max?

Me: I don't know

He sighs he knows very well that I won't say anything and I honestly don't know what to say

because I don't know all these feelings I'm feeling about her right now. When I'm done I go take on the weights as soon as I'm done I go back home when I arrive I find that she cleaned up and she's just standing by the balcony by the lounge it has a joburg view its beautiful I stand at the sliding door and look at her she has my sweatpants on with my t shirt everything looks big on her, her hair is in a lazy bun she turns around I think she felt my presence she looks at me for a while her eyes are different colors that means I was seeing right last night we stand there for a good 5 minutes just looking at each other .

Me: hi

Her: hi

Me: how you feeling?

She just shrugs her shoulder.

Her: can I please borrow your phone?

Me: okay.

I pull it out of my pocket and give it to her.

Me: I'm going to take a shower

She nods while she's busy pressing my phone I go take a shower and when I'm done I walk back and go warm up the food I bought as I sit down to eat and I hear her talking on the phone.

Her: please daddy I promise I'll be back for Christmas the contract ends on the 20th I didn't think its going to be a problem I'm sorry okay okay okay bye daddy love you too kiss Owami for me.

Then she hangs up she walks in to give me my phone and sits opposite me she looks at me while I eat I think she is weird who does this I just continue looking at her eating. I think she is analyzing me no one looks at me for this long most people find my face scary so they quickly look away and I don't blame them but here is a beautiful woman looking at me like she is studying my face I don't know how to feel right now.

Her: thank you for helping me last night and everything.

Me: it's no problem. Do you want to tell me what happened because you didn't really look good.

She sighs and for the first time she looks down then she looks at me again.

Her: my boyfriend I mean my ex boyfriend is married and he only told me after he broke my virginity. I was coming from his house last night.

She said in a shaky voice I felt like going to him and just make him meet his ancestors.

Her: uhmhhh... I need to get back to my place thank you for letting me stay here for the night.

Me: stop thanking me can I take you to your place

Her: yeah sure.

When I was done we both walked out she said she is taking the stairs I just followed her I cant believe I'm doing this to myself we finally make it down we get in the car she opens the window like she did last night she puts in her location in my phone I know this place it's very expensive when I get there I walk her to her flat luckily it's just on first floor she offers me a drink but I need to get to work so I kindly decline I tell her that I'll come check on

her later I don't even know why I said that after I leave.

LILLY

The first thing I did when I got to my apartment is burn everything that belongs to him I really want nothing to do with him my heart is just broken and I'm done crying for him I did enough of that last night so all I did was bury myself into my underworld work. I told my dad that I got a job this side so I'll be home around the 20th I know if I go home now my mom will definitely see I'm not okay so I need time to gather myself I didn't tell my grandfather about Amu because I know he will make him disappear and his gone on his missions so I don't know when I'm going to see him so no I don't want his blood on my hands I just hope he is happy what I don't understand is why didn't he just tell me before having sex with me yes it would have still hurt my feelings but I know it would've never made me feel cheap and used but its okay as I'm laying on my bed thinking Nobuhle appears. I

just look at her why didn't she warn me about Amu it's like she could read my mind.

Her: its because you had to go through what you going through now in order to get to your destination. You had to meet him so he can lead you to your soul mate Amukelani was never yours to have baby.

She says softly for some reason I feel better maybe she is right but who is this soulmate she is talking about.

Her: do not worry he will reveal himself but right now your broken heart is blinding you once it's fixed you will see him.

She then disappears. Honestly I'm really grateful for that guy I even forgot to ask his name if it was not for him I would have been stolen or something bad would've happened his place is really nice I like his style it had a nice wooden feeling to it which makes it homely the view from his lounge is to die for. Truth is that guy looks scary he is the exact same size as my dad and grandfather so his huge his muscles show that he hits the gym

regularly his whole body is covered in tattoos he has short hair and a full beard its not bushy more like Drake he is dark skinned he has a big scary scar that goes through his left eye from his forehead to his eye till his chick his eye is even grey in color I don't think he can see with it his other eye is black for some reason I just couldn't take my eyes off him, honest truth his very handsome in a scary way you can not see his sexiness because of the dark aura he carries and that huge scar but I kind of like it I feel like without it he would look regular I like the fact that he doesn't hide it I know if it was someone else they would put a eye patch to hide it. He really looks beautiful I fall asleep thinking about him, I'm woken up by a knock on the door I go open and find him standing there with a bag of food my stomach immediately grumbles I take the brown paper bag and tell him to come in I walk to the kitchen and start dishing up for us his just standing there looking at my every move. When I'm done we settle on the dinner table he sits on the head I settle right next to him we eat in silence

when we done I quickly wash the dishes as soon as I'm done I take a lot of snacks we sit in front of the tv.

Me: what do you want to watch?

Him: I don't know I hardly ever watch tv.

Me: okay

I decide we watch Tom and Jerry he takes one packet of chips and he opens it he then turns to look at me.

Me: what?

I ask shrugging my shoulders.

Him: are we really watching this?

Me: yes what's wrong with it?

Him: how old are you again?

Me: you don't ask a woman that.

Him: you making me watch Tom and jerry are you serious?

Me: do you not see my serious face?

Him: couldn't you just choose something else.

Me: no scar face

After I said that I immediately put my hand over my mouth he looks at me with his eye brow raised then he busts out laughing I just look at him he stops laughing and looks at me then he laughs again I'm just looking at him for a scary person he really has a beautiful laugh. I just smile shaking my head and watch tv.

Him: you do know that you a weirdo?

Me: no I'm not.

Him: yes you are.

Me: why would you even say that?

Him: have you seen yourself? Why do you even have two different colors on your eyes?

Me: I don't know I was born like that.

Him: and you still think you not weird?

Me: mxm

He laughs again I just smile and watch tv.

Him: let's go out tomorrow.

Me: go out where?

Him: I don't know what have you always wanted to do?

Me: uhmmm... I want to try bungee jumping

I say in excitement.

Him: we can do that and some court biking since it's in the same area.

Me: yes please let's go.

He smiles at me and says okay he will pick me up around 11am

MAX

Its now 11am and I'm knocking on her door she finally opens and my jaw drops she is wearing torn shorts with a long sleeve over the shoulder white shirt its tucked in her beautiful thick legs are out to play and her body structure is out on display her hair is curled it's so pretty she has a small bag and her phone she looks up at me and smiles. I honestly want her to change her clothes but I know no man will come near her when I'm with

her she steps out locks the door and hooks her hand on mine.

Her: shall we Mr. Scar face?

I look down at her and smile she's really beautiful we walk to my car I open the door for her she jumps in and we drive out when we arrive there we immediately go for the bungee jumping she is so excited she looks like a kid they hook her up first when it was time for her to jump she just stood there looking down I asked the guy to hook me up so I can jump with her I walk up to her and hold her hand she looks up to me I can feel her hand shaking.

Me: you ready.

She nods her head.

Me: use your words.

Her: yea I'm ready.

She looks back down I start to count down we both jump off I don't know how but she was clinging on me for dear life with her legs around my waist and her arms around my neck I also hug her and hold

on tight and now we just swinging in the air as we being pulled back up. Holding her like this feels amazing I don't want to let her go eventually we done with that and went court biking and she showed me flames, you know every time I know how to read people and what they about their weaknesses and strengths but when it comes to her I'm just confused as fuck and its frustrating and scary I swear if my enemies saw how weak and scared this girl makes me I would be dead by now anyway later we driving to her apartment she is tired and quiet I like how we can stay in silence and its always comfortable sometimes we just look at each other and we already know what the other is thinking. Mostly I love how she just let's things fall into place naturally she never asks stupid questions like all these girls she just enjoys being in the moment. We finally arrive at her place I'm walking her up when we get to her door it's not locked we both look at each other I know what she's thinking she slowly opens the door we walk in I'm in front the moment I walk in the man in the lounge turns around when he sees me he

immediately pulls out his gun at me and its mother fucking Terminator I just look at him Lilly jumps in front of me fast I pull her back is she crazy.

Terminator: you have the fucking nerve to show your ugly face at my daughters house Max

I smirk at him I didn't know that his my father in law. Lilly moves in front of me again I just put my hands in my pocket looking at him.

Lilly: daddy please put the gun down.

Terminator: wena Nthombenhle go get your bags we going home now!.

Lilly: okay I'll go just please don't shoot him.

Her voice his shaking I hate it when she cries I just want to hold her why is he making her cry? Let me leave fast before I forget that he is her father I walk towards the door I turn to look at her just to make sure she's okay she looks at me with her teary eyes I turn back and walk out she knows I'll call her later I walk to my car and drive home when I get there I find my friend bong in the kitchen I just sit there I roughly run my hands through my head I

want to call her so bad but I know his dad is probably breathing down her neck, how did I miss that she is his daughter well I do have a history with Terminator we do not like each other I think its because you can never put two bulls in a kraal its amazing that we haven't killed each other till this day yes his a few years older than me I think he just hates me because I don't bow to him like everyone else yes he runs most of Africa but I run most of the drug businesses yes I'm a drugloard more like king pin and his more of a contractor so he assassinates a lot of people and runs governments without even them noticing. He did try to take over the drug business and I straight up told him that we will go to war and honestly that war was going to get most innocent people killed because both of us have strong armies and we both ruthless so he made a wise choice and let me be and since then we stay out of each others space, well until now if he thinks I'm going to stay away from my Lilly then he has another thing coming because I'm gong to be his son in law.

Bongs: what's up boy ? You've been scarce and now you look depressed.

Me: eish... its nothing I cant handle

He looks at me I just stand up and go take a cold shower I need to cool down when I'm done I chill on my bed I'm going through my work phone I just started working with this Medusa person and I must say the results look promising I normally do my own accounting and clean my money but I have too much on my plate so now I'm working with him or her and everything looks good when I'm done I take my personal phone and I find pictures and videos Lilly took with my phone because hers died they look cute and funny I'm just smiling looking at them until I'm disturbed by incoming call it's my mother she's so annoying my mom is one of those rich housewives I've never seen her work a day in her life all she does is spend my dad's money and she's a snob she has tried multiple times to hook me up with her friends daughters they all stupid some I've fucked before they not my type they just like my mom but she did hook my

older brother with one who I have fucked and they now married but it's none of my business. The problem with my brother is his always trying to compete with me and trying to prove that his the better son and I'm not even there my dad has groomed us to take over his businesses when we older business comes naturally to me hence I'm this successful and my brother hated that so he became yes daddy no daddy person. When I refused to take over his businesses because I wanted to start my own he disowned me I was doing matrix at that time so I ended up in the streets and got into the drug business now I own a couple of hotels, clubs and restaurants. When I came back home I had already got into the accident where I got the grey eye everyone feared me now even my dad but he hides it as for my two younger sisters they both like my mother all they do is spend money on useless things they don't want to go to school. All in all I avoid going home because I don't want to deal with them I do not have the patience I miss my grand parents they are

my dad's parents they were amazing people and they understood me. I answer the phone.

Me: hello

Her: Maxwell why are you taking so long to answer the phone?

Me: I was busy how can I help you?

Her: when are coming home it's the Christmas holidays now.

Me: I don't know I'm very busy.

Her: you always busy you never come home...

She keeps talking and talking Gosh she's so annoying I agree to come sooner I'm not even excited.

LILLY

when I saw my dad pull out his gun I swear I peed my pants he was so angry I know he probably has some history with Max I also didn't know that his a king pin I'm sure that's why my dad hates him. I'm just taken back on how he handled himself most men can not stand up to the mighty

Terminator and how he just stood there and look at him I was kind of turned on but I honestly don't know why I jumped in front of the gun like that I think I've grown really fond of him plus I enjoyed my outing with him it was amazing and how I was able to trust him just took me by surprise I do not trust easily but he gave me a sense of safety it's like he touched me without using his hands ,its amazing how he can say so much without even uttering a single word and how he listens when I talk to him without speaking out loud. We just landed in Cape town and the flight was awkward I'm just happy we going home I'm sure Owam is going to fuck me up she once punched my sister Nolwazi when she was in high school and they sneaked out for a house party when she tried to talk to them Nolwazi got disrespectful and earned herself a blue eye ever since then I never step on her toes and now I know my dad is going to tell her I'm dead. We finally arrive home he hasn't said a word to me I took the stairs and he took the elevator the moment I walked through the kitchen I saw Owami and throw myself in her arms I just

sobbed I miss her so much as soon as I calmed she looked at me for a while and pulled me with my hand to her office we settled down and she gave me some hot chocolate we drank while talking about general thing I really missed my mommy.

Owami: talk to mommy Entle I know something is heavy on your heart and I hate seeing you like this.

I sighed first I was scared to tell her I broke my virginity but for some reason I found myself telling her about everything from how I met Amu to my now friendship with Max and how dad wanted to kill him when I got to that part she was laughing so bad I don't even know what's funny.

Owami: so you like this Max person?

Me: his cool.

She looks at me for a while I really don't know what she's looking for.

Owami: are you in love with Max?

I just look at her clearly she didn't hear me when I said my heart has been broken how can I be in love so quickly.

Me: Ma his just a friend.

Owami: that's not what I asked you.

I go quiet again I honestly don't know what to say I really don't know how I feel when it comes to Max he makes me feel weird yes I do get butterflies whenever he touches me and my heart warms up and gets excited when he laughs he has a beautiful smile and his laugh is contagious he hardly ever laughs but when he does man it does things to me I just want to see him happy at all times. I look back at my beautiful mother and I don't have an answer for her. She raises her eyebrow and sips on her hot chocolate with a smirk I was about to say something when my dad walks in I look at him trying to read his face but his blank he sits next to my mom and kisses her they sitting opposite me and Owami is busy giggling they so cute together I hope one day I have their kind of marriage its beautiful.

Owami: ha.a Khumalo stop it my baby is in the room.

Daddy: did your baby tell you that she's now dating so this view is not foreign to her.

Owami: yes she told me how you tried to kill your son in law.

She says giggling my dad frowns looking at her.

Daddy: Max is never going to be my son in law. I'm never going to have a son in law all my girls are going to grow old with me here in this house.

Owami busts out laughing I giggle trying to hide my laugh I'm still in trouble so I can't be laughing too much.

Owami: do you want to bet that Max will be your son in law?

Daddy: Owami keep talking like that and I will kill him.

Owami: you not going to kill him Khumalo and I'm serious if anything happens to him you will not like my reaction.

He looks at her for a while I know she means business.

Daddy: mxm

He stands and leaves the room my mom turns to look at me again and we talk more with her busy grilling me with her 21 questions about max I don't even know where she gets this thing that he is her son in law. Later we go to sleep I go sleep with Kuhle I miss him he also tried talking to about boys I just ignored him. It's now morning I go to my room the moment I switch on my phone Max phone call comes in we talk for a while. Later I decide to check on my Medusa work but I forgot my laptop charger so I walk to my mom's office to borrow hers since we use the same laptop when I get to the door I hear them talking because the door is slightly open I was about to knock until I heard that she's talking about Medusa so I just stood there to listen.

Owami: I'm serious Khumalo this Medusa person is a female like the name is a given no man would call themselves Medusa and she really reminds me of myself when I was still in the shadows as Blackeye. I've tried so many times to track and

locate her but I always hit a brick wall whenever I think I'm close my laptop catches a virus and crashes it's like she is using my work I really want to meet her.

Daddy: well I'm just looking at her make a name for herself and she's really moving up and fast I even heard the Italians and the English men want her. I really admire her work I've looked at a few gangs accounts and you honestly can not find anything that leads to money laundering it's just so clean you would swear these people are really running legitimate businesses.

Owami: I know she's really smart on how she moves their money she even turned Diamond into a real business man imagine a whole Diamond who doesn't even know how to wear a suit he now sits in board meetings with tracksuits and flops chewing bubblegum.

They both laugh I smile I know if I was able to impress them that means I'm doing a good job they really are a big deal in the underworld. I knock on the door and walk in pretending I didn't hear

anything. I just walked out and I heard my mom talk again.

Owami: Oh...before I forget there is a man by the name of Amukelani Michael Hlangwane I want to clear his accounts I want him broke and when that happens I want us to buy Accounting company for Entle.

Daddy: why? I don't even know anyone with that name.

Owami: let's just say he messed with my baby and he has to pay for it.

Daddy: what did he do to my baby ?

Owami: nothing you should worry yourself about and no you can not kill him it's too easy I want him to suffer and let me deal with him.

Well I'm happy that mom will deal with him he really broke my heart as for his company I'm not sure if I want it. I go do my work I asked Sam Sam to keep an eye on Max and whoever does business with him and I noticed that his been trying to seal a deal with the Portuguese and it looks like they

want to trap him let's hope he doesn't fall for the trap at least nothing has been signed yet meaning they going to have a meeting soon.

Today I'm going shopping with my sisters I miss our outings and their bubbly personalities they so loud unlike me but I would never trade them for anything. We all dressed up and daddy has send us money as we walk out I see the drawer where they put car keys I smirk and take out 3 keys from daddy's sports cars I giggle and run down to the garage when I get there I find them sitting in the SUV waiting for me I stand by the window I dangle the keys with excitement they look at each other and back at me with smiles they jump out immediately I throw the keys to them

Nolwazi: you see why I love you so much.

She says excited kissing my chicks.

Ulwazi: you do know that daddy is going to kill us right.

Nolwazi rolls her eyes.

Nolwazi: then we die happy.

She runs quickly to the car. I just shrug my shoulders looking at Ulwazi I go to the other car the moment we get out the gate we race to the mall we take the long route just for the sake of it this is so fun I love the adrenaline that comes with fast cars we get to the parking and Ulwazi was first she's really good when it comes to cars and racing so she always wins I park next to her and Nolwazi parks next to me we step out happy and giggling I look at my phone and I see miss calls from dad I know he wants to shout at us I just put my phone back we walk in the mall and we go from shop to shop we now in this lingerie shop we love good looking underwear so we on the same aisle choosing between different designs.

Ulwazi: I have this one so I don't want it but I think you should try it I like the fabric it feels nice on the skin.

Me: okay this is not my type of lingerie you know I'm more of strings and ropes but for the sake of the fabric I'll take it.

Ulwazi: I swear you wont regret it.

...:ladies

A voice says behind me I feel my heart drop to my stomach I slowly turn around the moment I see his face I jump in his arms he spins me around I giggle. He finally puts me down.

Me: Max what are you doing in Cape town.

Him: I came to see you.

Me: oh.. okay it's a nice surprise.

Nolwazi starts fake coughing next to me I look at her why is she so dramatic. I wait for her finish Ulwazi is busy giggling she finally stops coughing and looks at me.

Me: are you done?

Nolwazi: yes Nthombi ka Baba.

She grins at me I just shake my head and look back at Max find his eyes staring at me.

Me: Max these are my two sisters Nolwazi and Ulwazi. Girls this is my friend Max.

Ulwazi: you have a friend?

She asks with a frown they both looking at me weirdly I look back at them.

Nolwazi: how did you even make a friend? Zee I think we should move to jozi we might just make friends.

Ulwazi nods her head in agreement. What is wrong with these two.

Max: can I take you out for lunch.

Nolwazi: yes please I'm famished.

She says and hooks her hand on his he smirks at her.

Ulwazi: can we finish first here? I don't want to come back to this shop.

Nolwazi: yea plus Max we need advice okay.

Can someone kill me please. Max looks like his about to shit himself I just giggle. We walk from aisle to aisle choosing what we want when we get to the cashier he pays for them and Nolwazi is still stuck on him like a glue he keeps looking at me with begging eyes hoping I'll save him I'm not doing shit I enjoy seeing him suffer it's cute. We

eventually get to a restaurant we settle down and the waiter takes our orders.

Nolwazi: so tell us Max are you single or you not sure where you stand with Entle.

He chocks on his drink I look at Nolwazi I swear this girl is just forward. I will not even entertain this conversation Max looks at me I just sip on my drink the food arrives I dig in immediately.

Him: uhmmm... (he clears his throat) I'm single for now.

Nolwazi: well I know you love Entle if you want some advice or pointers call me I'll help you I know she's very difficult and everything but I like you so you have my blessing.

Him: uhmmm... okay thank you

Ulwazi: Nono please stop harassing the poor guy he cant even have a conversation with Entle the person he came to see because you breathing down his neck.

Nolwazi: you know very well that she will not say a word look at her she can't even hear us because

she is in her own world I'm sure poor Max doesn't even know what to say to her.

I just carry on eating I can feel Max is looking at me because his sitting across me and whenever he stares at me it makes my blood rush just like now.

Ulwazi: Nono eat your food and shut up.

Nolwazi: mxm.

The table goes silent finally I look up at him and he has this worried face looking at me I just stare at him and continue eating I missed his face I wonder what happened to his face I miss hearing his laugh I smile as I picture him laughing at my stupid jokes. He smiles back at me I'm sure he thinks I was offended by Nolwazi but she doesn't hurt my feelings anymore I'm over her thinking that something is wrong with me. When we done eating he walks us to the parking Nolwazi and Ulwazi are walking in front of us we are few feet away from them walking in silence I missed his presence it makes me feel warm I know whenever I'm around him everything just makes sense I feel him hold my hand I look at it and up at him we

finally get to my car we stand there for a moment looking at each other.

Him: Lilly.

Me: Max

Him: how are you?

Me: I'm okay and how are you?

Him: now that I've seen you I'm much better.

Me: you do know that you didn't even have to come all the way to see me I'm coming back next month.

Him: I couldn't wait for that long I had to see you.

He says that softly I look at him and his eyes look sincere and warm my stomach feels some tingling. He moves closer and my heart's starts to race. I whisper.

Me: I have to go.

Him: okay.

He takes my car keys and opens my door for me he kisses my forehead and I hop in he closes the door and leans over.

Him: I'll make a plan to see you before I go back okay.

Me: okay.

I start the car and drive home I find Nolwazi and Ulwazi waiting for me we walk in with our bags and find daddy waiting with his hands on his waist ready to kill us, where is Owami before her husband kills us.

Daddy: who gave you permission to use my cars?

We go silent Nolwazi and Ulwazi look down. Me and him are staring at each other my dad is really scary.

Daddy: Nthombenhle I'm talking.

Me: No one gave us permission to use your cars.

Daddy: so why did you take them.

Me: we just wanted to experience driving a sports car.

He looks at me for a while.

Daddy: Nthombenhle you three were speeding with my cars do you have a death wish.

Me: Daddy you and Owami taught us how to drive we even did advance driving I don't think a car will kill us.

Daddy: so you talk back now?

Ehh...I just look at him the elevator opens behind him and I see Baba walking in I drop my bags and run fast into his arms he spins me around while I laugh out loud. When he puts me down he goes to greet Nolwazi and Ulwazi then my dad.

Baba: Nthombi ka Baba how have you been?

Daddy: she's been dating Max that's how she's been... oh and now she steals cars.

Ahh... this man is spicy. Baba is looking at me with his eyebrow raised I just shrug my shoulders and go take my bags and go to my room. I pack my new clothes when I'm done I go up to the roof top I just sit there looking at the sun set lost in my thoughts I get interrupted by a phone call and its Max I smile and answer.

Me: hello

Him: hey did you get home safe?

Me: yes and you?

Him: yeah I'm at the hotel though.

Me: oh...okay

We both quiet I can hear him breathing I just look at the sunset and listen to him breath, eventually I go to my room because my phone is low but I'm not hanging up so I need to put it in the charger.

Him: why are you fiddling around?

Me: I'm charging my phone its low

Him: okay are you going to bed now?

Me: yes

I say as undress and get in the blankets. I put my phone on the pillow lucky the socket is just next to my bed so we good. I lay on my back looking at the ceiling I can hear him fiddling I think his also getting into bed next thing its quiet again I just hear his breathing eventually I fall asleep. I wake up to someone talking I realize it's coming from my phone its Max talking why didn't he hang up his not even talking to me so I let him be and go to the bathroom with my phone I brush my teeth and

wash my face I go to my room and wear my pjs fix my bed.

Max: Good morning Lilly

Me: Good morning Max.

Him: you snore very loud and fart a lot.

Me: how do you know shouldn't you be sleeping at night.

Him: I was until your snoring got in the way of that.

Me: I don't even snore.

Him: yes you do.

Me: I'm not going to argue with you.

Him: uhm... okay I'm going to send you a address to meet up with me.

Me: okay. I have to go now

Him: okay.

We both hang up. I go downstairs and we have breakfast my cousins are round everyone is just loud I receive text from Max I take one of the cars and leave I'm sure they didn't even notice I'm out

I drive to the location it looks like a farm house I love it already I always picture myself living in like a country house where I can ride my horses and shoot arrows. I drive in I see him standing on the porch he looks sexy with his tight t shirt on he comes and opens the door for me why does he look so big I always feel very tiny whenever I'm next to him. I step out he pulls me into a hug I'm swinging in the air with my arms around his neck he smells nice eventually we walk in the house I love everything about it it has this country feeling it's just nice we walk into the lounge and he has this indoor picnic/cinema setting for two on the floor its beautiful there is this big window you can see outside it's just grass and trees the weather is even cloudy everything is just perfect for this setting we settle down and start eating while watching a horror movie and cuddling after the second movie it's now raining quietly we decided to listen to music, his laying on his back and I have my head on his chest and his arm is warped around me tightly I can hear his heartbeat and its beating really fast I think I make him nervous. Phora- Make

You Feel starts playing softly I feel him move a little he takes his free hand and holds my chin I look up at him he moves his face closer I think his going to kiss me my heart rate increases and blood rushes I think I'm going to have a runny stomach, before I know it he smashes his lips on mine just stays like that suddenly everything I was feeling cools down I feel at peace and content I slowly open my mouth and take his thick soft bottom lip into my teeth I gently bite him he starts to kiss me back his really a good kisser I find myself on top of him and his hands on my thighs as I'm wearing a dress he slowly takes it off he then flips us over now his on top of me he pulls out the kiss and looks at my body thoroughly I had this white lingerie it has strings holding the lace together its really sexy it's one of my favorite he looks back at me with a smirk and biting his lips he takes off his shirt my god he has so many tattoos which make his dark skin look even more beautiful he comes up at me and starts to kiss me I feel him tear my lingerie roughly couldn't he just take it off nicely I will deal with him later for now he his busy nibbling on my

neck and it's so nice he moves down to my boobs he sucks one and he gently squeezes the other one this sends goosebumps all over my body I moan out again he goes on until he has his face buried in my thighs I don't know how to feel about this but his tongue is doing the most I keep jerking up and down he even put his hands on my waist to keep me from moving up and down, suddenly I feel something building up in my body I just want to release it I try to move up again but his grip is strong the feeling is close I push his head deeper and start to release some liquid it feels so nice I'm even shaking with tears coming out. When I open my eyes I find him grinning looking at me I just feel embarrassed that I just peed all over these cushions my eyes move down his body and his naked I don't know when and how that happened but my eyes are stuck on this huge dick that has veins popping and pre cum dripping its really big and scary I don't think it can fit in any vagina maybe he drank something I don't think its healthy to have such a big dick I know you think I'm exaggerating but its really big too big. I'm

brought back by him coming on top of me I swallow hard looking at him I want him so bad my clit is even twitching but I really think he will not fit in.

Him: relax I will not hurt you or do anything that you don't want.

Me: okay.

He looks into my eyes for a while I can feel him poking my vagina this is pure torture I just want to feel him inside me already.

Him: you do know if we go through with this there is no turning back, if I make love to you right now it means you are my woman and no one is allowed to enter here or touch you like I do because if that happens I will kill you both and bury you where no one will find you.

I swallow hard he said that softly but knowing that his a king pin and his ruthless I know he means every word and I don't care because deep down I know I love this man and I would do anything for him even though I'm not ready to admit it.

Him: Lilly are you sure you want to do this.

Me: yes I'm sure.

He looks at me for a while the Phora song is still playing it's on repeat. He kisses me again but now the kiss is different it's full of so much emotions I find myself pulling him closer to my skin eventually he pulls out the kiss to catch our breath he starts to rub his dick on my vagina while looking at me.

Him: I might hurt you if you feel any pain just tell me to stop and I will okay.

Me: okay.

His voice is much deeper and his eyes look small and beautiful this man his beautiful guys even with his grey scary eye his just perfect. I feel him trying to push in but his too big he tries again I think on his third try he finally goes in slowly I feel my walls trying to accommodate his size but its painful my tears start to come out he stops immediately looking at me with worry I swear I think I'm breaking my virginity again.

Me: please don't stop.

Him: but you crying Lilly I'm hurting you.

Me: please Max the pain will subside if it doesn't then I'll ask you to stop.

He looks at me and starts moving again I kiss him to distract myself from the pain he kisses me back and plays with my boobs while he moves in slowly it's still painful as ever but I still want him to continue finally his in. He starts to move his waist gently the pain feels a bit nice I moan softly in his ear.

Me: move faster please.

He moves his head from my neck and looks at me he starts to move a bit faster the pain and pleasure just takes me places he places his forehead on mine as he groans in pleasure which turns me on even more I open my legs wider for him I don't think I would be able to do that if it was not for my gymnastics he moves in deeper and groans I scream as the pain shoots up he stops and moves his waist again slowly I start to feel the pleasure

again then the build up as he moves faster I lose myself again as I bite his shoulder and dig my nails on his back my body starts to shake I release everything I think I peed again he then pulls out and flips me over now I'm on my knees with my ass up as he made me arch my back I feel him push in again he groans loudly with his hands tightly on my ass he starts to move in and out slowly the pain and pleasure is amazing but there is more pain than pleasure in this position but I let him enjoy himself because the pain is bearable he starts to move faster his hands move tightly to my waistline now its really painful I try to pull out but his grip is strong and his being rough I'm starting to struggle to breath with every thrust I scream in pain I don't think he can hear me because his groaning in pleasure and lost in his world I grab his hand from behind and scream stop I think that worked because he pulled out immediately and turned me to pull me to his chest I'm a crying mess my vagina is on fire I'm even bleeding he keeps whispering that his sorry I think he broke my

vagina I just keep crying silently because its really painful.

MAX

Fuck fuck fuck I knew this is going to happen I didn't mean to hurt her I know my dick is really big every time I have sex I always leave the girls in pain but with them its different because I really fuck them with no care at all and now I tried to be gentle with her but she's just too tight and so soft and warm I lost myself in her it was never my intentions to hurt her and now her tears are just making my chest painful I want her to stop crying as I'm holding her I feel wet on my thighs I try to move her and I see blood now I'm really worried.

Me: Lilly may I please look down on you, you bleeding.

She just nods her head she tries to move I see her flinch in pain I hate seeing her hurt especially if it's my fault I just want to fix it. She opens her legs and there is just too much blood coming out I think I should just take her to the hospital Gosh Terminator is going to kill me. I run upstairs and

come back dressed I take the towel and wipe her I try to be gentle but the blood is still coming out I dress her in my t shirt and wrap her in another towel I carry her to the car I place her and I can see she's really in pain she even looks pale I step on it when I get to the hospital I carry her inside the nurse takes her the towel she had on is covered in blood. I sit on the bench and bury my head in my arms my chest is in pain I really don't know what to do I hate that I hurt her, her phone rings in my pocket the caller ID is Owami I just look at it I don't know who is this. So I just sit there and wait for the doctor to come tell me that she will be okay I'm sure from now on she wants nothing to do with me I don't know what I would do if she said she doesn't want me anymore. I sit there for a few hours eventually the doctor comes I stand quickly he comes to me.

Doctor: you the one who brought in the young lady?

Me: yes how is she?

Doctor: are you her family perhaps? I can only talk to her family.

I change my face and look at this doctor carefully I can see he is trying to push my buttons and I'm not in the mood I just want to know that my Lilly is okay. I pull out my gun and point it at him I honestly don't care who is watching he immediately puts his hands up and takes a step back.

Me: I don't have all day so start talking.

Doctor: uh.... Uhm... ..itit It looks like she was... was ..was sexually assaulted her virginal walls were teared up lucky it's not permanent damage we were able to repair them surgically in order to stop the bleeding or she was going to bleed to death. I have called the police as per hospital protocol so both you and her will have to give statements.

I just agree to whatever he says I don't want to explain what happened to her I put back my gun all I want is to see my woman and that's it. They direct me to her ward I finally get to her room she

is sleeping peacefully I brush her hair softly and kiss her forehead her phone rings again it's the Owami person who has been calling I finally decide to pick up.

Me: hello

Owami: hello may I speak to the owner of the phone?

Me: uhm... she cant come to the phone at the moment.

Owami: okay Max it's her mother speaking I've been trying to get a hold of her I know she's at the hospital now tell me why is she there before all hell breaks loose.

Shit I rub my head frustrated.

Me: can you please come to the hospital alone and please don't tell Terminator.

She goes quiet for a while. I really hope she agrees I rather deal with a concern mother then an angry father plus my head is not in a great space right now the last thing I need is to explain why she's here to Terminator he will really kill me.

Owami: okay I'm coming.

Me: thank you.

I hear her moan I quickly hang up and go to her she opens her eyes and looks at me with a weak smile.

Me: hi

Her: hi can I have water?

I take the water beside her and help her drink. I look at her I'm just waiting for her to ask me to leave.

Her: I'm sorry.

She says looking down playing with her fingers.

Me: no you did nothing wrong I'm the one who is sorry I shouldn't have taken it that far the doctor called the police its okay if you want to open a case I'm so sorry I hurt you it was never my intentions.

Her: no no no there is no need for the police I gave you my consent everything that happened I agreed on it it's just that your thing is really big.

She says the last part softly. I smile at her.

Me: I'm sorry for that I wish there was something I could do to make it smaller.

She giggles that warms my heart. The door busts open and Blackeye walks in this woman is beautiful she actually kind of looks like my Lilly. She walks straight to Lilly and puts both her hands on her face.

Her: are you okay baby? Did he hurt you? What happened? Why would you leave the house and not tell anyone Nthombenhle? What is wrong with you?

Lilly: Ma please stop I'm fine he didn't hurt me.

Her: then why are you here?

She goes quiet and looks at me I look back at her I don't know what to say her mother also looks at me.

Me: I think I should go get you something to eat.

As I was about to walk out the doctor walks in with the police.

Doctor: great I found you both here now you can give the police the statements.

He looks very uncomfortable I think I really scared him earlier, Lilly and I look at each other and she looks back at her mother who is trying to figure out what is happening.

Me: uhmmm.. doctor that will not be necessary.

1 police: sir sexual assault is a very serious thing and I can promise you that we will catch the culprit.

Lilly's mother: sexual assault??

She asks looking at Lilly and me.

Lilly: doctor I was not assaulted so there is no need to open a case.

2 police: Mam you do not have to protect the person who did this to you we can help you.

Lilly: like I said before I was not assaulted.

She says now annoyed honestly I also find them annoying her mother has been looking at me through out this conversation I look back at her I know she is trying to search if I really assaulted her but I know I didn't yes I did hurt her but not intentionally and I stopped the moment I realized

that I was hurting her so I look at her and wait for her to find her answer eventually she does and looks at the doctor the two police officers walk out.

Lilly's mother: doctor please tell me what happened to my daughter.

Doctor: when the... the (clears throat) gentlemen brought her in she was bleeding from her vagina only to find that her vaginal walls have been teared just like someone who has been sexually violated.

She looks back at Lilly who is looking down embarrassed I know she is scared to admit that she was having sex to her mother so I guess I'll have to try and tell her in a simple and polite way.

Me: I did that to her...

Lilly: no he didn't it was me

She jumps in interrupting me I look at her and she looks at me with her begging eyes okay now I don't know what to do.

Lilly's mother: can someone please tell me what happened! Nthombenhle talk before I call your father.

Lilly looks at her with her eyes popped.

Me: we had sex and my dick is too big.

Lilly: Max man!!

I just look at her and back at the doctor and her mother who looks ready to kill me.

Doctor: I don't understand she...

I interrupt him.

Me: there is nothing to understand we had sex and my dick is too big I stopped the moment I realized that I was hurting her.

Lilly: he did not force me I gave him my consent and his right he did stop when I asked him because it was too painful.

Doctor: uhmm.. okay I will keep you here for the night just make sure you do not get any infection for the next 6 weeks you can not be sexually active until you healed fully.

Lilly: okay thank you.

He walks out and the mother keeps looking at me and her making those funny faces that Lilly normally makes Gosh they so alike. I go get them food I also buy a few snacks and go back to the hospital as I was about to walk in I hear them talking about me.

Lilly mother: Lilly tell me here how big is his penis for him to hurt you like this?

Lilly: Owami please I'm not having this conversation with you.

Lilly's mother: oh... maybe I should call your father so you can tell him.

Lilly: okay fine... his really huge Ma I think he broke my virginity again.

Her mother laughs. I think I like their relationship and how open she is with her I was worried that she doesn't have friends to talk too and I noticed that she's not as close with her sisters to talk to them like she does with her mother.

Lilly's mother: why didn't you ask him to be gentle?

Lilly: he was very gentle and slow even when he noticed I was crying he tried to stop but I asked him to continue it was beautiful Ma I would not mind to do it again even though it was really painful... I'm in love with him Ma

She says in a teary voice I know that voice it breaks my heart whenever I hear it but right now it just made my heart skip a beat I never thought that there would be a woman who would fall in love with me my face is scary with this scar my life is dangerous because of the job I do and now there is a woman who is in love with me?? Me?? Not any woman but a woman who does not even need me because she comes from money so I can not say its because I'm rich. I'm in love with her too I would do anything for her I would give her this world even if she asked me.

Lilly's mother: I know baby I've always known I was just waiting for you to admit it.

Lilly: yeah I know but I'm worried about daddy he really hates him.

Lilly's mother: no he doesn't hate him they just the same but don't worry about that I got you just enjoy your love life but promise me that you will not get pregnant please just finish school first and make your own money. If you get pregnant I will let your father kill him.

Lilly giggles I just smile I know she has school and she is very young to be a mother so I will not get her pregnant anytime soon. I walk in they both look at me her mother kisses her and leaves us I'm grateful that she came alone so there is less drama. I stay with her until she falls asleep I go back to the farm house to shower and change my clothes then I go back to the hospital I get into bed with her I pull her close she turns and kisses me I deepen the kiss and my dick jerks I pull out the kiss and look at her I move her hair from her face.

Me: you beautiful.

She turns red immediately I chuckle I think this is the first time I see her blush.

Her: thank you.

Me: why are you not sleeping.

Her: I thought you left me.

Me: I just went to take a shower and change clothes. How are you feeling now?

Her: I'm not in pain I think it's the pain medication they've been giving me is working.

Me: I'm really sorry Lilly. I didn't mean to hurt you.

Her: please stop apologizing I gave you permission to go all the way and you stop the moment you realized I was hurting.

Me: but I still hurt you and you know how much I hate seeing you in pain or crying.

Her: can we please move on from this Max I know you didn't purposely hurt me.

Me: okay fine we should sleep now.

Her: okay.

She snuggles on my chest I feel tingling things in my stomach I hold her close and fall asleep I woken up by her nurse as she has to clean her up

and give her medicine she brings her food and I feed her mother comes to take her home I'm going back to Johannesburg later I have some business to deal with since I'm done this side.

I'm currently in joburg I'm at the warehouse with my gang members we trying to make sure this deal with the Portuguese goes through Bongs is my right hand man and his the one who actually thinks this can work as for me I have a bad feeling about it and in this business its important to trust your instinct I really don't want to go into business with them they are power hungry and we've bumped heads before because they want to have access to sell their drugs in my territory and I don't want them here because they will start doing things that will attract attention from the law and I've been doing well in all these countries without any problems from the police or anything like that plus they have a huge human trafficking business which I know that they will want to mix it in my territory and I don't want that I don't hurt woman and children like that. At this moment the reason why I'm letting this go on is because I trust Bongs

he will be the one to handle most of the businesses with them and he knows what we stand for I know he would never allow them to start stepping on our toes the money is really good and having Medusa by our side with the books I might just go international but I still don't want to do business with the Portuguese but Bongs and the gang members voted me out sometimes they forget that I have the last say here but I will let them be for now.

It's been three months Lilly is back we've been doing well and I'm happy we haven't had sex since what happened in Cape town and every time I see her I just want to bend her over or pin her on the wall I swear this girl put something in her pussy it's just too nice man I cant get that day out of my head before I obviously hurt her, her natural juices just make it slippery in a tight kind of way its just so nice. Anyway one of this good days I will have my way with her hopefully I don't loose myself again and hurt her I think that's what stopping me from just having her again. Right now I have a meeting in one of my clubs with the Portuguese we

actually sealing the deal but something doesn't feel right I know Bongs and my gang members will be there I know it would be stupid of them to try and take us on in my territory. When I'm done I grab my keys and go I get to the club and tonight it's actually gentlemen night so it's packed with rich men and slay queens I go up to the VIP I see everyone is here I settle next to Bongs and they're drinking and smoking cigars the girls leave our table and we start to talk business Bongs is doing all the talking I'm just sitting back wondering what exactly do these people want one guy pulls out the papers which need to be signed by me I just look at them when suddenly Joe chokes on his drink with his eyes popped I look at him and they're all looking at the door I turn my head my jaw drops immediately she walks slowly looking at me she's wearing a white dress that has a high slit with red sandal heels she has a short blond wig on with a maroon lipstick her hips look bigger and her waist looks so small if it was up to me I would have her over this table with her thong on the side I feel my dick jerk fuck what is Lilly even doing here I hate

how every men turn their heads and look at her with lust she finally arrives at my table and sits on my lap and kisses me I feel her tongue moves in slowly in my mouth I move my hand under her slit I feel a strap on her other thigh I move my hand around it and I feel something sharp I think she has two knives. She pulls out the kiss and kisses my chick and goes to my ear all this time my eyes are closed because I'm trying to figure out why is my woman on my lap with knives on her thigh. When she gets to my ear she whispers.

Her: do not sign its a trap.

She then nibbles on my ear and pulls back to looks at me I look at her she has hazel eye contacts I miss her eyes but at this moment I just want to understand how she knows this but I will deal with that later I look into her eyes as she's busy wiping her lipstick on my lips I know she's not lying but I really don't want her here this meeting can turn sour real quick I turn my attention back to the Portuguese they have their eyes on my Lilly I clear my throat they look at me. I still have Lilly on my

lap and I'm honestly horny as fuck her sexy entrance really has me imagining me doing things to her. I look at these stupid fuckers.

Me: I'm not going to sign anything this deal is not going to happen not now not ever.

Bongs and my gang look at me like I just lost my mind I keep my eyes on the Portuguese I see their faces change I know I've really pissed them off. Before I know it the two brothers pull out their guns on me I just look at them honestly this is not the time Lilly is still sitting on top of me unbothered well if it was any girl she would be shaking with fear but this is the daughter of the mighty Terminator and Blackeye. I look at her and looks at me with a smile for some reason that give me some sort of pride and encouragement we look back at the guys my men pull out their guns I'm still seated with my Lilly but she really has to go I don't want her to get hurt. Lilly stands up and some men I don't know well they looked like customers they pull out guns and point them at the Portuguese I think they came with Lilly my gang

and I stand up and look at them. I turn to Lilly we both turn to walk out then a shot is fired I immediately pull out my gun I look down at Lilly and she throws a knife straight across my face it hits some guy who was about to shoot me I'm impressed I grab her and put her over my shoulder I start to walk fast and I keep shooting at any guy coming for me next thing I feel Lilly pull out my two guns that were in my back on my waist she lifts her body up I tighten my grip around her legs to give her balance she then starts shooting in what feels like forever we outside the club and there is some snipers shooting inside well I didn't bring them I can't see them but I see the bullets flying into my club. I open the door for her and put her in I go to my side and hop in I immediately drive fast to my place I don't want the police to find me there. We drive to my place in silence I'm trying to comprehend what just happened Lilly just showed me a side of her that I never knew she had. When I get to my place I open the door for her she didn't even break a sweat she still looks just as sexy as she did when she walked in the club she

walks out and I carry her she holds on tight to me with her eyes shut I press the lift and walk in she finally told me that she is claustrophobic the moment it opens on my floor she jumps off me to catch her breath we go to my pad I open for us. I go sit on the couch and breathe out she walks straight to my room after a few minutes I follow her I find her standing in front of the mirror with her sexy lingerie that has ropes I see a set of knives around her waist and one on her thighs she still has her blonde hair on and her heels I look at her through the mirror she has her make up off and she is removing her contact lenses I walk to her and take off my shirt my dick is so hard it's even throbbing in pain she's looking at me with eyes full of lust I slowly run my fingers on her hips as I take in her scent she smells nice I move to her knives I take the strap off and put them next to the guns she was using I take off the strap on her thigh and also put it next to the others. I run my fingers on the stomach to her hips as I kiss her neck she tilts her head to give me more excess I nibble on it as I run my hand all over her body. My hands land on

her soft boobs I squeeze them gently she moans I grab the lingerie and tear it her boobs pop out and that get me excited I move to her underwear and tear it too they all fall down she looks at me through the mirror again her face looks so pink and her eyes look small and red, I spread her legs the fact that she's still in her heels turns me on even more I pull out my dick and rub it on her wet pussy the heat coming from inside it just invites me in I push in and again her tight pussy pushes me out I try again I slide in slowly she moans out loud I whisper in her ear if she's okay she just nods her head I start to move slowly I move my hips in circles and side ways her legs start to shake I feel her walls cling on my dick fuck I know I'm going to come fast I move faster still looking at her to make sure I don't hurt her but she looks like she's in her own world which fuels me up I take her one leg and put it on the bathroom sink my one hand is on her clit working its magic the other around her waist to make sure she doesn't fall because her legs are weak at the moment and she's standing with one I nibble on her ear and I'm thrusting in

and out of her I feel her body shake and her vagina walls tighten around my dick that drives me over the edge the moment she cums and squirts I follow her and shoot my load inside her.

LILLY

I'm laying in bed with my head on his chest we've had 3 rounds and my minky is on fire but I honestly enjoyed myself the pleasure and pain he gave me was out of this world he was gentle and little rough I know he was holding back I just wonder for how long he will be holding back because I want him to have as much pleasure as he does to me. His been softly brushing my hair and it's so nice I even feel a bit dizzy.

Him: Lilly

Me: uhm...

Him: how did you know about the deal I had with the Portuguese?

I knew this is going to come but I know I can not tell him the truth about being Medusa I'm just not ready it's not that I don't trust him and I can not lie

to him because I know he will see right through me.

Me: uhmm... I know you want the truth but I can not answer you right now and I don't want to lie to you so can we please let it go for now and when I'm ready I will tell you the whole truth just know that I have no intentions of hurting or betraying you.

He goes silent for a moment. I really hope he doesn't push me or go look for answers himself.

Him: I hear you I'm sure you already know what I really do for a living right.

Me: yes I know.

Him: that means you might get caught in the cross fire and that scares me I know you can protect yourself but it would kill me if anything happens to you. Lilly I love you right now you the reason why I breath I would do anything for you you my everything.

I turn my head to look up to him he looks down at me I really love this man and God knows I would

lay my life for him I don't care about what he does for a living even though I know the drug business is very dangerous including the enemies he has but I would risk it all for him his my heart in human form.

Me: I love you too and I know you worry about me but you know my parents and they taught me well and I know you would never put me in harm's way so whatever you go through I'll always be right next to you and stand with you I know how important loyalty is and how dangerous things may get but I'm never leaving your side. All I'm asking is never break my heart it beats for you now please don't hurt me.

I see a tear escape his eye I gently wipe it off he kisses my forehead and holds me tightly. I don't know why I feel protective and possessive of him but I just want to love him so much that he actually questions his existence I promise myself I'm going to show him so much love even if it takes everything out of me. We stay tangled together until I fall asleep. I'm woken up by something

poking my ass so I move my hand to remove it because its annoying me I grab it and I hear Max groan softly on my neck I freeze when I realize I'm holding his dick next thing I feel it jerk in my hand I quickly let it go and he chuckles.

Him: since you woke him up you need to put him back to sleep.

He says with his raspy voice it sounds so soothing I could listen to him talk all day. Then my mind drifts to his dick I get wet intensely so I turn around and kiss him I know I have morning breath but it can wait he pulls me closer while kissing me we both laying on our sides. He pulls my leg up to his waist I just want to feel him inside he starts to rub the tip on my minky I deepen the kiss and bite his lip while I moan he slides in I flinch in pain as my lips are still swollen from last night I pull out the kiss and look at his small eyes I love him. He moves in slowly and he groans which makes me even more wet I love hearing his deep voice groan in pleasure it gets me excited I bit my lover lip as

I'm trying to accommodate him. Our eyes are still locked in together.

Him: you still good?

Me: yes please move...

I say whispering I need him to move I want that pleasure he always gives me I start to wiggle myself so that he can move. He smirks at me and grabs my ass and start to move in and out I throw my head back allowing myself to feel the pleasure as it kicks in I feel him lick my neck I hold on his shoulder and moan out his name he groans in my ear as his nibbling on it he starts to move faster he still has his tight grip on my ass he uses his free hand to pull my head back he then kisses me I feel my buildup I know I'm going to come. I pull out the kiss as I scream when the orgasm hits me hard next thing I hear him groan as he pushes roughly inside me I feel him jerk as his shooting his load. Later we finally got out of bed he went to get me a some oils and salts so that I can soak myself as my minky is really painful I've been laying in bed waiting for him to come back it's a good thing that

I decided to put in the 3 years implant while I was at the hospital so we not getting pregnant any time soon. Next thing I hear a knock I know it's not Max because he wouldn't knock so I get up and put on a gown I go open and I see a tall dark guy standing there I look up at him I'm trying to remember where I saw his face then it clicked he was at the club last night he is actually Max's right hand man and friend I think but I doubt that they close he never talks about him. We both looking at each other I'm getting a weird vibe from him I just decided that we don't like him. He folds his arms on his chest waiting for me to say something I just raise my eyebrow I step back and bang the door on his face and lock I walk back to bed I get in the blankets I take my phone and go through my Instagram nothing interesting there .

....hey Entle.

I look over and I see Nobuhle I actually miss her I smile and sit up straight.

Me: hey where have you been?

Her: around doing ghostly things.

Me: uhmmm... how are you?

Her: I'm great I actually come to warn you about the man you left outside.

Me: I knew there is something off about him. I don't like him.

Her: yes so please always be alert about him. I'm actually here to tell you about your future with Max. You going to go through some really hard ships and they will not be easy you will change along the way but please try not to lose yourself Nthombenhle it really doesn't look good I see a lot of blood being spilled and I see your hands covered in blood I wish it was more clearer but it's not. You will have to stand strong Nthombenhle this journey is not for the weak you are stronger than you think you carry your mother's strength I will always be with you just please be strong very strong the storms that are coming scare me they will shake you but your love for Max is what will keep you going.

Me: you scarring me Hlehle.

Her: you should be scared but don't worry like I said I will always be with you it's just nothing looks easy.

I sigh and look at her she has this worry face going on we stare at each other for a while I'm just trying to figure out what is going to happen I'm disturbed by Max walking in with a shopping bag.

Him: I'm sorry I took long the line was really long.

Me: it's okay thank you.

He looks at me for a while I know his trying to figure out why mood changed.

Me: I'm fine I'm just feeling tired I think after the bath I will feel better.

Him: okay.

I know he doesn't believe me I like how he doesn't push me. He goes to the bathroom to run me bath I fix the bed and tidy up since our clothes are everywhere when I'm done I go soak myself I really cant get what Nobuhle said out of my head. Eventually I get out and go get dressed I'm wearing his clothes I go to the kitchen and find him

chilling in the lounge with this guy they both look at me I just look at this guy I wonder what's his story honestly I really don't like him. Max comes to stand next to me.

Max: Lilly this is a friend of mine we call him Bongs.

I just nod my head looking at him.

Me: we've met

Max: Bongs this is my woman Lilly and how do you know each other?

Me: I closed the door in his face when he was knocking this morning.

Max looks down on me confused. I just turn and walk to the kitchen I'm hungry.

Bongs: I didn't know you have a woman.

Max: well now you know.

I can hear them talking from the kitchen I take out some ingredients to cook I can see he bought some groceries. When I'm done cooking I dish up and set the table I call them to come eat. Max is sitting on

the head of the table I'm sitting on his right and Bonga is opposite me. We all start to dig in I'm just too hungry and worried about what Nobuhle said it just keeps playing in my head these two are having their own conversation.

Bongs: so Lilly where are you from.

Me: Cape town

I say while concentrating on my food. I know I'm going to do a background check on him so I won't bother asking him silly questions.

Bongs: you don't talk much do you.

I just look up at him while chewing slowly I see him move uncomfortably on his chair I tilt my head to the side while looking at him. He starts to move his eyes around pussy.

Me: no I don't really like talking much.

We eat the rest of the meal silently. If only I could eat this rice with my hands I would this spoon is annoying me. When we're done eating I clear up and they both leave. I chill watching TV later Max

walks in with take aways he settles next to me and looks at me I just ignore him.

Him: Lilly.

Me: uhm...mm...

Him: what's with the vibe between you and Bongs.

Me: I don't like him.

Him: oh... why

Me: I don't know there's a weird vibe about him that's just off.

Him: uhm...okay.

We carry on watching tv cuddling until later he takes me back to my apartment since I have classes tomorrow and he has work. As soon as I get there I go to my laptop and do a background check on this Bongs person I see his Max's right hand man they've known each other for a very long time I don't see anything dodgy about him looks like I'm going to have to trust my instinct here eventually I start doing my work I see the Portuguese are really not happy with what happened in the club but who cares I continue doing my work

everything seems good I'm making a lot of money I'm actually a millionaire now. When I'm done with that I move on to my assignments since I'm now a second year student my assignments are a lot but nothing I can't handle having a photographic memory always works in my favor. I always have been one to remember things amongst my siblings I remember things exactly as they are from the sound, to taste, to smell, to colors, to shapes, to numbers, to faces the list goes on and on even at this age I still remember things from when I was 6 years old just as they are I think that's why I was able to do IT things you don't have to even show me anything twice once is enough. Eventually I finish two of my assignments I'll just print them out tomorrow at campus I actually need to buy myself those mini printers I can't live like this.

It's been a good few weeks me and Max are doing well I still don't like Bongs and Max doesn't bring him around my presence and I appreciate that I've once seen his crew when I went to visit him without telling him and they cool but his really scary when his with them it's like his aura gets

darker the moment he looked at me when I walked in it send shivers down my spine anyway this is my birthday month so normally I go camping with Baba on the first weekend of March since I would normally celebrate it with my family my birthday it's on the 16th of March Ill be turning 19. I'm busy packing my camping bag I already told Max I will be with Baba this weekend he spend the whole week sulking it was so cute and funny anyway I walk out Baba is waiting for me I in the parking lot I find him on the phone I just put the bag in the trunk and go sit in the passenger seat I wonder where we will be camping since we in joburg. We now driving and we've been singing along to the radio I've been taking intsa stories it's nice how we listen to the same music from the 80s to now hip hop and RnB is the best eventually we get to the camping site we set up the tent immediately and start the fire we normally bring meat for the first night and in the morning after we head breakfast we go hunting for dinner that is my most favorite part about camping. Now we just chilling eating marshmallows having a general conversation.

Him: so you and Max huh?

I knew this is coming so I just giggle.

Me: what about me and Max Baba.

Him: I've been waiting for months now for you to tell me what's going on Nthombi ka Baba.

I blush and he bursts out laughing gosh this man.

Him: so now I'm not the only man who can make you blush?

Me: hao... Baba please stop it.

Him: stop what? I'm just making conversation about you and Max and you blushing for no reason.

Me: has someone told you that you like news and drama?

Him: yes khumkani tells me all the time but don't try to change the subject here I want to know what happened while I was gone because when I left you were with that boy and next thing you with Max.

I sigh as I think about the events that happened with Amu he really did hurt me but a part of me is

happy that he lead me to Max because of him I've come to experience the most authentic love I've always seen between my parents I never thought that I will find it but here I am. I start to tell him in detail what happened a part of me is really embarrassed that I have to mention that he broke my virginity but this is my best friend but I will never tell him about my sex life with Max those chats are for Owami anyway by the time I'm done his face looks deadly but his calm.

Me: Baba please don't go after him I'm over what happened and I want him to see me in future flourishing and happy without him.

Him: Nthombi ka Baba you do know that you the love of my life well after your grandmother, when you hurt I hurt when you happy I'm happy so you can not expect me to sit back and say it's okay to hurt my love like that, fine I will not make him disappear but I will obviously make him pay some way.

I'm obviously not going to win this argument so I let him be later we go to sleep. We wake up in the

morning I make breakfast on the gas stove we bought after we eat we go hunting this is my favorite part about camping we find a perfect spot I set up the sniper and lay on my stomach I look through the gun to see my target it's a springbok. Khuhle loves snipers I think his going to end up being a sniper he said he loves it because it's a silent and clean way to take out your target which is true all you need is minimum of 5minutes to study your targets movements then you good plus the gun is silent no bang noises it's very peaceful. I pull the trigger I aimed for the heart I hope I got it. Baba carries it back to the tent and start to cut it we finally braai the meat and eat it over a nice conversation.

I'm now back at my apartment since I told Max I'm back he was here in 5 minutes he even packed my bag apparently I'm spending the whole week with him he missed me his cute. Later we leave when we get to his pad I find his gang there my eyes lend on Bongs gosh I hate this guy I greet them and go to the kitchen to make myself food I see they didn't tell Max that they will be here I can't really hear

what they saying, when I'm done with my sandwich I sit on the high chair and eat.

MAX

All I wanted to do is dick down my woman but these idiots are here to watch soccer imagine I know Bongs being here doesn't sit well with my Lilly worse part she doesn't even hide it that she doesn't like him. I go to the kitchen and she's sitting there eating looking all cute with her chubby dimpled chicks I get the beers for the guys and go back to her, I put my arms around her waist and kiss her neck she's so warm I really want to bury myself into her I think she has turned me into a sex addict.

Her: please stop I'm eating.

Me: I miss you.

I whisper in her ear and nibble on it she smells nice. One thing I've noticed about my Lilly has a very expensive taste she buys things that you just cant tell they are expensive labels because she doesn't buy things that scream for attention her

clothes and jewelry and perfume are really expensive I've never seen someone who buys such expensive things like her she's not like my sisters with them you can see that they wearing labels from head to toe because they make sure you see the brand name but as for my Lilly you hardly ever see the labels unless you look carefully. I'm disturbed by Juice when he walks in the kitchen I let go of Lilly and stand on the counter him and Lilly are having a staring contest I clear my throat and they both look at me. Juice is our hit man and he works under logistics he makes sure that our merchandise is delivered and received accordingly.

Me: how can we help you Juice.

Him: I just wanted another beer and I wanted to see your woman clearly since you always hide her.

I chuckle he goes to the fridge to get his beer and turns to look at us.

Me: what now??

Him: it's just I never thought I would ever see you in love its so weird.

Lilly giggles.

Me: can you just go since you got your beer.

Him: no I'm fine here the match has not started I want to get to know my other boss.

Me: there is nothing to know here.

Him: oh... there is so much to know after I saw her in action at the club I want to know everything.

Me: Juice....

Lilly interrupts me

Her: it's a pleasure to meet you Juicy.

She says smiling at him did she just nick name him??

Me: juicy???

Him: the pleasure is all mine bozzayam and I love how you say my name.

Her: then from now on you will be Juicy.

Me: juice leave please I want to enjoy my time with my woman.

Him: you always hide her let me enjoy being in her presence while it lasts.

Me: juice don't piss me off.

Him: geeez you so grumpy relax it's not like I will steal her plus I like her she's good for you ever since you met her you less tense.

I move towards him and he runs out the kitchen Lilly is busy giggling here. Later I go watch the match with them as soon as its finished I chase them out I want to make love to my woman now. When I walk to my room I find her sleeping with my t shirt on and her ass in out there my dick jerks I take off my shirt and Jean's I get on top of her and spread her legs she's not even wearing underwear I start to lick her clit gently and eat her up she's now moaning I know she's awake she tries to run away I pull her back she does this every time she's about to cum so I pin her down and carry on eating her she starts to squirt with her legs shaking I pick her up and pin her on the wall with her legs

around my waist I hold both her arms above her head in use my free hand to push my dick in then hold her waist she moans out my name I get goosebumps all over my body, fuck I've missed her so much I start to move in and out she's so wet and slippery and tight I tighten my grip on her waist I still have to keep in mind that I don't hurt her eventually I move her back to the bed I lay her on the edge looking up I spread her legs and look at her minky swallow my dick in I put my thumb on her clit and gently massage it and I thrust her she grabs the sheets moaning louder her boobs keep moving up and down everything about her is just a turn on I start to move faster as I feel my build up I feel her walls tighten inside that drives me over the edge we both cum together. We make love all night forgetting she has classes in the morning, I did manage to wake her up even though it was a mission she looks tired I got her ready for school and dropped her off. This weekend is her birthday I've bought her club and named it Club Lilly its actually a strip club but it's more sophisticated and classy not anyone can afford partying in there I

know she is going to love it I'm going to give it to her on Friday night since it's her birthday for the past few days I've been teaching her how to run a club and restaurant and she's such a fast learner hey I want her to be able to run it herself as it will teach her independence and being boss I just really hope that she will be spending it here in joburg.

I managed to get a hold of her sisters and told them that they must come this side as her gift is here and they were excited about them spending their weekend here. I'm so excited to give her the club I just cant wait even the gang like her well except for Bongs he tries to hide it but I've known him for years and I know his not a fan of Lilly but everyone is just ready to see the club Juice is the one who actually helped me with it I like how him an Lilly have a small friendship it's just I never expected him and Lilly to get along maybe because they kind of the same they both hate most people funny enough he also doesn't like Bongs that much.

Its Friday morning and its Lilly's birthday I'm currently at the club making sure everything is in order Juice is here shouting at everyone the theme is black and white with a touch of rose gold it's very beautiful she told me that all her siblings are here so let me go see her for a few minutes since Juice is bossing everyone around. I get to her apartment and I can hear the noise from her door I'm carrying flowers for her and her sisters and four bottles of champagne I stand there trying to figure out how to knock when someone opens the door he looks at me he looks so much like Terminator actually his the young version of him just a little lighter. I was about to say something when one of the sisters comes to the door.

Her: hey Max it's nice to see you come in.

She says excited and pushes the guy to the side I walk in and they all in the lounge and kitchen Gosh all these boys look the same my eyes are searching for my Lilly I finally see her and smile.

Me: hallo... uhmmm I bought you ladies these.

I say giving the flowers to the sister I'm not sure if its Ulwazi or Nolwazi she excitedly takes the flowers and I put the champagne on the kitchen counter everyone is still silent looking at me this is just weird, finally Lilly walks to me she hugs me and I whisper happy birthday to her and kiss her forehead. She blushes looking down her deep dimples come out to play I just chuckle someone clears their throat I look up and the boys are just looking at us.

1 guy: who are you??

Sister: hai Siyanda behave.

1 guy: Am I talking to you Nolwazi?

Okay let me get out of here before he starts things he can't handle.

Lilly: his name is Max and his my friend.

Siyanda: Can he not speak for himself?

I raise my eyebrow and look at him for a while he returns the look I just chuckle shaking my head I turn my attention to this beautiful shorty of mine.

me: Lilly I have to go now I just came to drop these by make sure you all ready by 8PM someone will come pick you up it's a surprise

Lilly: what kind of surprise please give me a clue.

Me: no just look ready to party I'll see you later.

I kiss her chick and walk out. I suddenly get a bad feeling something is not right but I brush it off today is about my Lilly I go back to my place I chill for a while and I call Juice to send someone to go get the Khumalo babies I get dressed in all black and gold chains I take her gift I bought her this other cute bracelet that I found her staring at on her online shopping I bought a matching necklace and earrings. I grab my keys then I get going when I arrive at the club its already packed outside we didn't let anyone inside only my gang and her parents and Godfather are inside and obviously the staff I was able to talk to her mother to come here and when I told her what I bought for my Lilly she was surprised and happy for her as for Terminator I don't know I haven't seen or spoken

to him. I stand by the door next to the bouncer and Juice we waiting for Lilly and her siblings.

Juice: Max dude why didn't you say she is the daughter of Terminator and Blackeye? I'm not even going to mention Godfather.

Me: it still doesn't make any difference she's still my woman.

Juice: you do realize that when you break her heart you dead right.

Me: and why would I break her heart?

Juice: never mind just know you a brave motherfucker. I would never go for a Khumalo baby.

I chuckle.

Me: that's because you a pussy.

He punches my shoulder playfully. Next thing three black SUVs pull up I see the Khumalo boys hop out looking fly all the females on the line are just drooling at them. The sisters and my Lilly hop out too looking sexy in their short dresses there are three other girls I didn't meet earlier they look

like models but have the same blue eyes as the brothers

Juice: I change my mind I want a Khumalo baby. Fuck these girls look hot.

He says busy cursing next to me I just shake my head and walk to my Lilly she throws herself in my arms immediately. I put her down and kiss her forehead.

Me: welcome to your club.

She just looks at me confused making her funny faces. Her sisters catch on and the start screaming.

Ulwazi: Lilly he bought you a club look!!

She points at the name busy jumping excited Lilly looks at the name its written Club Lilly in rose gold. She turns to look at me with glossy eyes Nolwazi hugs her while she cries the brothers are now next to me.

1 brother: why are they crying?

Ulwazi: he bought her this club as her birthday gift.

The look at me shocked and weirdly.

2 brother: fuck... yeah!! You qualify now let's go party!!

The other three cheer him on I guess these four are the wild ones I look back at my Lilly she comes to hug me.

Lilly: thank you so much I didn't expect such a huge gift.

Me: anything to make you happy come let's go in.

We walk in and the strippers are dancing nicely I like how they don't look ratchet they even have black masks with lingerie waiters are dressed in black and white everything looks beautiful it's full of black and gold balloons everywhere we walk to her family I see Terminators brother and lady that looks like a model she jumps to her mom Terminator just looks at me I return the look. The bouncers start to let people in slowly I get that feeling again something is not right I look around I go to Bongs.

Me: how is the security?

Bongs: the same as other clubs.

Me: Bongs I told you to get extra men here fix this now!

I click my tongue and walk away from him, his honestly starting to piss me off I don't know what's his problem if he didn't want to do it he should've said so I could've done it myself I go to the bar I ask for a glass of whiskey and tell one of the waitresses to take care of the parents table. I gulp it down and ask for another one.

.....: I would slow down if I were you.

I hear a deep voice behind me I turn and find Godfather with a glass in his hand.

Me: yes I know it's just something is not right.

I say looking at him. I walk away from him and go to the kitchen to get her cake they put on those sparkling things the moment they see me everyone start to sing happy birthday to her I actually bought her four brothers some whole week vouchers at my game drive in Limpopo I'm sure they will enjoy it I didn't want them to feel left out since they share a birthday. When I get to her

she's crying in her fathers arms she's so beautiful I'm happy to see her tears of joy her and her brothers blow out the candles and everyone starts popping champagne bottles. I hand the brothers their gifts and they went crazy. Now everyone is busy partying and drinking I still have that uneasy feeling I'm not even drinking Lilly sees me sitting alone and she comes join me she looks at me for a while I know she can see that im not okay.

Her: Max something doesn't feel right I think we should go home.

She says softly looking at me I know if she's feeling it then something must be really wrong.

Me: okay let's go tell your parents that we have somewhere to be then.

She takes my hand and leads me to their table I can see they having fun I'm happy they enjoying themselves.

Lilly: Owami we about to leave so I wanted to say goodnight.

Terminator: and where exactly are you going?

He asks in a serious tone I look at him I honestly just want to be in a safe place with her I'm even thinking of driving to my safe house.

Me: I have a last surprise that is just meant for her.

He looks at me as a father I'm sure his thinking I want to fuck her but honestly I want to give her the gift that I bought for her in left it in the car.

Godfather: khumkani let the boy go.

He just called me a boy I'm not even going to address that I'm really not in the mood. Eventually he agrees after Blackeye convinced him Lilly goes to her siblings to say her tell them she's leaving and Godfather pulls me aside I can see my Lilly laughing with her brothers she's about four tables away from me.

Godfather: Max what is going on I can see that you leaving has nothing to do with any surprise.

I sigh and turn to look at him.

Me: I don't know what's wrong all I know is that I'm really having a bad feeling and I just want to get her to my safe house.

He goes silent and just looks at me for a while.

Godfather: okay make sure nothing happens to her keep her safe Max I'm trusting you with my baby girl if anything happens to her I will come for you with everything I got do you understand?

Me: I understand I would give my life for her she is my everything....

I'm interrupted by a gun shot I turn to look at Lilly and her and the all the Khumalos are the only people who are still standing looking around I see the guy from up the lights but because of the lights I cant see him properly I run to Lilly and pull her into my arms to shield her by now bullets have been flying around she's been wiggling to get out of my grip but I hold on tightly somehow we end up on the floor with me on top of her I really hope I didn't crush or hurt her but I'm not moving away from her until I feel it's safe. As this is going on I feel some pain on my back and a little drowsy I try to hold on to her but my arms feel a bit weak I don't understand what is going on. Suddenly it goes quiet. I hear someone busy calling my name

and Lilly she tries to push me off but I'm too heavy I also try to move myself but I feel heavy and weak.

LILLY

I've been trying to push Max off me his heavy and his suffocating me I finally manage to get him off me when I sit up he just lays there on his back groaning in pain next thing I see blood coming from his back I realize his been shot and his loosing a lot of blood my heart starts to race fast this can not be happening I sit properly and put his head on my lap I gently brush his head he has his eyes on me he looks pale my tears start coming out.

Max: stop crying Lilly you hurting me.

He says that softly with some struggle.

Me: please stop talking I'm going to get you some help okay just don't close your eyes.

I start to scream for my mom. I keep calling her as loud as I can but I don't see her next thing I see Nobuhle in front of me.

Nobuhle: you need to be strong Nthombenhle remember what I said the storm is here now.

Then she disappeared, my dad comes running to me he goes on his knees I keep crying holding Max I cant loose him. I look down on him and he smiles at me.

Max: I left your gift in the car. I love you Lilly

He closes his eyes slowly.

Me: no...no....no Max please don't do this to me please! Max please I'll stop crying please just don't leave me...

I sob loudly holding him the paramedics come in and they pull me off him as they put him on the stretcher.

Paramedic: he still has a pulse but its weak we have to start moving now.

They carry him out I follow them my mom and dad and Baba are with me I go with the paramedics and they follow us behind. I'm holding his hand tightly as soon as get to the hospital they carry him out the doctors take him I just break down my

chest starts to close in I'm trying to breath but it's not happening next thing its lights out.

I woken up by a beeping sound I open my eyes I see Nobuhle laying on my lap looking sick and thin she looks up at me slowly.

Me: Nobuhle what's wrong?

Her: it's your heart Entle its hurting and now I'm hurting I told you this road will not be easy it's time to stand strong for both you and Max.

Then it all comes back I feel my heart break Nobuhle moans out in pain I hate how much I put her through this pain I put my hand on my chest trying to ease the pain I feel my throat dry up as I'm trying to swallow the lump I feel my heart drop to my stomach and my insides turn my chest starts to close in again I try to breath but its hard the doctor and nurse come running in then its lights out again. I'm woken up by people talking I think is Owami and my dad.

Owami: Khumalo what is happening to my baby?

She asks in a shaky voice it sounds like she's about to cry.

Daddy: she is heartbroken Owami I didn't know this is how deeply she feels about him.

He also says softly I feel him hold my hand, right now I'm scared to open my eyes because it will bring me back to the reality that Max has been shot shielding me.

Daddy: remember when you were shot 5 times?

Its silent for a while.

Daddy: I can remember it like yesterday it left like someone is ripping my heart out and when you were in a coma for months I felt like a part of me is dying slowly with every minute you were laying in that bed because it felt like I'm losing you..... (he sighs) I know exactly what she's feeling it's the most painful thing ever and everyone around her will try to make her feel better but she will be too angry and hurt because she will not understand why would he put his life in the line like that she will have million questions for him and no one has

the answers. All I can tell you Owami is that my baby is in pain and she is slowly breaking as she is finding it hard to breath, it's hard to breath without the love of your life, you do not see life without them the grass doesn't look greener on the other side it's just dark everything is black because the only person who brings light in your life is not there so you just walk around in the darkness hoping that you find that light again. You feel empty and numb so eventually you sit there in the dark and pray and hope that they come back.... Owami my baby is struggling to breathe because the reason for her to breathe is not there..

He says in a shaky voice I've never seen or heard my dad cry I feel my tears escape my eyes I open them and I find my dads eyes his tears drop and he wipes them and pulls me in his arms I just sob painfully I feel like someone is punching me in my guts and the air in my lungs is slowly leaving me.

Daddy: Lilly look at me my baby.

He says with his hands on my shoulders looking at me. I keep gasping for air.

Daddy: Nthombi ka Baba breath in slowly on my count 123.. breath in. 123 breath out...

He keeps counting slowly and I start to count and breath with him my heart rate starts to beat normally I still have my eyes on him.

Daddy: you okay baby, you okay just breath that's all you need to do breath...

I feel better that helped.

Me: I want to see Max how long have I been sleeping here.

Owami: for 2 days let me help you and you can go see him.

Me: okay.

I shower and wear the clothes my mom bought for me I asked them that I do this alone so they just directed me to his ward I walk in slowly I find him laying there with all these machines I just feel numb I don't have tears to cry anymore so I just stare at him standing at the door after a while I walk in and sit on the chair I hold his hand and look at him I don't even have words of comfort or

anything so I just sit in silence looking at him what I know is the moment I walk out this hospital I'm going to find whoever did this and make them pay. I'm interrupted by three women and a man walking in, I look at them the older man looks exactly like Max so I guess that's his father the older woman has to be the mother since she has some resemblance to Max including the two girls but it's hard to make out who they really look like since they all have heavy make up they all looking at me.

Max mother: and who are you?? And what are you doing with my son??

Why doesn't she greet? I raise my eyebrow I'm sure I look like a zombie and im trying to gather all the strength I have to be strong for me and Max and this one I can see she was send by the devil to test me.

Max dad: hello young lady I'm his father and who are you?

Me: hello sir I'm Lilly his girlfriend.

His face changes into a frown.

Max mother: my son would never date a cheap skank like you! Get out!

I just look at her maybe its hurt that is making her this rude let me just leave. I stand up as I'm about to leave the Doctor walks in.

Doctor: greeting... I'm happy to see that all his family is finally here I'm actually looking for my Lilly Khumalo.

They all go silent and look at me. I recognize this doctor I've seen him with my dad here and in Cape town since this is my dads hospital.

Me: that would be me doctor can you please tell me how is he?

Doctor: Miss Khumalo Mr. Ngidi suffered a huge damage on his spinal cord as two bullets went through it.

I close my eyes and a tear drops I wipe it off quickly.

Doctor: we were only able to remove one so he is currently disabled from the waist down we will

remove the other bullet on a later stage when he is stronger I didn't want to put too much pressure on him as he also lost a lot of blood. Two other bullets pierced his intestines but we were able to repair them and give him a blood transfusion.

Me: so will he be able to walk once you remove the other bullet?

Doctor: that is the plan once I remove it I can be able to fix his spinal cord but it will take him a lot of work to get him back on his feet he will need some physiotherapy to assist him with that.

Max Mother: I still don't understand why she is still here.

Doctor: well Mr. Ngidi has put her as his next of kin so everything concerning his health she is the one who has the signing power.

Max sister: she's a witch doctor we don't even know her and we are family.

Doctor: unfortunately she has the last say here. Miss Khumalo I need to warn you about the last surgery he may die on the table or end up really

paralyzed permanently so I suggest you think about it thoroughly before the time comes for us to open him up again.

Me: what are the chances of him not walking again after the surgery?

Doctor: 80 or 85% and death is 78%.

Me: we will do the surgery.

Max mother: you are crazy! You want to kill my son.

Gosh why is she shouting? Max will have that surgery and he will make it and he will walk again finish.

Doctor: okay when the time comes I will inform you to come sign the consent forms.

Me: okay.

Next thing a white man with a suitcase and a suit walks in. His father looks at him I wonder why he hasn't said anything.

White man: good day I'm Smith White I'm Nkanyezi Maxwell Ngidi lawyer I'm looking for My Lilly Khumalo.

Max father: why is everyone looking for you?

I just shrug my shoulders why do they even call me My Lilly?

Me: I'm Lilly

Mr. White: there are somethings I need to discuss with you and papers for you to sign we can meet up for lunch so we can go through them but I suggest we do it soon I've been looking for you for the past two days.

Me: okay we can do it now.

Max father: may I ask what is this about I'm his father?

Mr. white: his businesses.

Max mother: we also have to be in that meeting this gold digger wants to steal my sons money.

Mr. White: unfortunately that is not possible as it only states that My Lilly is the only person requested.

Me: Mr. white it's okay they can be present we can go to a restaurant or something.

Doctor: Lilly you can use my office it will save you the trip.

Me: okay doctor thank you so much.

Doctor: I'm sure you know where to find it since you've been here before.

Me: yes I remember.

We all walk out and we got to his office lucky it has a small round table that is able to accommodate us all so we settle down and he starts to pull out all these papers and files.

Mr. white: first I will give you this letter he wrote for you please read it privately.

He hands me the latter. He than puts his hands together and looks at me.

Mr. white: Max has left all his businesses in your hands.

Me: he did what?? I don't want them I can't handle them.

Max Mather: I knew you just came here to suck my son dry.

Max father: I'm sure we can transfer them to me or his brother this little girl knows nothing about business she will run them down.

Mr. white: unfortunately that is not possible the contract he signed does not allow her to transfer anything she is not allowed to even sell them she can only sign them over back to him once he is back and mentally and physically healthy other than that all his hotels, clubs, restaurants and other businesses which I was told you know about belong to you.

For fuck sakes what has Max got me into I run my hands over my face both his parents are looking at me deadly Mr. white is looking at me with worry and pity.

Max father: we can take it to court.

Mr. white: still not possible this is more like a will you can not contest it you will loose.

I sigh where will I even start? Wait what about his drug business I quickly look at the lawyer he looks at me.

Me: you said his other businesses?

He looks at me and he knows what I'm talking about he nods his head.

Mr. white: you also in charge of that.

Me: Jesus Mary and Joseph.

I say with my hand on my face. Is Max fucking crazy?? How the fuck I'm I going to lead a whole gang Gosh I can not see Bongs face all the time I just can't.

Mr. white: don't worry I will inform you in detail about that one it needs time and energy and right now you look exhausted.

His right I'm tired Max is killing me. Eventually we go our separate ways I walk back to his ward I find

an extra bed set up my dad walks in he hugs me I stay in his arms for a while why would Max do this to me.

Daddy: I made sure they set a bed for you incase you spend most of your time here. Just promise me that you will not neglect your school work.

Me: I promise I wont and thank you for the bed.

Daddy: the bag on top has clothes and toiletries that you will need when you here please eat and take care of yourself do not lose yourself in here.

Me: I promise I wont plus I doubt I will be here the whole time I have school and other things to do.

Daddy: okay.

Owami comes in they hug me and leave they are going back to Cape town Owami said she has things to deal with and next week she will come back to check on me. Now I'm left alone I decide to take a shower I stand there in the water this has been a long day my brain is tired I'm more worried about the gang how am I going to be a king pin why would he put me in such a position I just want to

sit here and wait for him to wake up but now I'll be running around running his businesses. First I need to context Lolo to find who ever is behind this. Lolo is Tumelo he took over his fathers business in the underworld his father is Manzi everyone calls him Ruthless he is my mother's right hand men ever since I started Medusa I knew that I will need an army so I contacted him since his the best to provide such, everyone calls him Junior since he takes after his father I'm the only one who calls him Lolo. Eventually I get out the shower and lotion myself and get into my pjs I fall asleep the moment I hit the pillow.

I'm woken up by someone shuffling around I open my eyes I see a two nurses cleaning him up I just look at them closely while they do their job they bandage him and put him gently back to bed then they leave I see the letter Mr. white gave me I decide to open it.

My Lilly if you reading this it means I'm on my death bed. I do not want you to sit by my side and cry until I wake up which is why I made sure you keep busy, I

trust you Lilly you are a Khumalo baby now go show the world what you made of.

I love you.

That's all it says I look him and back at this letter I flip it around to see if he wrote something else but no that's just it. This man is stupid I cant believe him I stand up and go to him I kiss his forehead and whisper.

Me: you very stupid but I love you.

After that I go shower and change I call my grandfather and told him that I want a house he agreed to get me one after asking me 21 questions that were unnecessary I'm sure I'll be moving in this weekend. Anyway Mr. white said I must be ready we going to have a meeting with the gang today I guess he will be announcing that I'm taking over for now. I'm dressed in blue jeans and a white shirt and black ankle boots he told me there is someone coming to pick me up as soon as I get to the parking I see him, his one of Max guards I've seen him around he greets me and we drive of immediately we get to this other place its isolated

I think it might be their warehouse I see Mr. White outside his dressed in all black he looks different in casual clothes his actually hot but his not Max. I step out the car he comes to hug me more like a friendly hug.

Mr. white: morning how are you feeling today?

Me: morning Mr. white I still feel numb.

Mr. white: please call me Smith and don't worry with time you will be much better Max is a strong man he will come back.

Me: thank you, why are we here?

Him: to introduce you to the gang and there is something else I have to give to you. Some of them will not be happy that you taking over just know I have your back okay.

Me: okay thank you.

Him: come let's go in

We walk in and go through the security clearance the moment we walk in we go down the passage passing different doors I wonder what's behind them eventually he opens one and looks like it's a

boardroom I see all the gang members some faces I've never seen before the all looking at me weirdly.

Bongs: Smith what is she doing here?

Smith: relax she has to be here as per Max's instructions.

We sit down it's just silent with me looking at these people who are also looking at me Smith plays something on the projector its Max my heart skips a beat the moment I see his face I miss his eyes and laugh.

Max: it's on?

Background: yes you may start.

Max: okay if you looking at this it means I'm on my death bed I've decided to leave everything in Lilly's hands including this business so what she says goes do not give her problems. Juice you will be her right hand man show her the ropes quickly time is not on your side she is a fast learner so don't worry. No harm must come to her protect

her she is one of us now if anything happens to her I will hold everyone reliable in this room. I'm done
It then goes off I didn't even realize I'm crying I miss him so much it hurts I start to hyperventilate Juice puts a glass of water in front of me I start to count and breath in and out like my dad showed me once I'm able to breath I drink the water Juice gives me his handkerchief I clean my face when I look up I find the guys looking at me with worry and pity except Bongs.

Me: I'm fine guys please sit down.

They hesitate but sit.

Me: uhm.... I don't know why Max would put me in charge but I will step up to the plate all I ask is that you keep things running for this week as I get everything in order and prepare myself.

Biggy: No problem Bozzayam you heard the man we got you.

I smile looks like Bozzayam is really my nickname now.

Me: don't yall have a nice sexier name than Bozzayam?

I ask them they all chuckle and sing no I just giggle then we all leave I'm happy that they okay with me taking over I might have a problem with Bongs but I'll deal with him later. All this week Lolo was able to get the guys for me it turns out it's the Portuguese brothers and their gang Lolo has them for me all of them I even gave him a list of who I want anyone who was involved is here I asked Juicy to show me their slaughter house turns out they don't have one they only have torture room I don't want that I told him to fix one for me. I've moved into my house it's a three bedroom open plan house with a garage, a gym and a pool Owami has send me two of her fighting robots and I've been exercising with them I've pulled out the gymnast team and boxing team I have too much on my plate I don't have time for practice and such. Smith has been showing me how to run the hotels, clubs and restaurants at least people do their work I just check the monthly books and pop in here and there just to make sure everything is running well.

Smith gave me a box that's from Max and today I decided to open it I find keys and a piece of paper with an address and another with numbers. I grab my car keys and go to the address it's a house a mansion actually I drive in with no trouble from the security I walk in and look around it's a typical man house it doesn't have a female touch or feel homey I run upstairs I get to the main bedroom I immediately smell his cologne he never told me he has a house why doesn't he live here?. I see a piece of paper on the bed its written "open the safe in the closet" I go to the walk in closet I see all his clothes and they smell just like him I hold in my tears I look for the safe I finally find it behind his suites there is a sticky note it says "use the number you found in the box". I take it out of my pocket and punch it in and it opens I find a stack of papers and two guns I pull out the papers and there is another note it says "memorize everything that is all you need to know about the business it will help you run it and please keep it to yourself when you done burn them in the fire place". I start to read through the papers carefully to be shocked is an

understatement basically this is a recipe to the drug business from all the countries he supplies and everyone on his payroll everyone thinks that he buys his drugs somewhere and sells them but his actually the manufacture he makes his own drugs even the gang doesn't know this. Max is a billionaire his filthy rich its actually disgusting how can someone have so much money. The papers basically tell me how to make sure that his drugs are done and delivered to the rightful buyers but this side I have to do discreetly without the gang knowing piece of cake that will not be a problem I also deliver for myself so that I can supply the people who are the gangs buyers when I'm done I go down to the lounge and burn them I see his car keys I've decided that I'm going to use his car an leave mine here. When I get to the garage it's full of SUVs expensive cars I take his rover which is the one he normally drives when his with me I hop in and I see a gift box on the passenger seat then I remember he told me that he left my birthday present in the car my eyes get glossy I take it and open it I find the bracelet I've

been looking for it's designed by Cartier it was sold out it has a matching necklace and earrings I put on the bracelet and drive to the hospital when I get there his still looks the same but his loosing weight. I sit on the chair and hold his hand I still don't know what to say to him my phone rings.

Me: Juicy.

Him: Bozzayam

Me: how are you?

Him: I'm good your slaughter room is ready and the men have been moved in.

Me: thank you make sure everyone is present by 8PM.

Him: shap shap Bozza.

He then hangs up I turn to look back at Max I see Nobuhle sitting on his bed she still looks so weak and thin and pale.

Me: Hlehle..

I say with my voice shaking.

Her: remember what I said I told you that you going to change but please don't lose yourself in all of this.

Me: I don't understand what are you talking about

Her: just promise me you will not loose yourself.

I don't know what to say to her how can I make a promise of something I don't even know.

Her: Nthombenhle please..

She says softly

Me: okay I promise

Then she disappeared I stare at Max my heart just keeps breaking with every moment his laying here and I'm just holding on for the sake of the responsibility he has put on my shoulders. I eventually leave later I go to my place shower then dress up in a white jumpsuit its sleeveless it hugs my body nicely it's long I wear it with red bottoms pump heels I straighten my hair and put on maroon matt lipstick. I asked one of the guards to drive me to the ware house when I walk in all the guys are dressed in black everyone is tense I greet

them and Juicy shows me where everything is. I see the camera is set I see the Portuguese brothers they all tired on the chairs naked my anger starts to build up slowly I see the table with all the knives I asked for and cooler boxes with ice everything looks nice and in order.

Me: Biggy please get the camera ready, can yall carry one of them on the table make sure you tighten the belts.

I say everyone is just standing quietly looking at me the only noise is from these idiots trying to scream but their mouths are covered as soon as the guy is put on the table and the camera is ready I pull the table with the knives on I get excited when I see them they even put surgical knives I'm happy it's like they knew I'm actually going to need them. I stand next to the body and look at this guy his busy crying I smile at him his going to die today I need him to remember my face. The gang is looking at me quietly I can see they want to see what I'm planning to do. I remove the tape on his mouth.

Him: I'm sorry I'm sorry please don't kill me I'll tell you everything.

He says crying I don't need him to tell me anything I know everything. I just want to hear him scream I want them to feel the pain I'm constantly feeling I want them to gasp for air like I do whenever I cry for Max or miss him so much that I feel the air leave my lungs. I start to hum ndikhokhele by Jub Jub it reminds me of how me and my siblings would sing it acapella whenever we cook or clean with their deep voices. I put on the gloves I take the scalpel and start to cut him from his chest to his belly button he screams louder I love the sound of it I open his chest and his lungs are fucked up I guess his a heavy smoker I cut them out and throw them on the floor I remove his healthy organs and put them nicely in the cooler box by the time I'm done his dead and im covered in blood. I'm going to donate all their organs to a public hospital a lot of people need them I just hope I removed them properly I watched a medical video on how to perform such a surgery and thanks to my genius brain I can remember all the surgeries step by

step. When I'm done I pluck out his eye cut off his ears and tongue maybe I should start with them with the next one so that I can hear them scream a little longer. When Im done with that I take a big butcher knife and chop off his head it falls and rolls on the floor I go and pick it up and put it in a card box with his ears and eyes these I'm going to ship them back to the Portuguese cartel. I forgot his dick I go back and cut it off and put it in the box with head and close it up all this time I'm taking my time and still humming ndikhokhele on repeat I unbuckled the belts and pushed his body on the floor. I stop humming and look at my gang and they look shaken and scared I look at Bongs for a while I see him swallow his spit slowly and start to vomit pussy.

Me: bring me the next one.

The guards hesitated first then go get the next guy and his really fighting I put my hands together and wait for them they tie him up on the table and I start to hum again and go for his eyes, ears and tongue then move to his dick and finally his organs

this one stayed alive for longer and his screams sounded like music in my ears even though I kept humming my jam, this goes on for a while when I'm done I killed about 13 men this is actually my first kill. I tell Juicy where to drop off the organs and the box that's full of heads I gave them to a guard to give to Lolo he will give them to the Portuguese cartel. As for the camera the video will be send to everyone in the underworld the moment they click on it will play until it finishes then your device will catch a virus and crush this is to send a message that whoever comes for us will meet the same fate and to make sure everyone knows me and don't underestimate me I know some of them will try to disrespect me since I'm standing in for Max. As soon as I'm done I leave the guys to clean up and I go take a shower they actually have bedrooms here im using Max's room when im done I wear his clothes they smell just like him I walk out and go to the lounge im hungry. I find them sitting quietly staring into space lost in their thoughts. I just sit there and grab the pizza

and start eating they look at me weirdly I ignore them and continue eating.

Its been weeks since that fateful night everyone is just walking on eggshells around me I keep having nightmares where I hear them screaming Baba came to me as soon as he saw the video he was fuming mad my dad has been here with me his been helping me cope with the nightmares, I still go to school and handle the businesses and make time to see Max and I also do my Medusa work everyday, everyone knows and fear me some call me the butcher some call me Bozzayam and to make matters worse they know who are my parents so basically I'm untouchable but I'm literally a walking zombie because I hardly sleep but I'm getting better some days are better then others. Max is getting his second surgery next week I haven't seen or heard from his parents since that day I'm not complaining though it's one less thing to deal with I don't have the energy every time I go to sleep Nobuhle is always next to me she doesn't say anything but my mood is really

taking a toll on her she just looks weaker than before and her hair is also falling off.

I'm woken up by my dad shaking me roughly and screaming my name I shoot my eyes open and I'm shaking dripping in my sweat I was having another nightmare I start crying he holds me in his arms.

Me: when does it stop I'm tired daddy please make them stop.

Dad: I'm so sorry Nthombi ka Baba you will be okay soon.

I stay in his arms and cry myself to sleep I wake up and it's now morning I go do my hygiene process and go to the lounge I find him with Baba his been avoiding me since he came screaming and shouting at me I see Owami in the kitchen I greet them and just sit on the single couch.

Baba: Nthombi ka Baba

I turn to look at him he looks at me worriedly we stare at each other.

Baba: Nthombi ka Baba..

He says in a shaking voice.

....: I told you that you going to change.

I turn and see Nobuhle sitting on the floor I'm sure I now look like her I've been avoiding the mirror as much as possible.

Me: it's no use saying I told you so now what happened happened. I'm tired

I say to her .

Dad: what??

I turn I forgot about them.

Nobuhle: I know and I told you this is not an easy road I told you the storms will shake you this is not the time to break down Entle you need pull yourself together you need to be strong for you and Max.

I sigh.

Me: How can I do that when I can hardly sleep? Tell me please their screams haunt me in my dreams.

Baba: Lilly who are you talking to?

Nobuhle: I told you I'll always be with you I'll fix it just please try to be in a better mood you draining my energy.

Me: I'm sorry

Nobuhle: it's okay I'll be fine.

She then disappeared I look back at both these men I just stand up and go get ready I'm going to the hospital I need to sign the consent forms. When I'm done I walk out the back door I don't want to deal with them I'm tired as soon as I get to the hospital I sign the necessary papers and go sit with Max I still haven't said anything to him all I do is kiss his cheeks or forehead and whisper I love you when I leave other than that I say nothing. I sit there until its late I decide to sleep on his bed I miss him I snuggle on his arm and fall asleep immediately. I'm woken up by a nurse I've been sleeping for a long time I get off his bed and sit on the couch and watch them clean him up later I go back home when I walk in Owami is the first to hug me I'm happy she cooked I'm so hungry I haven't had anything today as soon as I'm done eating I go

to my room I'm later disturbed by dad he walks in and sits on my bed facing me.

Dad: how are you feeling now?

Me: I don't know.

He nods his head.

Dad: baby who were you speaking too earlier?

I don't know if I should tell him or not while I'm busy contemplating Owami walks in and sits on the other side.

Me: if I tell you I don't think you will believe me.

Owami: tell you what? What are you talking about?

Dad: I asked her who she was talking too earlier.

Owami: Khumalo don't you think you making things worse she's already having nightmares.

Me: I was talking to Nobuhle.

They both look at me weirdly.

Owami: where do you get that name Nthombenhle?

Me: from her... look I know I'm going to sound crazy but I got it from my twin sister she visits me all the time and I can call her whenever I want to talk to her she told me her name is Nobuhle.

My mom covered her mouth with tears streaming down my dad just looked at me blankly. Maybe I should just call her because now I don't know what to say.

Me: Nobuhle. Nobuhle. Nobuhle

I call out and it gets a bit windy in my room she appears she looks a bit better but I'm not happy with her looks.

Me: I just told them about you and now they look like this.

Nobuhle: that's because they still cry over my death.

Me: now what must I say to them?

Dad: is she here?

I nod my head and point at her direction.

Dad: Hlehle I'm so sorry.

He says with glossy eyes.

Nobuhle: tell him it's okay I'm where I need to be and I'm happy.

I tell him.

Owami: how does she look?

Me: just like me but prettier with longer hair but right now she looks kind of ugly.

Nobuhle giggles I do the same

Nobuhle: well if someone decides to work on her feeling I'll get my groove back.

Me: did you just say groove back?? You chill too much with your oldies.

I say giggling.

Owami: what did she say?

Me: she is complaining that she looks ugly because of me.

Dad: I don't understand.

Me: whenever my heart breaks or my spirit is down she feels my pain and it drains her energy and right she looks like someone who is really sick.

My parents sigh Nobuhle comes to hug my dad I hear him gasp she does the same with mom she gasps too while crying.

Nobuhle: tell them to stop grieving for me I'm not dead I'm here even though you the only who can see me I also visit them it's just they cant see me.

I tell them what she said eventually they leave my room for some reason I feel much better. I take my laptop and do my school assignments honestly I don't know how I'm still doing well at school because honestly I've been a walking zombie but my grades did not drop juggling the hotels, clubs and restaurants and my Medusa plus the drug business is a lot and now I told everyone in the crew to come up with business proposals I don't know how they depending on the drug business as their only source of income by next year I want their businesses to be up and running. I told them I will help them with their business plans and

funds as for Bongs he stays clear from me and I'm really happy with that he doesn't make his stupid comments about me anymore he cant even look at me.

Max had his surgery three days ago we've been waiting for him to wake up and right now I just got a call that he woke up I'm driving like crazy to the hospital. My parents left for Cape town last week since I'm much better even my nightmares are gone thanks to whatever Hlehle did Baba is also back to his place he comes to check me now and then. I walk in the hospital and run to his ward the moment I get to the door I freeze his just sitting there watching TV he turns to look at me my heart start to race fast I feel my chest closing up. I grab my shirt as I'm gasping for air.

Max: Lilly breath slowly!

He shouts at me then I remember I start breathing while counting my breathing regulates I look at him again. I slowly walk in my knees are shaking I grab the chair and sit my tears start to come out his really back.

Max: please stop crying please.

He says softly I wipe my tears and look up blinking trying to stop them. He chuckles I look at him.

Him: come give daddy some sugar.

I bust out laughing I stand up and go kiss him softly he squeeze my boobs and I giggle we disturbed by the doctor walking in.

Doctor: welcome back Mr. Ngidi.

Him: it feels great to be back

Doctor: now Lilly can stop having her panic attacks and walking around looking like a zombie you look much better now.

This man is forward Max looks at me with a frown I just ignore him.

Me: how did the surgery go?

Doctor: it was a success all he needs now is physiotherapy and he will be okay in 6 to 8 months.

I sigh out in relief.

Me: can you get me the best physiotherapist?

Max: doctor are you trying to tell me that I can not use my legs?

Doctor: for now yes but with physio you will be as good as new.

He then goes silent his whole mood has changed

Doctor: I'm going to keep you here for a few days and when I'm happy with your healing I will discharge you.

Me: okay doctor thank you.

He walks out I turn my attention to Max who is just staring into space.

Me: Max

Him: can you please leave I want to be alone.

I sigh and leave when I get to my house I call the physiotherapist and get the contractor's to come change the toilet and anything that can accommodate Max with the wheel chair he will stay with me here since I don't have stairs and I don't want him to be alone.

It's been two months since Max got discharged and yes he stays with me I take care of him mostly bath him and help him use the toilet and cook for him and honestly his a pain in the ass. Ever since he came back his aggressive and rude his always shouting and screaming at me and the physiotherapist the first two even quit and today a new one is coming. I understand his frustrations his a man of pride and him not being about to do things himself makes him angry and mean. He doesn't want to see anyone or go out for a walk all I do is go to school and come back to be his punching bag emotionally and mentally I'm tired when he woke up I was happy and hoping that everything is going to be better but it's just hard. I hear a knock I go open I see a tall white lady standing there in tracksuits I guess she is the new physiotherapist I let her in and offer her something to drink then I go to the bedroom to get max I find him laying on the bed throwing a ball up and down.

Me: Max your therapist is here.

He ignores me.

Me: Max

He turns to look at me with a frown.

Him: what is wrong with you Lilly? I told you I do not need a therapist I can do it myself.

Me: and how is doing it for yourself working since you laying here doing absolutely nothing?

Him: hai Fuck off man Lilly! I will walk when I feel like it leave me the fuck alone!

His deep voice fills in this room probably the whole house it doesn't scare me anymore I'm used to it.

Me: Max I'm not doing this with you okay you going to go out there and start working with that therapist and I pray she doesn't quit.

I say calmly looking at him he stares at me he tries to get up I go assist him and he pushes me I trip and fall I stand up and look at him as he tries to get on his chair he struggles and falls I hear him groan in pain my tear drops I quickly wipe it and go to him again I help him up and put him on the chair I

push him out to meet the therapist he just ignores her and he rolls outside where he would normally have his exercises she just follows him I sit on the high chair and breath out this is what I've been dealing with for the past weeks I'm really tired. I can hear him shouting at the therapist calling her stupid I go to the drawer and take a knife I'm tired of this shit I walk outside fast I find the therapist ready to bust out in tears I charge to Max and slap him so hard I feel my hand itch I grab him under his chin and bring the knives close to his nose.

Me: now listen here you stupid fuck I'm sick and tired of your shit. You always behaving like a ten year old busy throwing tantrums that shit stops today. I do not know this man in front of me I want my Max back and you the only one who can bring him back so you better get your shit together and bring my man back or I will slit your throat before you can blink. Max bring back my man! I want my Max back! I'm sexually frustrated and I'm close to losing my shit! I'm tired mentally and emotionally im suffocating and you are busy behaving like the world owes you something (I scream at him

looking into his eye).... I sigh I'm tired... I need my Max please just bring him back to me please (I say in a softly shaking voice)

My tears drop and I wipe them and walk away and go sit by the pool chairs and just cry why doesn't he just take in the help I'm exhausted it's been a long 6 months already I just want my man back for a 19 year old I'm carrying too much on my shoulders why can he see that.

MAX

Fuck this girl can throw a fire slap I think my eardrum vibrated a bit as I'm busy rubbing my chick I hear her crying by the pool side my heart breaks even worse I've been so absorbed in my pride and anger that I fail to see that the woman I love is struggling I look at this white chick and I can see she looks shaken.

Me: look I'm sorry can you please come back tomorrow we will start with the exercises.

Her: okay

She walks out quickly I roll my chair to the pool side and I see my Lilly crying so painfully I feel chest pains I want to go to her and pull her in my arms but I cant. I really need to get myself fixed my woman can not cry like this because of me I really need to get my shit in order.

Me: Lilly..

She looks at me her face looks red including her eyes she is covered in tears. I feel a lump on my throat I swallow it I really hate it when she cries I can't take it.

Me: come..

I say softly and open my arms she rush in them and I hold her tightly she cries her eyes out on my shoulder I really need her to stop crying. Why does she feel lighter and smaller? I think she lost weight this cant be happening.

Me: I'm sorry Lilly please stop crying.

I say softly she just continues crying I've never heard her cry like this I feel like someone is punching my guts I tighten my grip around her I

don't know what to say this hurts. This goes on for a while eventually she stops and she has hiccups.

Me: let's go get you water

She gets off me and start to push me inside I really hate this chair right now I would've carried her inside and put her to sleep but I cant from tomorrow I'll do whatever it takes to start walking again this is too much for her she is young to be taking care of me like this not to mention the businesses I've thrown to her. We end up in bed cuddling she is snoring softly on my chest honestly I've missed having her in my arms I love her so much.

Its been two months and now I'm able to stand and I'm working really hard to start walking Lilly has shown me how my businesses have been doing under her watch and I'm really impressed not that I didn't believe in her it's just I didn't think that they would be doing this well when she told me that the gang have businesses now I didn't believe her until she showed me that their business are used for the benefit of the drug business now we

don't pay people to do work for us but we use the businesses so basically the money is rotating amongst us she said once their businesses are big enough they will open others but it's their personal choice of what they want to open since it will only belong to them and it will be purely legitimate business we will not use them to clean money more like it's their legacies that they will pass down to their generation. I don't know how she was able to convince them into this but I'm happy she did because when I tried it seemed like I was talking a foreign language, now I do not worry about things like logistics, IT, security etc. since the companies are actually a front to move illegal and legal things and some gangs also use our services I'm just happy that they are now making money on the side the drugs are not their only income. I asked her to show me her school work I wanted to make sure that she's not slacking there. I've been doing the work from home and I can see she is happy about that now she has time to do whatever she wants I enjoy watching her fight the robots I cant wait to get back on my feet

she looks like a good challenge a sexy challenge speaking of sexy I haven't had some for months and I'm always horny because she's always wearing her revealing clothes I cant wait till I dick her down.

It's now the first week of December and I can walk now but not for too long and I use a cane I feel so old. I just got dressed in sweatpants and a shirt since Melissa is coming for my physio I walk out and find Lilly sitting on a high chair in a very short shorts and my t-shirt her yellow thighs get me horny immediately I groan frustrated she turns to look at me and her eyes travel to my dick she chocks on her cereal.

Her: I think you should change your pants.

Me: no they comfortable.

Her: did you see that your thing is out there? What will Melissa think?

Me: nothing she's just here to help me walk not for my dick.

She was about to say something and there was knock she went to open and Melissa walked in.

Melissa: morning

Me: hi

I hardly ever talk to her I only answer what she asks and that's it.

Melissa: you ready for your exercise today?

Me: yeah sure lets go.

We walk to the back I ask her that I sit for a moment my legs feel tired she decides to help me stretch them and she's busy stretching and rubbing them I feel her hands move up my thighs I look down at her and she has her eyes glued on my dick I'm not hard but looking at my pants you would think I'm hard. I clear my throat with my eyebrow raised she looks up and quickly removes her hands on me good girl. Eventually we start I'm stretching my upper body she's busy showing me how to twist and turn.

Her: if you feel any pain on your back please stop immediately.

Me: I'm good

I say twisting to my left.

Her: you doing it wrong your hands are placed incorrectly.

She says while walking towards me and starts moving my arms to my waist she then decides to run her hands on my upper arms to my shoulders she then goes to my chest as she slowly moves them to my abs I grab both her arms tightly very tightly her face turns from lust to pain as she flinches.

Me: never put your hands on me like that understand.

Her: I'm sorry

She says softly she's a tall lady and skinny not my type only my Lilly touches me like that not stupid bimbos. I hear someone clear their throat I turn and see Lilly standing on the sliding door with her arms folded I cant read her face she turns and walks inside. I let this one go her hands look purple.

Me: I think we had enough today.

Her: yea I should go. I'll see you tomorrow.

Me: no you wont today was your last day.

Her: but...

Me: let's go

I say walking away from her she can't be anywhere close to me I would kill her because I know she will cause problems between me and Lilly. The moment I walk inside I freeze same as Melissa I find Lilly sitting on the counter eating a lollipop with her knives on her side placed nicely in order and she is putting a gun together looks like she just finished cleaning it.

Me: uhmm... Lilly

She cocks the gun and points it at Melissa it goes off immediately I just close my eyes I hear Melissa screaming next to me I open my eyes and Lilly has an innocent smile on her face but her eyes look dark and cold I've never seen them like this something is really up with her but I cant put a finger on it at first I thought I'm seeing things but

now I know something is definitely going on with her.

Lilly: oops...

Then she giggles Melissa runs out the door crying I think she peed the floor I just shake my head chuckling. I walk to her and stand between her legs I put both my hands on her thighs.

Me: take off your shorts.

Her: why?

Me: I just want to see something.

Her: and that something is under my shorts?

Me: yes

She looks at me for a while then she stands up on the counter I'm just looking up at her as she takes them off she has a pink thong I grin like a chimpanzee I feel my dick jerking when she's done she sits back to her position I start to brush her thighs gently.

Me: I remember you saying something about being sexually frustrated months back.

Her face turns pink and all I see in her eyes is lust. I move my hand to her minky and start to brush it with my thumb slowly I feel her swollen clit looking at her as her eyes get smaller.

Me: do you know how much I miss being inside you?

I whisper in her ear and she moans that drives me crazy. I grab her already wet thong and tear it. I start to play with her minky fuck she's so wet I slip my finger and she moans again this time it's just mixed with her heavy breathing. I pull out and she looks at me with bagging eyes.

Me: talk to me Lilly... what do you want?

Gosh my baby is so horny it's not even funny. I push in two fingers and she throws her head back.

Me: look at me Lilly.

She just moans so I pull out my fingers she looks at me again she looks so vulnerable. I put them back in.

Me: don't take your eyes off me.

She nods her head. I press her clit while moving my fingers on circles inside.

Her: Max please...

She moans out she's so wet I don't think my dick cant hold on much longer.

Me: talk to me Lilly tell me what you want.

Her: just fuck me please.

She says louder she didn't have to say it twice I tore her shirt and her lovely boobs spring out this woman is fucking beautiful I don't care what anyone says. I pull out my dick I slam into her she screams out loud and I groan as I feel my blood rush and goosebumps all over my body no woman has ever made me feel like this I swear her pussy was made just for me. I missed her so much but my back is starting to hurt I've been on my feet for too long but I just need to satisfy my woman.

Her: Move Max please.

She says wiggling her waist, I take her leg and put it on my shoulder she leans back and puts her hands behind to balance I hold her boob and

squeeze it I start moving slowly I'm not going to last I start so move faster her walls start to close in that sends me over the edge before I know it she starts to squirt I press her clit and go faster as I feel my build up I then ram into her she screams as shoot my load inside. My back is burning I pull out my legs feel weak I sit on the chair fuck my back really hurts.

Lilly: Max are you okay?

She asks starting to panic.

Me: it's my back it hurts a bit.

She quickly gets off the counter and goes to get my painkillers she comes back with a towel on she gives me some water and assists me to bed I lay there and she comes back with a bowl with warm water and starts to clean me up since I was covered with her cum when she was done she snuggled next to me with a blanket I pull her to my chest and she wraps her hand over my waist.

Me: I love you so much.

Her: I will blow your brains out next time I see a bitch touching you like she did this morning.

I feel the air behind my neck stand up I pull her face up to look at me and her eyes are doing it again they look really dark too dark for my liking I think I should be worried I don't like this at all. Something is up with my woman.

Me: is there something you would like to tell me?

Her: yes there is.

Me: I'm all ears.

Her: I will fuck you up the next time I find a woman close to you like that. I will chop off your fingers the next time I find them touching a woman like you were earlier on.

She said that calmly her eyes keep getting darker and her voice is a bit rusty now I'm seriously worried about her.

Me: don't worry today was her last day working here so I'm going to do the exercises by myself.

Her: don't worry I will help you.

She says that with an innocent smile her eyes glow with love now this is my Lilly not that thing I was talking too. We fall asleep cuddling with her talking nonsense and her weird jokes I don't even know how I laugh at them it's true when they love is blind I think it's also deaf.

It's just after Christmas I spend it with Lilly she made me wear those Christmas pjs and bought a Christmas tree the things we do for love my crew must never see those pictures she took they will never see me the same ever. Today she went to one of my hotels there is a problem that needs her to be there physically I haven't went out even now and I wont until im 100% good and I also need to go back to my place I've been here for too long Lilly and I exercise every morning in the gym and it's been nice and coming good in January I'll be walking properly. I'm disturbed by a knock at the door I go open and Terminator is standing there I just move aside and he walks in he goes to sit by the couch comfortably I get him a cup of coffee I join him and we drink it in silence I could really use a strong drink right now but Lilly said no

alcohol for me I once tried to drink a glass of wine behind her back I just saw the glass break in my hand only to realize she throw one of her knives right at it since then I stay away from her wine.

Him: Max

Me: yes dad.

He turns to look at me with a frown I just grin at him.

Him: call me dad again and I will blow your brains off.

Me: no you wont daddy.

I say grinning at him he slaps me at the back of my head. I get serious immediately.

Me: Lilly is not here right now you can come back later.

Him: don't tell me what to do in my daughter's house you just a visitor. Why are you even still here? You know what never mind I actually came to see you I know Lilly is at your hotel.

He now sounds serious.

Me: okay I'm listening.

Him: did you find out what happened to the people who shot you?

Me: not yet I want to get back on my feet then I'm going after them.

He goes silent okay something is up.

Him: I guess she didn't tell you.

Me: tell me what?

Him: the people who did that to you is the Portuguese.

Me: I'm not surprised there they really not happy with me.

Him: you mean they were not happy with you.

Me: can you just say what you want to say and stop playing.

He turns to look at me for a while.

Him: she killed them.

Me: who killed them Terminator would you just talk.

Him: Lilly she got all 13 of them and killed them one by one.

I close my eyes as I take in what he says to me a part of me is not surprised because of the way her eyes always change now I know why. I rub my forehead as I drop it this is all my fault.

Him: you know what that means right.

I just nod my head for fuck sakes Lilly can not be a killer.

Me: I'm sorry this is all my fault.

Him: yes its definitely your fault Max! But I don't entirely blame you I know Owami would have done the same if she was put in the same position.

Me: worse part is that I even gave her all the resources to do all this.

Him: even if you didn't she was going to find a way the apple doesn't fall far from the tree.

Me: I don't get it. I don't think she would've done it if I didn't let her to stand in for me.

Him: she didn't need your power to do it she has her mother's brains and my guts so believe me she would have done it whether you give her the resources or not.

I just stay silent.

Him: I just came to inform you about what your girlfriend did she's well known in the underworld because she took a video of it and send it to everyone.... Max I saw myself in her I know she will not stop anyone who comes her way she wont hesitate to kill again.

Me: how did she do it?

Him: she went the surgical route while they were still alive she took out all their organs and shipped back their heads and dicks to the Portuguese cartel she really made everyone shake in their pants.

Me: fuck!

Him: yeah be glad you didn't see that anyway I'm here to ask you to keep a close eye on her you know how it gets after your first kill.

Me: yeah thank you.

Him: don't thank me I'm doing this for her I know she will only listen to you.

Me: okay daddy.

I say with a smirk.

Him: I will fuck you up Max.

Me: No you wont.

I say grinning. He tries to come for me I jump up and run to the bedroom and close the door laughing.

Him: open this door Max!

Me: no I'll call Lilly and tell her you hurt my back.

Him: you such a pussy.

Me: it was nice seeing you daddy.

Him: ain't you going to walk me out?

Me: No my legs are tired and my back is painful so bye bye.

Him: fucking childish piece of shit!

I just bust out laughing. My legs are perfectly fine I just lay on the bed and think about what Lilly did I'm really worried about her now that I know the reason behind her dark aura she suddenly developed. I sigh, I'm woken up by Lilly knocking on the bedroom door since I locked it that time. I go open.

Her: why did you lock the door?

Me: your dad was here trying to kill me.

Her: my dad doesn't try to kill he just kills.

Me: oh... so you don't believe me? And here I thought you love me.

Her: what does love have to do with what you saying?

Me: you know what never mind now tell me since when do you kill people.

She freeze immediately and looks at me I raise my eyebrow waiting for her to talk.

Me: I'm waiting Lilly

Her: what did you expect me to do?

Me: watch your tone Lilly.

Her: or what Max?

She says stepping closer to me this cute little Lilly of mine is so adorable I chuckle the apple really doesn't fall far from the tree.

Me: I will fuck you so bad you will wake up in a hospital bed like the first time don't test my patience Lilly.

She swallow hard.

Me: Lilly do you realize the damage you have done?

Her: honestly Max what did you expect me to do? Do you know how it broke me to watch you bleed on the floor and I couldn't even save you? Every panic attack I got every time I thought that I'm losing you? The chest pains I got every night I would cry myself to sleep? Do you know the feeling of watching your life crush and the walls closing in there is literally nothing you can do to fix it? Do you Max? And yet everyone expected me to not break because you threw all your

businesses on my shoulders that was a shit move I'm 19 years old Max why would you even do that. She says crying my heart breaks I step closer to hold her and she steps back now it feels like someone is pinching my heart.

Her: I know very well that had it been me sleeping on that bed you would've done worse so please don't stand there and talk as if you know what I went through in the past months.

She's definitely right I would've done far worse but that's not the point. I sigh

Me: I'm sorry I put so much on your shoulders I never knew that me being in the hospital was going to be so soon. It's just I'm scared and worried about you.

Her: it's okay I'm fine now you here now.

I go sit on the bed and look up at her she walks to stand between my legs.

Me: Lilly you don't get it you've opened a door that you will never be able to close. Once a killer always a killer even if you choose to stop killing there will

be someone or something to trigger you back into killer mode that's not the life I want for you.

We both go silent for a while as she goes to sit next to me I think she is processing what I just said. I pull her into my arms and we just sleep. I don't know what I'm going to do this is hard but we will take it one step at a time.

It's now second week of January Lilly has signed my businesses back and I've been handling things the only thing Lilly does is run her club things between us are great I've even moved into my house before I hated staying there because it's too big for one person so I bought the bachelor pad I stayed in so now that Lilly is always here and she keeps buying new things to decorate each room it feels homey I love having her here. Today I'm going to the warehouse because there is a snitch caught in my gang not just any snitch but a Hawks snitch and Lilly wanted to tag along even though I said no many times she brought out her teary eyes and I don't know what happened but now she's sitting on the passenger seat as I'm driving there.

The moment we walk in the gang goes crazy over Lilly speaking of them they have really changed thanks you Lilly now they are business men they are working with her to open their second businesses they even wear suits and attend meetings it was weird at first seeing Juice in a suit was funny because his your typical Soweto kasi boy but now his just wow. Any way we walk in the torture room and find him beat up I splash a bucket of water on his face and he gasps for air only then I realize its Bongs you must be fucking kidding me. A whole Bongs a Hawks agent really??

Me: really Bongs??

Him: fuck you Max.

I chuckle this is just wow.

Me: why Bongs?

Him: because you and that bitch of yours think you own the world.

I slap him so hard. He then laughs I don't know how to feel I've known this guy for so long we met

in the streets and we've been together ever since and this is how he does me?.

Me: you know what fuck you Bongs.

He was about to say something then I see a knife go through between his eyes he throws his head back and blood start to come out as his eyes are popped out I turn back and I know its Lilly she's the only one here who can throw a knife like that she walks towards me and pass me she goes and pulls out the knife from his head and wipe it clean with a clothe I'm just looking at her. She walks back to where she was standing next to Juice I feel my blood boil and juice moves away from her she's just looking at me unbothered.

Me: why the fuck did you do that?!

She looks at me with her eyebrow raised she slowly walks towards me and looks up at me.

Her: in your entire existence you will never talk to me like that I'm not one of your gang members check yourself Max.

She says that calmly and walks away I chuckle and look at her walks out the door this little person is really going to get what she's been asking for.

Me: clean this up.

I walk out the door and go to my car I find her sitting in there busy on her phone I just get in and drive home I pass by McDonald's and buy food for us all this time I haven't said a word to her we get to my house I park the car and get out to open the door for her she hops out holding the food I take it and she walks in front of me she's wearing a tight black dress her big ass looks nice when its moving left to right I lick my lips she opens the door I put the food on the counter and follow her upstairs to her to the bedroom she throws herself on the bed I close the door and lock it she looks me.

Her: Max what's going on?

I just look at her for a while. I take off my shirt and walk towards her she I'm jumps off the bed and tries to run to the bathroom but she's not fast enough I grab her from behind and hits me with her elbow on my stomach but I can take it. She

turns around and punches my jaw I taste my blood inside I throw her on the bed and take off my pants as I walk to her she tries to run again I grab her leg and pull her I tear her dress and get on top of her.

Her: Max please don't do this.

Me: No Lilly you think you the man in this relationship right?

She tries to push me off I grab her hands and pin them on top of her head I grab her lace underwear and tear it.

Her: I'm sorry please Max.

I rub my dick on her minky while looking at her I feel her slowly getting wet I gently push myself in normally my dick goes in half way I never put all of it in as I know that I'm going to hurt her but today I need to teach her a lesson the only way I know how. I drop my head to kiss her and she responds to it I start to move my waist slowly she moans in my mouth good she's enjoying herself I push in the rest of my dick and she screams I stay

inside and not move allowing her to adjust to my size I don't want to hurt her too much.

Her: it hurts Max...

I start to move my waist again and she moans louder I see her tears coming out I pull out and flip her over to her stomach I spread her legs and arch her back she tries to run again I pull her back and grab her throat from the back not too hard though I push myself in again slowly I lean forward to her ear.

Me: who is the man in this relationship Lilly?

She sniffs I know she's crying and it breaks my heart but they won't work today. I push myself in her further she moans out.

Her: its you...

Me: then why do you do as you please?

Her: Max please...

I just push the rest in and screams out loud.

Me: today I'm going to fuck you until you can't feel your legs for killing someone.

Her: I'm sorry..

I start to thrust in her and she's been screaming in pain and pleasure. I go faster as I feel her build up I pull out.

Her: Max I said I'm sorry please....

Me: I want to remember this day when you think of killing someone.

I put it back in and start over again this time I'm rough with her I still have my hand on her throat choking her gently I haven't had rough sex in a while and now I'm enjoying myself not too much though I don't want her to end up in a hospital but she wont be able to walk though. I pull out again as I feel her orgasm getting closer and now she's really in tears this goes on for about a while I flip her over again seeing her face covered in tears that hurts my heart.

Me: Lilly I'm not going to have a wife as a killer.

Her: but I didn't like him

Me: clearly you haven't learned your lesson

Her: no....no...no Max please

I spread her legs and go in she keeps crying I fuck her again and pull out when she's close I do it again and again and again by now I know she has learned her lesson so I decide to give her what she wants I put her nicely on the bed I get on top of her I go in her slowly I lock both my hands with hers her whole face is pink including her eyes.

Me: what did I say Lilly?

Her: you don't want a killer wife.

Me: who is the men in this relationship?

Her: you are.

Me: good girl

All this time I've been moving my waist gently as I make love to her I kiss her she tastes salty I deepen the kiss and she moans softly she sounds tired eventually she cums and passes out I clean her up and cuddle her as I fall asleep. I'm woken up by her wiggling in my arms I tighten my grip.

Her: I need to pee let go.

She whispered.

Me: okay let me carry you.

Her: no I'm fine.

Me: uhmm..

I untangle myself from her I feel her move out next thing I hear her fall I bust out laughing I open my eye and look at her she's so cute.

Me: can I carry you to the toilet now?

She just looks at me annoyed I laugh at her again and get out of the bed and carry her to the toilet I put her on the seat and watch her pee she flinches shame man. When she's done I go to wipe her and carry her back to bed.

Her: I want to bath I don't want to go back to bed.

Me: no I want cuddles we will bath later.

Her: Hai Max what is your problem?

Me: do you want to walk yourself back to the bathroom and bath?

She pouts she's very cute I just kiss her pouted lips we cuddle for a while then I go to make us something to eat then later bath in her oils and

salts they actually smell nice but now I smell like flowers. Now we chilling watching TV.

Me: how are you feeling now?

Her: No sex for you till further notice.

Me: you wouldn't dare.

Her: watch me.

Me: Lilly you cant do that.

Her: uhmm...

I go silent for a while.

Me: Lilly?

Her: Max

Me: you playing right?

Her: no I'm not.

Me: mxm... I know you playing.

Her: uhmmm...

She wouldn't do that right? I mean she also gets horny from time to time right?. You know what I'm not going to stress myself about Lilly.

It's now February and valentine's day is coming I don't even know what people do with this day I've never celebrated it but I have restaurants I'm sure I can make a plan I've seen some men book dinner dates and all those things I'll ask one of my managers to organize something nice. Everything between Lilly and I are good and business is doing well everything is just well I don't have any complaints so far.

I'm currently sitting across from her I booked the rooftop at the restaurant for this valentine's day thing she looks beautiful with her white slit dress she actually loves white dresses and slits and honestly she has beautiful legs so I'm not even complaining but I do get a bit jealous when men look at her.

Me: why do you look nervous? Don't you like this?

She's been making her weird faces since we started eating and moving uncomfortably on her chair.

Her: uhmm... it's nothing I love this stop worrying.

Me: Lilly you don't look comfortable we can leave if you want we don't have to stay here any longer.

She gulps her wine glass and refills it and gulps it again okay now I see that something is really going on here.

Me: Lilly?

She stands up and takes my hand.

Her: let's go home.

Me: oh...okay are you sure you okay?

Her: yes Max let's go now please.

I just stand and she pulls me by my hand to the car we now driving back home and she's been silent looking out the window maybe I should just wait for her to open up I know better than to push her. I pull up in the drive way and walk out to open the door for her when we get to the door she stops me I look down at her.

Her: can I blind fold you?

I raise my eyebrow okay what's going on?

Me: why?

Her: please it's a surprise.

Me: okay...why do I have a feeling that you going to kill me.

Her: if I wanted to kill you, you would be dead by now and you know that so relax you not dying today.

She ties a black cloth across my eyes. She then opens the door she takes my hand and walks in slowly I honestly don't know what is going to happen to me I don't even know how I agreed to this nonsense.

Her: we about to go up the stairs so walk slowly so that you don't trip.

Me: okay.

We walk up slowly eventually we at the top she keeps walking holding my hand as she is leading me eventually we stop.

Me: okay what now?

Her: shhhhh...don't take off the blind fold I will do that myself.

Me: okay.

She starts to take off my clothes.

Me: why are you stripping me?

Her: shhhhh...

Me: don't shhhhh me are you going to rape me?

Her: maybe would you just shut up.

She takes off my pants now I'm left with my boxers she takes my hand again and starts walking she stops me and turns me around and move me to the left.

Her: okay sit down there is a chair behind you.

I do as she says I can hear her move around she's now behind me and she takes my hand I feel her hand cuff me.

Me: Lilly what....

Her: sshhhhhh...

Me: but Li...

Her: shhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh....

Me: mxm.

Next thing she's busy fiddling around then I hear music playing through the speakers not too loud not too soft Sevdaliza- Human is playing she takes off the blind fold and we in our bedroom the light looks red and dim I see a pole in the middle just a few feet away from me. What is going on?

Me: Lilly...

She whispers in my ear.

Her: relax now enjoy the show.

She then walks in front of me my jaw drops immediately she wearing one of those kinky lingerie with strings going on her body looks amazing. She holds the pole and walks around it slowly she turns to look at me her boobs look amazing in that lace the first beat drops and her legs go up spreading with her waist twisting around the pole my jaw drops even further to the floor she moves to every beat and instrument smoothly the way she's working that pole she looks like a snake wrapped around it every time the base comes through she does an exotic move and it feels like the room just vibrates with her.

There's a moment when she looked like she's falling and her face stopped inches from the floor and the pole between her thighs I jumped on my chair but these handcuffs held me back I know she is very flexible but I've never in my entire life seen her beautiful legs move like that. The way I'm so horny my body is even shaking I feel like crying right now I would be already fucking her but these handcuffs are frustrating me. She's driving me crazy I've been to so many strip clubs and seen a lot of woman strip but non of them where like this. When she's done she walks slowly to me now Beyoncé- Rocket is playing she leans close to my face and gently pushes my jaw back up I swallow my spit my throat is even dry and she starts giving me a lap dance slowly her ass keeps pushing on my ready to pop dick her soft hands keep touching me and sending shivers down my spine when she's done she goes on her knees and pulls out my dick its dripping wet with pree cum she starts to stroke it gently while looking at me I feel my sweat on my forehead run down I've never been in such a position before where a woman has me at her

mercy like this I swear if she asked me for anything I would just agree to whatever. She drops her head and start to lick my dick fuck she's teasing me I keep wiggling trying to get out of these handcuffs next thing I feel her deep throat me in throw my head back groaning I haven't had a blowjob in a while and this is the first time she gives me she starts sucking and squeezing my balls gently and a hand job I can't take it anymore I'm really trying to hold it in but she flips her tongue and twisting while deep throating me I just bust in her mouth groaning out loud as my body shakes fuck I didn't even last 5minutes I catch my breath and look down at her and she has a smirk on her face I wonder who taught her all these things.

Me: get me out of these handcuffs.

Her: no

She says as she standing up.

Me: Lilly...

Her: Not yet my love.

She then puts her leg on my thigh. She's standing between my legs with one leg and her beautiful shaved minky is looking right at me now I'm just drooling she grabs my head pulls me closer.

Her: eat up

She didn't have to ask me twice I just drowned my face in her wet minky. I kept sucking until I felt that she is close to cuming she pulled my head back and started to play with herself fuck this is so much torture how can she do that right in front of me I try to go back it but she just pushes my head back while rubbing her clit she then moans out my name loudly and squirts right on my face I just close my eyes and wait for her to finish when she's done she drops her leg on the side and moves the other one to my other side now she's sitting on top of me looking at me I look at her with so much lust I just want to be inside her. She starts to kiss me softly biting my lips I wiggle in these handcuffs because I want to hold her. She moves from my lips to my neck she keeps licking and sucking it my head feels dizzy I feel her take my dick and push it

inside her minky slowly I groan as I feel her warmth I look down and see as her minky swallow me I thought she's going to stop half way but no she takes it all in as she moans this turns me on even more I look back at her she doesn't take her eyes from mine God what did I do to deserve such a woman. She starts to move her waist slowly trying to adjust to my size she then starts to move a little faster her boobs on my face move with her rhythm. I want to hold her but fuck the way she's riding me it's just sending me to cloud 9 I've never had a girl ride me usually I'm the one in control and doing the fucking but clearly that's not going to happen today. She starts to move in circles and moaning out my name I feel goosebumps everywhere I don't know what she's doing to me I've never experienced it before but I don't want her to stop.

Me: Marry me Lilly

I say as I groan out I feel my build up she's also close she just starts jumping up and down fast fuck fuck fuck this girl is killing me before I know it we

release together. This right here is the best sex I've ever had in my entire life we breath out as she has her head on my shoulder I feel her take off the handcuffs my joints feel weak I just wrap my arms around her and hold her I'm still inside her but she drained so much of my energy in two months I'll be married to her I don't care who says what.

I'm staring at this sleeping beauty next to me trying to figure out what exactly happened last night because I couldn't even go for second round all I did was hold on to her for dear life the whole night. I just don't understand how can a small tiny person like her have so much power over me here I was trying to give her the best valentine's day experience and yet I'm the one who got surprised. I decide to get out of bed my knees still feel weird I turn to look at her again I really cant believe what she did to me. I order breakfast for her and go shower when I'm done she's still sleeping her breakfast arrives I plate it put it on a tray and go put it on the side board and walk out. I drive straight to my fathers house well home I arrive and park my car I can see his still home I walk in

the house I find everyone eating breakfast even my brother and his bimbo wife are here she smiles widely when she sees me I just keep my serious face my mom jumps up to hug me I just stand there and pat her back twice she let's go of me and pulls me to the table she organizes a plate for me I greet everyone my sisters are just glued on their phones.

Michael(brother) : what do we owe the pleasure of having breakfast with you today?

Mom: Hai Michael leave my son alone I haven't seen him since that day at the hospital I thought I was loosing you.

She says looking at me funny enough because they only came once and that's it.

Me: I'm actually here to see you dad there's something important I wanted to ask you.

He looks at me I honestly don't understand this man if I didn't look like him I would really question my paternity.

Dad: let's go to my office.

Me: no it's not that deep I just wanted to tell you that there is someone I want to marry so can you gather the uncles to come help me pay lobola for her.

My brothers wife chokes on her food I just look at her.

Mom: don't tell me you talking about that cheap skank I found at the hospital.

I frown looking at her she swallows her spit.

Me: I'll pretend that you didn't call her names for the sake of peace. So dad tell me can we do what I requested as soon as possible?

Dad: Nkanyezi tell me here why would you go get a poor girl who brings nothing to the table and want to marry her? Why do you always insist on embarrassing this family?

I just raised my eyebrow looking at him he clearly doesn't know Lilly's family they can buy this family and still not feel their bank balance shake. I think I'm going to enjoy this because he has a few

businesses with Godfather actually Godfather owns some shares in some of his companies.

Me: dad if you don't want to do this just tell me now so that I can call uncle Joe to do it for me.

Well uncle Joe is our drunkard uncle his older brother they live in KZN my dad hates them since he calls them poor and I love him.

Dad: fine Nkanyezi you don't have to call him I'll do it.

Mom: my husband please you can not agree to this.

Me: I want to be married by the end of March so please move fast.

Mom: what is the rush? She's just a gold digger so she must wait!

Me: ma this is the last time I warn you about calling her names especially in my presence if I hear you again I will forget that you gave birth to me.

Everyone is just silent now I stand up and go back to my Lilly I miss her.

LILLY

It's now the first week of March Owami has summoned me home this weekend and it sounded serious I wonder what's wrong I just hope everyone is okay. I'm sitting in the jet I left Max sulking ever since valentine's day his been clinging on me like a bubblegum on a hot day I hardly ever drive his my chauffer now sometimes its annoying as fuck I know very well that his going to follow me to Cape town. I arrive home and all my siblings are not around Owami says they at the house they stay in since they at school so its quiet. I'm chilling in my room busy finishing off my assignment I'm happy that this year we go for our work integrated learning for the last 6 months of the year I know I'll be going to H Accounting since they gave me a bursary I don't mind but now it's called Numbers because it was bought by someone anonymous anyway Owami just text me to come down for dinner so I'm heading down the moment I get there I see my dad and Baba already sitting I go kiss them both and sit down Owami comes and settles next to my dad I'm sitting next to Baba. We now eating in silence well this never happens

unless something serious is really going on so I just stay quiet and eat my food Owami keeps looking at me and making her weird faces I just ignore her. After dessert I stand to clean up the table when I'm done my dad calls me to the lounge I find them sitting waiting for me I just sit on the single chair.

Dad: Nthombenhle are you pregnant?

What??

Me: huh?

I say looking at my stomach confused and back at him.

Dad: you know I don't like repeating myself.

Me: eh... okay I'm not pregnant, daddy where is this coming from?

Baba: Nthombi ka Baba don't mind your stupid father. Last week we received a letter from the Ngidi family asking for your hand in marriage.

Me: who is the Ngidi family? And who's hand are you talking about?

Owami: Entle Max send us a letter to pay lobola for you. He didn't tell you about this?

I then remember he asked me to marry him when we were having sex on valentine's day I smile thinking about how submissive he looked.

Owami: Entle stop day dreaming and tell us did he propose or something?

Me: uhm... he kind of did propose.

Dad: what is kind of propose Nthombenhle?

Baba: Hai shut up khumkani you didn't even propose to Nkosazana here.

Owami and I giggle she did tell us how she rejected dad when they asked to pay for her lobola.

Dad: why do you have to bring that up?

Baba: because you forward at least he asked unlike you.

Dad: mxm.

We laugh at him

Owami: Entle so do you want to marry Max?

Do I? I don't know.

Me: uhmmm... can I give you an answer before I leave on Sunday.

Dad: you can just say no baby you don't have to marry him.

Owami: would you shut up Khumalo. It's okay Entle we will hear from you.

We chill till late talking nonsense when I get to bed I call Max he was mad that I took so long to talk to him I just rolled my eyes.

Me: why didn't you tell me that you send a letter to my family?

Him: oh.... They got it already great!

Me: no not great Max.

Him: how is it not great? I asked you to marry me Lilly.

Me: and I didn't say yes plus we were having sex.

Him: and you didn't say no so what if we were having sex it doesn't make any difference.

Me: you were pussy whipped Max!

He busts out laughing I join him I just cant resist his laugh.

Me: I'm serious Max you would've agreed to anything I said at that moment.

Him: Lilly I know what I was saying okay you giving me the bomb sex has nothing to do with you marrying me.

Me: was my pussy that good?

Him: you have no idea Lilly that's why I need to put you on lock down.

I laugh at him.

Him: on a serious note though I'm serious about spending the rest of my life with you please be my wife Lilly.

I keep quiet I love him honestly I don't see life without him his my everything I suddenly get overwhelmed in a good way though my tears come out. I sniff

Him: Lilly please don't cry you hurting me.

I giggle his cute.

Me: I'll marry you Max.

Him: really??

Me: yes really.

Him: struu??

I laugh.

Me: goodnight Max.

Him: no don't hang up I want hear you snore and fart.

Me: I don't do that.

Him: sleep Lilly.

Me:mxm

Eventually I sleep still on the phone with Max. I'm woken up by someone singing its Max on the phone I groan and push the phone on the floor.

Him: Lilly! Lilly!

Me: Voetsek man Max!

Him: I would like to hear you say that in my face.

I just groan and put the pillow over my head.

Him: Lilly! Lilly! Lilly!

I get out of bed and take the phone.

Me: what is it Max?

I ask calmly I'm so annoyed right now. He was about to say something then I just hang up I went to shower and clean up my room after I went to the kitchen I'm hungry Max kept blowing up my phone so I just left it in my room. I found Owami eating cereal on the counter so I join her and start eating.

Me: I'm getting married.

She looks at me.

Her: to big dick Max?

I choke on my food and cough I see Nobuhle giggling next to her.

Me: Ma please don't call him that. By the way Hlehle is next to you.

Her: oh... hey baby

I smile Hlehle greets her back.

Owami: tell me how did he propose?

I just look at her I cant tell her that I was ridding his dick.

Hlele: uhmmm... tell her that you had him in handcuffs.

I choke on my food again.

Me: Hlehle you cant watch us have sex what's wrong with you?

Hlehle: I wasn't watching I could hear his scream from the spiritual world.

Owami: I'm lost please tell me what's going on.

I look at her.

Hlehle: dick rider

She whispers giggling. I throw the dish clothe at her it just goes through her and lands on the floor.

Me: leave Hlehle.

Owami: Hai Entle this is my house you cant chase my baby out.

Hlehle sticks her tongue out I just roll my eyes.

Owami: Nthombenhle tell me man I'm waiting.

Me: we were having sex okay!.

Her: your pussy is that good??

She asks shocked Hlehle busts out laughing.

Hlehle: tell her about the handcuffs.

Me: would you just shut up.

Owami: what did she say?

Me: nothing.

Next I see handcuffs fly on the counter in front of us where did she even find them?.

Me: why are you haunting us?

My mom takes the handcuffs and looks at them confused she then looks at me and back at them then at me shocked.

Hlehle: ding ding ding.. Now the lights are on

Owami: you kinky Nthombenhle??

I just giggle.

Owami: how did you even use them?

Me: I tied him on a chair.

Owami: details Nthombenhle!

Why is she so excited?.

Me: Ma please I cant tell you about my sex life.

Owami: Hai Entle I gave you that body so technically it's my pussy that is lit lit.

Me: Gosh Owami you didn't have to say that.

Owami: then talk!

Me: I installed a stripping pole in his room and took some classes so on valentine's day I planned the whole thing from the pole dancing to the lap dancing then ride him on the chair.

I give her details by the time I'm done her jaw is on the floor with her eyes popping out.

Me: try it on daddy he will give you anything you'll see.

Owami: I can't believe you giving me sex tips you are aware that you my last born right.

Me: you insisted that I tell you so you can't complain.

Hlehle has been sitting on the counter swinging her legs just laughing at us.

Owami: I'm just wow you really kinky Entle I will never see you the same.

Me: ahhh

I say shrugging my shoulders. Hlehle giggles.

Hlehle: dick rider!

Me: mxm tekoloshi!

Owami: Voetsek Nthombenhle don't call my daughter that

Owami smacks my hand as she says this I just laugh out loud we chill together talking and laughing this is nice I really wish Hlehle was alive I would've loved having her around and doing things together. Eventually I head back to Johannesburg im so happy and content with how my life is going I know getting married at a young age is a bit scary but thanks to Owami and Hlehle my fears are gone. Owami gifted me with the Numbers company apparently I'm the anonymous owner I don't care how she pulled it off but I'm grateful now I'm going to keep Amu as the CEO of my company I can not wait to see his stupid face now that I'm in my happy place watching him suffer and being embarrassed is going to be so

much fun. I find Max already waiting for me here comes my chuppies I run to him and throw myself into his arms he picks me up and I wrap my legs around him I've missed him so much now I'm the clingy one, he tries to put me down but I just tighten my grip around him he just starts walking to one of the guards and gets in the back seat he drives us home I'm woken up by him fiddling I realize we still in the same position in the car.

Him: I'm sorry I woke you up we home now.

Me: okay.

He gets out the car and walks in the house and heads upstairs to our bedroom.

Him: let me take of my clothes then we can cuddle.

Me: okay

He puts me gently on the bed and starts to undress Gosh Max is just sexy honestly how his muscle always move with him plus the tattoos just makes look extra he has this bad boy sexy look with him.

Him: stop raping me with your eyes

I just blush he comes and takes off my clothes and pulls me on top of him I lay my head on his chest.

Him: sing for me.

He says softly he likes asking me this at first I found it very weird but now its become our thing whenever we cuddling in silence or when he comes home from a long at work he would just cling on me and ask me to sing for him. I start to sing No Pressure by Mahalia followed by Sure Thing by Miguel he just keeps running his fingers on back sending shivers down my spine and goosebumps all over my body. My level of intimacy with Max sometimes scares me how we connected to each other is just amazing and weird we able to think the same thing and have the same feeling about a lot of things we even mirror each other's emotions when one is sad and down it also affects the other even when I'm at school and his having a bad day I just start to feel uneasy and I know its him and when his angry my heart rate just keeps going on and on and the only way it cools down is when he cools down. I also have the same effect on

him which is why he hates seeing me cry or in pain and whenever we this close our hearts beat as one at first I thought I was just imagining things but I started to pay attention to it and realized that it actually beats at the same pace as his maybe that's why we both know when the other is not okay.

Me: Max

Him: uhmmm...

His chest vibrates whenever he makes such sounds or when he laughs.

Me: there's something I want to tell you before we get married.

Him: I'm listening.

Me: uhm... I'm Medusa.

Him: I know.

Huh?? I sit up straight with my legs on his sides and my hands on his abs his are on my thighs I look at him for a while he really does know.

Me: how?

Him: I put the dots together remember you do my accounts so I know how you move my money obviously so when I made you the leader of my gang and you started making your changes and how you started their businesses and created funds for them it was too familiar to your work as Medusa you have a signature that you leave behind so I put the dots together and figured it out I was just waiting for you to tell me when you ready.

Me: I don't know what to say.

Him: well at first I was surprised that you didn't depend on your parents legacy you making a name for yourself without standing in their shadow even though you started just like your mother but I like that you not using them to climb up the ladder I even tried to track you down just to see if you being careful and honestly I'm impressed you clean it's like you don't exist like there is Medusa and we all know that she's there but you not there at the same time I looked at the other gangs you work with just to see if you left your signature

move like you did with mine and it was a different signature all together I'm very proud of you Lilly.

I blushed looking down he chuckled.

Me: so you don't have a problem with me being Medusa and my work?

Him: not at all you behind the computer and no one knows you so you don't have to keep looking over your shoulder all the time but im more worried about how other Mafias want you for their personal greed but like I said you clean so nothing traces back to you or anyone in this continent just keep it like that then we good and if you happen to come out in the light we will deal with it together.

I feel my tears come out I'm happy he doesn't want to tame me or hold me back my independence and making myself known is really important to me I thought he was going to have a problem with me being in the underworld.

Him: come here.

I go down into his arms.

Him: I would never dim your light Lilly plus having you as boss really turns me on so I can never deprive myself of such.

I laugh.

Me: why would you turn such a beautiful moment into your fantasy?

Him: my fantasy is a beautiful moment please don't ruin it for me.

We were interrupted by Owami calling me apparently the Ngidi family want to pay lobola this coming weekend so everything will be done at KZN.

Me: why are the lobola negotiations have to be done so fast?

Him: because by May I want you to be Mrs. Ngidi.

Me: Hai ... Max what is the rush we have all the time to get it done.

Him: and why can we not get it done now?

Me: well.... There is no reason but don't you think we should be engaged for a little?

Him: no I want you to be my wife you can enjoy being engaged this week.

Me:....

I just look at him his actually serious if I didn't love him as much I do I would have said no. Looks like I'll be a Ngidi bride sooner then I thought.

MAX

We currently in KZN tomorrow we playing lobola for Lilly I'm very excited my parents are just annoyed as fuck. We at my dads home he actually fixed the house it's big and beautiful my uncle Joe and my dads two sisters which are my aunts live here with their children none of them have even been married but they all have children.

Joe: mfana I hope your wife is not like your brothers wife here and your mother.

This is why I love uncle Joe he always tells it like it is.

Dad: he bought us a white girl I wonder what village she comes from because you can tell she is adopted I'm sure.

A Lindi: Hai Nkanyezi how will she do her makoti duties?

I actually wonder if Lilly can even start a fire but I don't care because my mom cant even lift a finger for a woman who comes from a village she's just lazy.

Joe: she's not coming here to make fire for you Lindi you should be married by now but you here with your three kids who run around with old men.

Aunt Lindi clicks her tongue and walks away followed by aunt Joyce because they both know when Joe starts talking about them not being married and having kids with multiple baby daddies he will not stop but he has 5 baby mamas and he has 6 kids they all live with the baby mammas.

Dad: why are you not married.

Joe: I would be married to all my baby mamas I love them but I'm poor so I'll just love them from afar.

Me: all five of them?

Joe: yes all five of them its just they like too much money man.

We talk all night with him telling us his stories about his baby mamas his hilarious him and Lilly are the only people who know how to make me laugh, we later to go bed this is going to be a long week after the lobola negotiations during the week she has to prepare for membezo and our small wedding after we going to stay for a week but at least she will be on recess by then when school opens we head back to joburg as Mr. & Mrs. Ngidi. I woke up at 3am prepared for going to the Khumalo household when I got down stairs all my uncles were there I greet them and settle down.

Uncle David: Nkanyezi how much are you willing to pay for her?

Dad: I think R50 000 should be enough.

I look at this man and shake my head.

Me: whatever they want give it to them do not argue or negotiate.

Dad: Nkanyezi you not going to waste money on a girl who is not even educated I'm sure she was not a virgin and she didn't finish high school.

His starting to piss me off.

Me: you shouldn't be worried it's my money after all uncle Joe just please do as I say I found her sealed.

He just nods his head I don't care that Lilly was not a virgin when I found her she's mine now so they must just get with the memo. Eventually we all leave I'm the one driving since Lilly send me the address and I'll be staying in the car until everything is finished. As I'm driving it looks like we in some village it's not too rural though I keep driving we finally make it it's still very dark it's around 4am I can see a big house it's not hard to miss it since it's the only huge house here it has

small houses around it about 10 this place is huge and beautiful.

Dad: are sure we at the right place?

Me: yes

Joe: who exactly are you marry because it seems like she's very rich more than your father even.

I just chuckle and give him a stack of money he will need to open the gate. They all go out and start shouting clan names I just start chatting with my Lilly I miss her she tells me they awake and her father is drinking coffee while watching TV I knew his going to enjoy this but it's cool. They keep going on and on it's now 7am and the sun is shining eventually we see her brothers come to the gate looking like bouncers Joe gives them the money they want more so I give them and they enter I just stay outside. Later I see uncle Joe coming out looking pissed I just roll my window he stands next to me.

Joe: these men are crazy they want 2 million so much money.

I just chuckle I knew Terminator will pull such a stunt I just give him another bag full of money.

Me: the first bag I gave you has 1 million in it this one has another 1 million just give it to them.

His jaw drops.

Joe: Hai... Nkanyezi so much money are you sure?

Me: yes just give them.

Joe: Hai... okay

He takes it and goes back in after a while I hear singing I just smile because I know it means all is done her brother comes to call me I walk in honestly this place is like a palace its beautiful I walk in side I find the men happy except my dad he just looks pale I see Terminator and I wink at him he gives me a middle finger Godfather smacks the back of his head I just chuckle and shake my head and sit later we go sit outside and the food starts coming out I see my Lilly in her traditional attire coming to us with a bowl of water she comes to me first I look at her and smirk she looks sexy and beautiful I wash my hands and she moves on

to the other men when she's done she serves us with her food ever since I got here my dad has not said a word uncle Joe just keeps entertaining everyone with his stories honestly it was a beautiful day we did tell them that they only have this week to prepare because this coming weekend I'm marrying Lilly Terminator was annoyed by me and I don't care.

Godfather: Max you didn't tell me Ngidi is your father.

Me: I thought you knew.

Him: no I only know your brother Michael.

I just shrug my shoulders.

Terminator: Baba how do you know his father.

Godfather: I own a some shares in some of his businesses.

Terminator: oh...okay is he always this quiet.

Godfather: no I'm actually surprised.

Joe: that because he thought your daughter is a poor uneducated person who was not even a virgin.

Both their faces change and they look at my dad who looks like his about to shit himself I just drink my whiskey and stand to go look for my Lilly I bump into one of her sisters and she drags me into some bedroom I find my Lilly sitting on the bed I go join her.

Me: hi

He: hi

Me: how are you?

She shrugs her shoulders I know she is worried about me rushing things. I get up and kneel in front of her she looks down at me I hold both her hands.

Me: you do know that if you don't want us to get married this weekend we can postpone it to whenever you like.

Her: I'm just scared that's it.

Me: it's okay to be scared Lilly but I'm not going anywhere I'm never letting you go I love you. If you

feel like I'm putting pressure on you talk to me remember we a team now.

Her: okay please don't postpone I think it's just sinking in that I'm somebody's wife.

Me: don't over think it it changes nothing between us it's just that now you can boss me around a little and I can have endless pussy.

She giggles and hits my shoulder I get up and lay on the bed and pull her on top of me we just stay in silence. The whole week was very busy for me I've been organizing this wedding I hope Lilly likes it I got help from her siblings and Juice his been here this whole week the rest of the gang is coming on Friday. My father has been a grumpy man ever since the lobola negotiations his been avoiding me and honestly I don't care my current problem is Tumi my brothers wife she's been trying to get my attention and trying to seduce me honestly I'm 5 to popping her head Lilly will kill me if she finds her anywhere close to me. Today is my wedding day I'm very excited I really miss my woman I just cant wait for this day to end I just want her in my

arms our wedding colors are white and yellow I bought her a a big square clean cut diamond ring which is accompanied with a thin diamond wedding band we will also have a ring exchange ceremony she said she wants to buy me a ring so I don't know what kind of ring she bought for me. All the men are dressed in Zulu attire we sitting in a tent waiting for Lilly and her family to come when suddenly we hear them singing at the gate the men hear and go join them as they have a singing battle. Eventually they let them in and my aunts take Lilly to go change in her traditional Zulu attire I'm waiting with my men we still chilling talking and listening to Juice telling me how he loves the Khumalo twins, I'm disturbed when I hear Lilly's voice sing I know that beautiful voice anywhere it calms my soul I stand up and look around I can see a crowd coming its them but I can't see my Lilly I keep looking and eventually I see her dancing and leading the song I smile with bride truth is Lilly is a pure Zulu girl even though she grew up in modern times but she still knows her roots very well. She looks beautiful in her

white and yellow attire I can see her sisters and cousins are the ones accompanying her I start to walk towards her with my men. Biggie starts to sing and we follow his lead next thing I'm dancing I haven't done this in a while I didn't know I still had it in me the females go crazy eventually I get to her and stab the spire on the grass she then pulls it with one hand the woman start to sing then my beautiful Lilly decide to correct my dancing her small waist moves beautifully with her legs and hands. We just had our ring exchange and signed our marriage certificate she bought me a simple charcoal ring but when I move around you can see small crystals I think its diamonds on it I love it its exactly something I would've went for. Her welcome ceremony went well uncle Joe named her Siphosihle Ngidi she is definitely a beautiful gift. The rest of the night we partied and danced and drank it was nice even my dad and brother were enjoying themselves.

We've been at my home in KZN for two days now and I'm impressed at how she takes very task that my aunts throw at her my wife is not a snob she

still has her long nails but she gets things done perfectly I wake up and Lilly is not next to me as usual I hate this I'm so used to waking up tangled to her I'm sure she is making breakfast for everyone it's like they forget that she's not the only makoti in this house but Lilly told me to stay out of it. Anyway I walk out the shower with a towel wrapped around my waist I find Tumi laying on my bed in her lingerie I swear this one is really testing my patience I was about to say something when Lilly walks in the room she freezes at the door and looks at Tumi who has a stupid smile on her face and she looks at me for a while she finds the answer she was looking for she closes the door and locks it she puts the key in her pocket she comes to me I bend down and kiss her lips.

Her: I came to tell you breakfast is ready.

Me: okay let me get dressed.

Her: what's her problem?

She asks pointing at Tumi who looks very confused she doesn't know she is about to get fucked up.

Me: I don't know when I walked out the shower I found her laying on our bed looking at me your husband like a piece of meat imagine my love.

I say sounding very dramatic Lilly giggles.

Her: can I take care of her?

Me: please I'm 5 to killing her.

I walk to the walk in closet I see Lilly has hung up the clothes I should wear today as I lotion myself I hear slaps and screams it goes on for about 5 minutes then she walks in and takes my belt and walks out this I want to see I quickly wear my shirt and go out I find her working the belt on her her strokes look painful her lingerie is even torn she looks so mad I was about to stop her then she went to the door to unlock she then dragged her out with her hair shame man that was a bit sad. She comes back and she puts my belt around me and takes my hand we go downstairs we settle down and she starts to dish up for me my brother and Tumi are not here. Next thing Michael comes down fuming his looking at Lilly with red eyes.

Michael: you stupid bit....

He didn't finish that sentence I just pulled out my gun and shot his shoulder everyone on the table jumped in fear except Lilly who is just eating her food like nothing is happening.

Me: Michael I'm not your mate I will forget you my little brother I will put a bullet between your eyes don't fuck with me.

Dad: Nkanyezi what is wrong with you.

I ignore him and sit down and start to eat my food my mom goes to attend him everyone lost their appetite I guess.

LILLY

Well after that show in the morning we now sitting in the dining table because uncle Joe called a meeting about it I'm sitting across Tumi who has red marks on her face and probably all over her body I'm just looking at her and she's looking everywhere but me as for Michael he has his red eyes on me mxm pussy.

Uncle Joe: Nkanyezi please tell me why did you shoot your brother like that.

Max: because he wanted to disrespect my wife.

Michael: look at what your stupid wife did to my wife!

I feel Max getting angry and my heart rate is slowly increasing I put my hand on his thigh.

Uncle Joe: Hai Michael that is no way to talk to your brother or about his wife or do you want to die?

He goes silent.

Uncle Joe: good now Siphosihle tell me what happened between you and Tumi.

Me: with all due respect Uncle Joe can we please let Tumi explain herself.

Uncle Joe: Tumi we are listening.

Tumi starts to move uncomfortably flinching and she starts to cry.

Uncle Joe: Tumi I do not have all day.

Michael: she hit her look at my wife she has these marks all over her body.

Me: did she tell you why I hit her?

Michael: you not even denying it!

Why is he shouting?

Me: and why would I deny it?

Max Dad: just tell us what happened man!

He bangs the table.

Me: Tumi are going to talk or should I repeat it again?

She shakes her head fast.

Tumi: I was in their room this morning.

Michael looks at her waiting for her to continue.

Max: and why were you in our room?

Tum: uhmmm... I I... I...

Uncle Joe: you what man!

Max: she was there half naked on my bed trying to seduce me and Lilly walked in so you can use your imagination of what happened.

Michael: you lying she would never do that!

Uncle Joe: Tumi is Max right?

She slowly nods her head.

Max dad: Jesus Tumi. Sphehlehle I'm sure there was a better way to deal with than hit her like this.

Me: if it was up to me I would have done far worse this is nothing.

Max dad: and you Nkanyezi you let your wife act like a straat mate here?.

Max: don't ever call her that I'm warning you. If I didn't let Lilly deal with her I would have killed her without thinking twice you should actually thank her.

Uncle Joe: Lilly you did well my daughter this is how you deal with girls who do not know how to behave.

Michael has been looking at Tumi with so much disgust.

Max dad: Joe why would you even say something like this?

Uncle Joe: this is how you deal with a hoe believe me she doesn't understand talking from now on she will behave accordingly you'll see.

Eventually the meeting ended. We are now back in Johannesburg and nothing has changed it's just I have a huge ring on my finger and its heavy and Max said I should never take it off and honestly I have no intentions of taking it off I love that I belong to him and how people look at my hand I've been going to school and running my club I just check on the Numbers company and everything is also good. It's now the first week of June and I've been busy with my exams I told Max about the Numbers company his not exactly thrilled about me working close with Amu but he'll live. Today the guard is driving me Max has been working too much for my liking he did tell me that his trying to fix a problem with the Hawks since I killed Bongs they have been giving him a problem I want to help him but it's best I wait for him to ask me because I know how his ego can get. I'm heading to juicys place there is some documents I have to take from him I'm helping him with his business I'm just checking that his doing it correctly I get to his house he lives in Soweto his really a kasi guy I go knock and I wait for a while the door opens my

eyes meet Ulwazi in his t shirt I just raise my eyebrow looking at her. I'm honestly not going to ask anything she let's me in I find Juicy with his arms around a half naked Nolwazi okay now I'm super confused I just keep moving my eyes amongst them. They both have their alien blue eyes on me as if I'm going to say something we stare at each other until juicy decides to get what I came for I just sit there and looking at these two daddy is so going to kill them I'm sure he knows that they here. Eventually Juicy gives me the documents as I was about to leave.

Juicy: I'm taking you out for dinner look fancy.

Me: uhmmm... I'll be ready by 7PM

Juicy: sharp sharp Bozza

He hugs me and I walk out what are my alien sisters doing with Juicy?? I hope he tells me what is really going on because as far as I know those two are in Cape town at school so I'm ready for gossip. When I get home Max is not there I immediately prepare something to eat for him since I will be out with Juicy for dinner then I start

going through his paper work so far his doing well I don't know why he wants me to check it his a fast learner his done everything exactly how I taught him. It's now 5PM I go prepare myself when I'm done with hygiene process I decide to wear a white open back dress it's very tight it's over my knees and has a low v line cut on my boobs they look sexy I tie my hair in a high ponytail and put on my maroon lipstick Max walks in and freeze on the door looking at me with his jaw on the floor I put on my mascara he comes to stand behind me looking at me through the mirror.

Him: is there a date night I forgot about?

Me: no

I say as I walk away a take my nude pointy red bottom heels his busy following me around I just give him the shoes and sit on the bed lift my feet and wait for him to put them on.

Him: so where are you going?

Me: out for dinner.

Him: looking like that??

Me: is there something wrong with how I look?

Him: no let me go freshen up and we can go.

Me: who said you coming with me?

He looks at me like I just insulted him.

Him: Lilly don't test me you not leaving this house alone looking this beautiful what do think other men will do? Unless you want me to go on a killing spree.

Me: will you just calm down your titts I'm just going out with Juicy.

Him: and you dressed like that for Juicy ?

Me: what is wrong with my dress?

Him: its sexy I want to tear it and fuck you on the wall.

I feel my clit twitch.

Me: why do you have to make everything sexual?

Him: have you seen yourself?

Me: will you just put on my shoes Juicy will be here anytime.

Him: why can't I tag along?

Me: because I want to get some gossip.

Him: mxm I always told juice his gay.

He says putting on my shoes when his done he pulls up into his arms I feel all sorts of butterflies all over my body.

Me: I love you Mr. Ngidi.

Him: I love you more Mrs. Ngidi.

Eventually Juicy arrives to come pick me up his dressed in a nice suit I'm impressed.

Max: juice if anything happens to her I will kill you.

Juicy: I know.

Max: where are you even going? You can not be taking my wife out when are getting a boyfriend Juice?

Me: Juicy can we please just go.

I go kiss Max and hook my arm on Juicy and we walk out. We arrive at this fancy restaurant it's very beautiful and has this soft atmosphere going on I think am going to eat here more often they

show us our table we settle down and order our food he ordered a bottle of wine this will be the first time I see him drink wine he usually drinks beer and that's it we busy having a nice conversation and laughing.

Me: so you going to tell me what's going on with you and my sisters?

Him: I love them.

He looks at me with a serious face I look into his eyes and he really means it.

Me: both of them?

Him: yes I know it's weird and shit but I love them both at first I thought I was just being crazy or maybe it was infatuation but as time went on I grew fond of them I don't know how it happened and when it happened but before I knew it I was dating both of them.

Me: when did this even start yall are so sneaky.

Him: it started on your birthday party at the club when you were busy juggling everything you

didn't really pay attention to your surroundings and that was when I grew close to them.

Me: have ever tried to choose one maybe or something?

Him: I can't choose one of them I know it sounds selfish but truth is I can never separate them they nothing without each other and you know this they literally one person stuck in two bodies they can not function without each other and their bond is beautiful and sometimes very weird but I love them just as they are I don't want to break their bond by separating them it will only do more harm than anything and they both in love with me just as much as I love them I actually want to marry them soon.

I feel my tears coming out I know what he means Ulwazi and Nolwazi are one person yes they maybe have their differences here and there but they our Khumalo twins even though they sextuplets but we've always seen them as twins I'm just happy that they found someone who really understands them a part of me has always been

worried they might have a huge problem if one of them finds love but if they both found it in Juicy who loves and wants them both without even trying to change them it just makes me so happy.

Him: would you stop crying or do you want Max to come kill me?

Me: I'm sorry man I'm just happy for you and my sisters.

Him: thank you I actually thought you were going to have a problem with me being with both of them.

Me: no not at all I understand your relationship and I know that you can never separate them they do everything together and I find it weird too sometimes.

Ulwazi and Nolwazi are weird as fuck because they do too many things together they both studying medicine they both want to be cardiologist and since they don't have friends their schedules are the same they even bath together their

relationship is beautiful but I don't think I want someone in my face 24/7.

Him: tell me about it I still don't understand how they do so many things together but I must say dating both of them is fun.

Me: so do yall have like threesomes?

Him: I'm not going to answer that.

Me: oh...come on Juicy don't do this to me.

Him: no I'm not telling you my sex life with my wives.

Me: please I will not ask you anything after this.

He looks at me.

Him: okay fine we do have threesomes sometimes.

I scream a little and people look at me I cover my mouth.

Me: so you really want to marry them?

Him: yea I was just waiting for your approval and now I'm going to send a letter to your dad please put in a nice word for me your father is scary.

Me: you do realize I'm their little sister you do not need my approval for being with them they both adults they know what they doing, and when it comes to my father good luck I suggest you get some tips from Max but if you get my mom on your side then you safe.

Him: you may be their little sister but to me you Bozzayam and you know how much respect I have for you.

Me: uhmmm... by the way my mom is allergic to flowers so do not even think of buying her such.

We continue to have our dinner and it was very nice until Max decided to show up saying he wants me back home because he cant sleep without me this one is just dramatic.

Its Saturday morning and Max looks like a caveman with his hair and beard all grown out ever since Max was on the wheelchair I had to learn how to cut and groom his hair ever since then he doesn't go the salon I cut his hair and I'm very good at it. His sitting on the toilet seat and im standing between his legs wearing just his shirt im

busy cutting his hair and his busy running his hands on my thighs im just ignoring him I know his always horny self wants some.

Me: if you carry on doing what you doing I will make you bold.

Him: no you wont just concentrate and don't mind me.

I look down on him he has his eyes closed I put the clippers on the basin and take his shaving kit I start to prepare it, I take the hot towel and cover his bottom face with it after a few seconds I remove it and start to shave him gently I don't want to accidentally cut him or cause him to have razor bumps but his not helping because now his playing with my clit and it's so nice I carry on shaving his neck and I feel his finger enter me I stop and close my eyes.

Him: you stop shaving me I'll also stop.

Me: Max...

Him: continue Lilly.

Why is Max like this? I continue to shave him very slowly with him fingering me I feel my build up I stop and he pulls out his fingers.

Me: Max please...

I say close to crying.

Him: I told you if you stop I stop.

Me: but that's not fair Max.

Him: Lilly finish shaving me.

All this time his eyes are closed I start to shave him again and he starts with his fingers I try concentrating on the shaving eventually I finish as soon as I'm done wiping him he grabs me and puts me on top of him he takes off my shirt and directs his dick inside me I close my eyes as my tears run down I swear his dick is heaven sent I can't even explain what I'm feeling all I know is I feel all sorts of pleasure he groans and takes my boob in his mouth he holds my ass tightly and starts to move me and I just follow his lead I throw my head back as I feel my blood rush and more tears coming out we make love until I squirt on him as he moves me

faster he then comes calling out my name I just relax in his arms he carries me into the shower and opens the water I jump as the cold water hits my back he giggles.

Him: I'm sorry just give it a moment.

The water gets warm all this time his dick is still inside me and my legs are wrapped around his waist he stands under the water I start to kiss him gently and slowly I feel him jerk inside and I deepened the kiss with my tongue in the mix he moves his hands from my waist to under my ass my legs hang on his arms I look down and see his long dick half in he starts to move me up and down his dick is poking me in a painful way.

Me: it's hurting me.

He moves to the wall and pins me there the cold tile makes me arch my back he holds my hands above my head and his hand goes around my waist tightly. He starts to thrust in softly but I want more.

Him: you good?

He asks looking into my eyes.

Me: move faster please.

He does as I say but I still want more I want the pain and the pleasure.

Me: put it all in Max.

I goes deeper and the pain shoots up I scream and he stops.

Me: please don't stop.

Him: you sure.

Me: Max just fuck me!.

He doesn't hesitate he just starts to pump me I keep moaning and screaming he let's go of my hands and holds me tightly around my waist I can't breath properly but I don't care my hands drop on his broad shoulders same as my head as I feel my build up I bite him as I my orgasm hits me hard he just carries on fucking me faster until he slams into me groaning out my name. After that we shower and we spend the day lazing around and fucking like rabbits in 4 months time I'm going to remove my implant im sure he will have fixed his problem

with the Hawks we did talk about having kids and everything and I want to surprise him with a pregnancy yes I may be very young to be a mother but I'm done with school and Max is turning 30 this year I don't want him to have his first child at an old age I know if I mention that I'm not ready to have kids he will wait just to make me happy I think it's time I make him happy as much as he makes me happy.

It's now the middle of June I just finished my exams first week of July I'll be starting my internship with Numbers I'm so excited. I went shopping with Ulwazi and Nolwazi they said I need a new wardrobe for work since I have to wear formal clothes I bought a lot of new lingerie since Max is always tearing them I know soon I'll have to buy again when I complained about how he tears my very expensive underwear he went on and bought me a lingerie shop well he bought me shares there and soon me and my sisters will be modeling for the new range it's called Lexi Lace its beautiful and cater for all sizes and it has every style its really nice the lady is the sweetest her

name is Alex all she needs is a proper marketing team and she will be making proper money all in all I love her work all I'm bringing on the table is capital and my business skills she has the designs and runs the day to day business I own 48% shares. We walk in and find the whole gang in the lounge looking tense I go put the bags in my room and go back to them Max looks at me I look back at him something is wrong.

Biggy: Max I tried everything nothing is working.

Max: don't tell me nonsense Biggy do you know what's at stake? Everyone sitting here will go to jail for a very long time so don't piss me off.

Biggy sighs he starts typing on his PC I can see he looks stressed I go stand behind him his trying to crack some codes on this other paper he has next to him his failing at every attempt I look back at Max I want to try and help them but his on his gang mode I don't want him to bite my head off if I offer my help. He looks at me for a while eventually he nods his head he just gave me the go ahead to try and fix it I wink at him he just shakes his head

trying to hide his smile he can never say no to me and he knows it.

Me: Biggy let me try.

Biggy: thank you so much take.

He hands me his PC and the papers I look at the papers and they just full of numbers and alphabets this looks really hard I start typing on and on and on but nothing is working I've been looking at this PC for 4 hours now everyone is sitting silently waiting for me I just close the PC and look up at Max I feel like crying this is frustrating me why can't I fix it? I don't want him to go to jail I don't know what's in there but judging from how his been it must be very serious. Max stands up and come to sit on the coffee table in front me he locks me in and leans forward without taking his eyes off mine.

Him: you overthinking that is why you frustrated.

I just look at him.

Him: clear your head of everything you saw on those papers and PC let's start again.

I close my eyes and do as he says everyone is extremely quiet and looking at us. I open my eyes they land on my beautiful man this man is sexy as fuck my eyes move down to his lips and I just imagine him eating me up I feel my clit twitch and I press my thighs together as my breathing changes. He smirks at me.

Him: Lilly you losing focus.

I just bite my lower lip as I see his move. He snaps his fingers on my face and I blink a couple of times I find the gang looking at me amused and my sisters ready to bust out laughing I look back at him blushing he brings my chin up and gives me a soft kiss he then hands me the papers I take them and look at them for a while. I'm missing something here then I remember Owami once said something about time and space and shadows moving I look at the papers longer searching in my memory for that conversation. I close my eyes and I smell her perfume first then I see her beautiful face "Owami: Lilly when you hack something always look at the pattern there's always a pattern

all you have to do is figure out where the pattern breaks and starts again the space that happens between the patterns is where the universe gives you time to hack it, it has its shifts that's what I call the shadows they are everywhere all you have to do is wait for the shift to happen and it opens a shadow the trick is to be very fast when this happens because the shadows only open for a short while if its open for more than 10 seconds you can hack it well even 5 seconds but you must be really good if that's the case but if it's less then you can never hack it that's why my shadows are only open for 2 seconds." I pull out and shake my head a little Max is now looking at me with worry.

Me: can I please have a pencil.

Juicy gives me I take the papers and look at them I study them for about an hour Max has not moved ever since his been in front of me. Eventually I see the Pattern I start making notes on it and I see when it breaks and starts again I see the shadows open for 17 seconds the patterns keep changing so far there are three patterns at least they all have

17 seconds shadows. In 2 hours I'm done with studying the patterns I open the PC and start typing in the patterns I wait for the shadows to happen the first one opens and I hack it with no problem I move from pattern to pattern after 4 hours I'm in everything shows on my PC everything is here literally everything about every drug lord long list of names and what they do even my parents and grandfather is here and it tells in detail who does what and how my eyes just pop where does Max get this? If this got on the wrong hands this person would have so much power. I look at Max he looks at me and he knows I'm in.

Max: what's in it?

Everyone is now looking at me waiting.

Me: everything.

Max: everything?

Me: yes, every gang, every king pin, murderers you name them and what they do it's all here.

Everyone's eyes pop because they know what this can do.

Max: delete it and everything that is there make sure no one can retrieve it and Lilly make sure that where it was copied from or if there is a trace that it was copied disappears and no one will ever find it.

I nod my head and start working on it I delete everything lucky this is the original it was never copied or anything like that I make sure that whoever tries to get something similar to this just catches a virus that just ruins everything connected to them. When im done everyone is in a better mood now they even braaiing I'm hungry I decide to take a quick shower that was so tense I need to blow some steam. I just finished getting dressed Max walks in and sits on the bed looking at me.

Max: thank you.

Me: you welcome.

Max: you don't understand Lilly you've saved so many people from the underworld including me.

Me: and I would do it again just for you plus my parents and grandfather were there too I can never let something hurt the ones I love. Where do you even get it?

Max: Bongs created it looks like his been collecting information on a lot of people and he had to give that to the hawks that's what has been keeping me because once we found out he created something like this we've been looking for it and eventually we found it before the Hawks it's just we didn't know what exactly was there.

Me: now you see why I never liked Bongs?.

He sighs.

Max: it's just I'm disappointed we come very far why would he do this now I'm struggling to trust anyone I can not even ask anyone to be my right hand man even though Juice stepped up but I still have some doubts lingering because of Bongs. How can I work with a team I can not trust Lilly? Right now you the only person I trust with my everything.

Me: don't punish them for Bongs doing Max that's not fair just be more careful and vigilant but let them grow don't paint them with the same brush as Bongs. Let's start with Juicy and everyone and everything will fall into place.

He just snuggles onto me I hate what Bongs has done to my man he should be grateful I stabbed him if only he was still alive I would make him feel the heat. We cuddle until my stomach grumbles I did say I'm hungry we finally go down and join everyone Ulwazi and Nolwazi look like sister wives around Juicy it's cute I like their relationship.

Its Monday morning and I'm looking at myself on the mirror I'm wearing a navy blue pencil dress that hugs my body I've been exercising with Max and he reminds me so much of my dad the way he pushes me and makes sure I sweat it's just like him my six pack looks sexy as ever my ass shape looks hot because its naturally big and now that it looks toned I just love it. I'm wearing this dress with white pointy heels they make my legs look nice

they remind me of how my mom loves seeing me in heels. My hair is in a neat bun makes my face look like I just had a up lift. I put on a dark purple lipstick it's close to black or maroon. I walk out and find Max in the kitchen waiting for me he just looks at me blankly I turn for him to see me and he still has his blank face well his been mad that I'll working with Amu he really hates him I go put my arms around his neck Gosh his still so tall even though I'm in these high heels I peck his lips.

Me: stop being grumpy you do know I'm Mrs. Ngidi right so no one can touch this.

His still looking me his really not budging it's time I pull out my emotional blackmail. I let him go and take off my shoes I turn around.

Me: please unzip me.

Him: Lilly we going to be late please stop what you doing so we can go.

Me: I'm no longer going.

I say sounding sad.

Him: what? Why?

Me: because you don't like it and I don't like seeing you all grumpy and moody with me clearly you don't want me working there.

He turns me around and looks at me worried.

Him: no Lilly I'm just jealous that you will be working with your ex and you walking around looking beautiful I know his going to want you back but that doesn't mean you shouldn't work there just because I'm in my feelings.

Me: so you okay with me working there?

Him: no I'm not but that's no problem because I will kill him if he tries anything funny. Now let me put back your shoes.

He picks me up and puts me on the counter he puts on my shoes and we leave I'm already late but I don't care I want him to see me properly. Max is my self appointed driver we get to the building its huge its actually the first time I come here before I did everything online so there was a never a need to come here.

Max: enjoy your day okay.

I nod my head I pack his lips and he hugs me tightly.

Me: I love you.

Him: I love you more.

He kisses my forehead and looks at me as I walk in everyone keeps turning their head with me my loud heels don't help the situation I get to the receptionist she's just looking at me blankly.

Me: Good morning I'm here for the internship.

She pulls a face I raise my eyebrow.

Her: 8th floor.

I turn and look for stairs I see them and go up taking my time I'm wearing very expensive heels so I'm not about to run up these stairs and I don't want to be sweaty eventually I make it on 8th floor I walk and I ask a lady to show me where to go she just points at a door I walk towards it I open it and everyone looks at me they sitting around a long table one side it's the students opposite them its Amu a lady and two guys everyone is silent Amus eyes look like they about to pop out.

Me: Good morning I'm sorry I'm late I got lost.

The lady just looks at me sizing me up the two guys looking at me with lust.

1 guy: it's okay please sit.

Amu: clears throat... uhmmm may I please be excused there is something... uhmm.. yea take care of this.

All this time his eyes have not left mine he stands quickly and leaves I move my eyes to these three and the lady clearly has a problem with me I don't give a fuck the two guys look at each other and back at me. I just sit back and get comfortable .

1 Guy: we've already introduce ourselves and what is your name?

Me: I'm Nthombenhle Lilly Siphosihle Ngidi I'm a third year student in Business Science.

I pull out my school papers which state which departments I have to go to I only have to shadow the COO and CEO.

1 guy: oh... I know you will me shadowing me and the CEO you actually the only business Science

student here, looks like you will be stuck with me for the next three months. By the way I'm Kagiso Moloji the COO.

Me: nice to meet you.

All this time the lady has a frown on her face after that introduction we are shown around the building and different departments from there we go to HR and sign all the necessary papers we then placed accordingly I'm obviously working with Kagiso who works on 15th floor with the CEO and all the executives. The day was okay people made friends and everything at lunch I was chilling alone well I didn't mind I'm used to it anyway I just called Max and we spoke until my lunch time was over nothing productive happened I haven't seen Amu since morning later Max came to fetch me and I told him about my day his not happy that I have to use the stairs everyday 15th floor is really far but it's okay if I didn't hit the gym on a regular I would be complaining I'm just more worried about my heels and I'm not a person who changes shoes if I wear heels then its heels the whole day I

find very unattractive when a woman changes into flats just because she is tired of wearing heels rather not wear them at all.

AMUKELANI

I swear my whole world came to a stand still when she walked in she looks more beautiful and mature now I'm still madly in love with her and I still have plans of making her my second wife I know she is dating someone because she does post him on her Instagram it's just she hides his face well I'm not afraid of a little competition a girl never forgets her first right I'm her first everything I'm sure she still feels something for me I mean she was looking at me I think we had a moment. Things have changed a lot since she left me I did go to her apartment and look for her weeks later but she had moved out someone else was living there my taxis got bunt all of them and I became bankrupt to a point where I had to sell my company at least after that the CEO position opened and I applied for it I was given the position and it pays well but now the only thing I have to

my name is my house and cars. My relationship Bongiwe is okay I guess she's just not Lilly I have a son with her she is your typical house wife she became friends with Palesa and now she looks like a slay queen our fights are normally caused by Lilly since I still have her pictures and some of her things I refuse to get rid of them she is the love of my life and I still want her back. Bongiwe is just a nag most times if she's not spending my money she is complaining about something she's just not ambitious I tried to get her back to school or something but she's not interested it's just a turn off I want a woman who can make her own money and is ambitious just like Lilly but I guess they don't make them like her. Me and Palesa have our sex thing going on the side I did tell her that Bongiwe can never find out and she is cool with it I just don't know how they became friends so when ever I have a fight with Bongiwe I just book a room and call Palesa I do give her some money at least. Ever since I walked out the boardroom I've locked myself in my office and canceled all my appointments I'm sitting here thinking about Lilly

I'm so happy that I'll be working closely with her this is my chance to make things right and bring her back into my life I'm so happy and excited.

It's been two days since Lilly has started work here she has a table set up in Kagiso's office and right now I'm going there to see her I don't even know what I'm going to say when I get there I hope I don't freeze like the last time. I walk there and I bump into Mamello she is head of HR and she is in charge of all our interns or trainees she was present at the meeting she has always had a thing for me well I once fucked her before and ever since then she acts funny around me.

Her: hey Amu how are you?

Me: I'm good thanks I'm actually in a hurry to Kagiso there are some papers I need from him.

Her face changes into a frown I just walk away when I get there they are both silently working on their papers Kagiso looks up at me. I look at Lilly today she has her hair down she looks very beautiful she's just concentrating on her papers

she's not even looking at me I'm pulled back by Kagiso talking.

Him: Boss I'm nearly done with the report I know you looking for it I'll bring them just after lunch.

I even forgot about that report.

Me: oh... yeah yeah okay, how is she settling in?

She's still not acknowledging me.

Him: well it's been two days I'm just showing her the ropes now and what I basically do here I must say she is a fast learner.

Me: yea I'm sure she is.

She looks at me with her eyebrow raised her eyes look more intimidating than before I swallow my spit.

Me: let me get going I'll b waiting for that report.

I walk out quickly fuck this might be harder than I thought but it's no problem I walk into my office and just bury myself into work time flies and I hear my door opening I look up its Bongwiwe with lunch yes I'm hungry but I don't want to see her I was

hoping to go have lunch with kagiso so I can see Lilly.

Bongiwe: hello hubby I thought I should bring you lunch today I hope you hungry.

Me: yeah sure.

I say standing up to go sit on the couch. She comes and gives me the food I start eating thinking about Lilly and she's just talking and talking. She snaps her fingers on my face.

Bongiwe: Amu am I talking to myself?

Me: uhmm... no no I'm listening.

Bongiwe: what's wrong you've been distracted since you came home on Monday.

Me: it's just work don't worry about it.

We were interrupted by a knock thank God.

Me: come in!

And here walks in my wife looking ever so classy in her black dress that hugs her sexy body beautifully. Her eyes travel to Bongiwe then back at me.

Lilly: hey I didn't know you had company.

Me: no no its okay.

Bongiwe: you actually disturbing us.

Lilly just gives her one look. I feel my spine shiver.

Me: it's okay Lilly my lunch time is finished she's leaving anyway, how can I help you.

Lilly: I just came to drop off the report you asked from kagiso.

She says handing it to me when I take it I see a huge ring on her finger I hope it's not what I think it is. I stare at it and she turns and walks away her body just looks even more sexy I'm drooling at her walking out slowly and those heels look beautiful on her.

Bongiwe: are you Kidding me Amu??

I snap out of it and look at her.

Bongiwe: why would you even hire her? Are you cheating on me with her again? Is it not enough that you bought her into my house the last time?!

She shouts at me I just look at her.

Me: Bongiwe I have to get back to work now as I said my lunch time is over please leave.

Bongiwe: Don't you dare Amu!...

I interrupt her.

Me: hai ...hai ...hai Bongiwe I'm at work! We will have this conversation at home now leave man!

I shout at her and she jumps in fear she grabs her bag and leaves. I sigh out and brush my head I'm never going to hear the end of it, I take the report and start working but my mind keeps drifting to Lilly and that huge ring.

Its been two weeks and things have been hard very hard Lilly doesn't give me the time of day even when I try to be friendly she just brushes me off I cant even apologize for what happened between us. I'm currently in my office with Bongiwe she has become a regular ever since she found that Lilly works here I'm walking her out when we see Lilly walking past the elevator holding a coffee mug I think she's from the kitchen she's reading the papers she has on her other she's

dressed in a red jumpsuit and black heels she's beautiful . Next thing Bongiwe walks fast towards her she stands right in front of her.

Bongiwe: who the fuck do you think you are huh?!

She screams at her Lilly looks at her with her eyebrow raised I just get lost looking at this beautiful person Bongiwe continues shouting and screaming at her Lilly is just looking at her unbothered while making her funny faces and starts sipping her coffee. Thing about Lilly is that when you scream and shout at her she just zones out and looks at you once you done she will say "huh?" just know she heard nothing. Bongiwe looks at me well I didn't hear what she has been screaming about and that pissed her off really bad next thing she pushes Lilly so hard I see that coffee fly to her chest as she falls back she falls into the elevator and the doors close immediately fuck this can not happen I start pressing the button furiously I see the elevator move down and it stops I think its malfunctioning it shows a red sign that

its stuck shit shit. I turn to Bongiwe who gets scared and looks away from me.

Me: do you realize the shit you just did Bongiwe?!
What the fuck is your problem?!

I scream at her as she jumps in fear. Kagiso walks out the office.

Kagiso: what's going on? What's with the shouting?

Me: she pushed Lilly into the elevator.

I say angrily.

Kagiso: I still don't understand what is wrong.

Me: she is claustrophobic she can't be in there.!

Kagiso: oh...fuck that's why she's always using the stairs?

I just look at him and pull out my phone to call the maintenance guys and the ambulance I run down to reception to wait for them they better be fast.

MAX

I'm in my office working when I suddenly feel chest pains my phone starts to beep I look at it and

its Lilly's tracker beeping yellow meaning something is wrong with her physically I jump of my chair and grab my car keys it shows she's at work I swear if someone did something to her a few people are going to die. Her mother let me in on how their trackers work I also got one its actually very genius. I'm driving like crazy and my chest really hurts I know its Lilly if I feel like this I'm sure she feels worse I arrive there in 5 minutes I hurry into the building when I get to the reception I see people busy at the elevator and some paramedics when the receptionist sees me she gasps and takes a step back I'm pretty sure my face doesn't look anywhere close to friendly.

Me: I'm looking for Nthombenhle Lilly Ngidi she's a intern here.

She stutters which pisses me off even more I bang her table and she screams jumping.

Me: where the fuck is she!

Everyone looks at me a man dark a little shorter than me.

Him: sir how can I help you?

Me: I'm looking for Lilly she's an intern here.

Him: uhmm... she's stuck in the elevator.

I close my eyes how the fuck did she even get into an elevator when she knows she's claustrophobic. I turn and walk towards the elevator the guys have opened the floor working on whatever.

Me: can someone open these doors.

Guy: sir we can not do that.

I was about to say something when I'm interrupted by my phone it's her mother:

Me: hello

Her: Max what's going with my baby?

Me: she got stuck in the elevator at work I'm working on getting her out now.

Her: Max get her out fast please.

Me: yea I'll call you back.

I hang up and grab one of their metal equipment they tried to stop me I just gave them one look and

they just let me be I put it between the doors and started to open it slowly everyone is now gathered looking at me once the doors are open I see the elevator is stuck just above us I can see her shoes I think she passed out. I jump up and start to pull the elevator down I only seen this in movies and it looks easy but this shit is hard and needs a lot of man power if I didn't lift weights I don't think I would be able to pull it down like this once its halfway down I jump in and my Lilly is just laying on the floor her chest and neck look red and wet I think coffee spilled on her I can smell it I carry her and hand her over to the paramedics I just feel numb she has to be okay. I jump out the elevator to follow the paramedics I pass a man shouting at a lady they both look at me as I pass them I take out my phone and call Biggy to get the footage of what actually happened here because nothing makes sense I jump into the ambulance with Lilly and they busy working on her eventually we make it to the hospital and the doctors take her. I sit on the bench and text her mother just to update her next thing the guy who was shouting at the lady

and the one who told me about Lilly walk in I just look at them.

1guy: hey I'm Kagiso I work closely with Lilly and this is Amu the CEO.

He says pointing at the guy who was shouting at some lady so this is the fucker who once hurt my Lilly I look at him for a while and I get interrupted by my phone Biggy has send me a footage I look at it immediately and I feel my blood boil so this one and his stupid wife did this to my Lilly. I look at him and his scared ready to pee his pants.

Me: so your stupid wife pushed my Lilly into the elevator.

I say calmly.

Him: it was a mistake.

Me: I don't think so.

The doctor walks towards us his the doctor who fixed me when I was shot his more like a family doctor now. Amu stands up I look at him and he sits back down.

Me: how is she?

Doctor: she had a mild heart attack whatever triggered her like that is really not good for her. Her blood pressure is over the roof I'm shocked she didn't even have a stroke it was really a close call so I'm keeping her for a week just to monitor her. I also saw she got burned by coffee luckily it's not a third degree burn so she will be okay with just an ointment to ease the pain and get rid of the mark on her chest.

Me: thank you doctor can I see her.

Doctor: yeah sure but she is heavily sedated I'm sure she will be up tomorrow.

I nod my head and walk to her ward I find her sleeping peacefully looking ever so beautiful but I hate seeing her here I don't know how she survived months looking at me laying in a hospital bed but I don't think I can do that she needs to be fine and come home and my chest pains will stop. I decide that I'm joining her in bed if we fall we fall its not my problem.

I'm woken up by someone busy touching my face and squeezing me I open my eyes and find my

beautiful Lilly and her tiny hands busy she smiles at me I smile back I'm so happy to see her.

Me: why are you not sleeping?

She giggles hiding her face on my chest I feel a tingling sensation in my stomach and I chuckle.

Me: you never want to see me in peace even when you in a hospital bed.

Her: I thought I died.

Me: and leave me with who?

Her: tumi

She says giggling.

Me: do you want me to fuck you on this bed?

Her: and scare the nurses with your big dick I don't think so.

Me: what do you know about big dicks because you only know two and the other one doesn't count because I don't think you even saw it.

Her: I watch porn.

Me: haaaa.... Lilly

She busts out laughing at me we chill and talk about nonsense until the doctor comes to check on her everything seems fine so I go home to shower and change she will be discharged in two days so I pack some clothes and toiletries for her.

LILLY

Being at the hospital is very nice actually this is the only time I get to rest properly and let people do everything for me it's so relaxing but I hate their tasteless food. Last night I asked the doctor to remove my implant and cleanse my womb which increases fertility I asked him not mention it to Max and he had no problem about it he also ran some tests to make sure I'm healthy to carry a baby and I'm good I'm so excited hey. Today I'm about to get discharged Max is apparently helping me pack but his just decorating honestly, as I'm busy Amu walks in with a bunch of flowers well somebody is applying for a death certificate I look over at Max he has a cute frown on his face.

Amu: uhmm... hi

Me: hello

Amu: I didn't know you being discharged I brought you these.

He says handing me the flowers Max quickly grabs them and throws them out the window Gosh the way I want to laugh at him his being so dramatic I see Hlehle laughing when did she even get here . I just look at Max and he stands right next to me and puts his arm around my waist I look back at Amu and he looks like his about to bust out crying next thing Nobuhle is next to Amu looking at him.

Hlehle: is he about to cry?

I really need to laugh. I clear my throat and look up at Max who is looking down at me he drops his head and kisses me I kiss him back and pull out.

Hlehle: show off.

I ignore her this is not the time to entertain her.

Amu: so you really moved on?

He asks in a shaky voice.

Hlehle: heee.. madoda we have sis Matilda ready to cry here.

She says clapping her hands I just busts out laughing I really couldn't hold it in any longer I just can't Hlehle joins me and we continue laughing when I'm done I look back at Max who has a blank look then Amu just walks out furiously Hlehle disappears this one just came here to cause problems.

Max: I'm not even going to ask anything let's finish packing and go home please I'm horny.

I just look at him and he goes sits down and looks at me with a serious face you know sometimes I really think something is wrong with Max his brains malfunction or something it's like he loses a fuse or maybe it's already lose I really don't know.

Max: stop looking at me with your weird eyes and making those faces.

Me: are you okay?

Max: I'm not fine I just told you to finish up I'm horny but you have your weird eyes on me. Do you

want me to fuck you here maybe? I'll be quick I promise.

He says standing up.

Me: Hai ...Max I'm nearly done give me 5 minutes.

You see what I'm talking about the fuse is loose right now. I've been home now for a week the doctor gave me days off and I'm very grateful I'm not ready to face the embarrassment of passing out in the elevator because of the boss's wife. I'm currently cooking in the kitchen with Hlehle sitting on the counter talking nonsense. It's around 6pm I know Max is going to walk in anytime from work.

Hlehle: Lilly when exactly are you telling him about me?

Me: how about never?

Hlehle: why not his your husband and he has seen you talk to me a few times well not really he just thinks you talk to yourself.

Me: please tell me you joking.

Hlehle: I'm not joking his even standing behind you right now.

Me: mxm and you think I would fall for that?

Hlehle: uhmmmm...

Then she starts swinging her legs on the counter I turn slowly and find my beautiful husband standing by the door frame with his arms folded. I can't read his face so I blink a couple of times.

Him: hi.

Me: hi

Him: who were you talking too?

Huh?

Me: uhmm... eh... yho

I look back at Hlehle and she's just looking back at me I look back at Max he walks towards the counter and leans on it looking at me.

Him: Lilly I'm waiting.

Me: I was talking to myself.

Him: we lie to each other now?

Gosh how do I explain this to him his going to freak maybe I don't know. People don't do well with ghosts.

Me: okay sorry. I was talking to Nobuhle my twin.

Him: I didn't know you have a twin where is she?

Me: she's dead.

He looks at me.

Him: I don't understand.

Me: long story cut short my mom miscarried her but for over year or so I've been able to see her ghost and talk to her like when you walked in.

Him: tell me you joking please.

I just look at him then back at Hlehle she stands up and walks to him she starts to brush his arms I see him shiver.

Me: she's actually next to you touching you.

He jumped immediately.

Him: Lilly I'm not doing this shit we leaving!

He runs up the bedroom I look at Hlehle and she just shrugs her shoulders. I run up and find him packing our clothes more like throwing them in the bag I walk to him.

Me: Max please stop!

Him: No Lilly you want us to live in a haunted house are you crazy?

Me: the house is not haunted Max.

Him: maybe you possessed I think I should take you to church.

Gosh I've never seen Max so freaked out his busy walking fast with his long legs throwing clothes everywhere. I go and grab both his arms he stops and looks down at me.

Me: Max no one is possessed or haunted please calm down and let me explain.

He calms down a little next thing Hlehle decides to make a grand entrance the room gets windy and cold I see her standing there giggling. Max jumps shaking

Me: would you just stop it Nobuhle man!

Him: look Lilly I'm not stay for this shit okay next thing doors will be slamming and things flying bye bye.

This one has seen too many horror movies. He tries to walk out I run and close the door and lock it I throw the key outside the window.

Him: what the fuck is wrong with you Lilly do you want us to die in here?!

Me: would you stop shouting and listen for a moment!

He looks at me breathing heavy Hlehle is sitting on the bed looking at us.

Me: okay now can we sit and talk? Please

He walks to the bed and sits I breathe out.

Me: well like I said Nobuhle died before she was even born. She started appearing to me when I moved here in Johannesburg because I was lonely and I had a void inside me I always felt lost so she made whatever plan to make sure she can communicate with me whenever I need her, she pretty much knows everything she's been there

for me even when you were in the hospital she's the one who made sure I keep going I've been wanting to tell you but I was scared you will react like this.

He sighs and rubs his head.

Him: you locked us in here and throw the key out the window can you sister bring it back?

Me: I don't know maybe you should ask her she's right next to you.

He jumps up immediately me and Hlehle laugh out loud.

Him: don't play like that man Lilly.

Me: I'm not lying she's really here sitting on the bed.

His eyes pop out I giggle.

Hlehle: tell him I sat thank you.

Me: why?

Hlehle: for taking care of you and that he must stop doubting himself his doing a great job.

I look at him and tell him what she said his eyes look soft now.

Hlehle: and tell him to stop being hard on his family they do love him very much it's just that they too blinded by material things. Soon they will come back into their senses he must just give them time.

I repeat what she said again and he sighs I never realized his family situation affected him so much.

Hlehle: don't worry Entle you actually the answer to fixing it for him just give it time okay.

Me: me?? How??

Hlehle: stop worrying about it everything is coming together nicely now can I hug him I just want to touch his abs.

Me: you such a pervert.

I look at him and ask him that she wants to hug him he hesitates but agrees Hlehle jumps off the bed and smashes into him I hear him gasping softly his just standing there then I see him smile I smile too then she disappears. Then I see the key flying

through the window and lands on the floor I even forgot about that hey. We spend the rest of the night making love and him asking me 21 questions about Nobuhle and me laughing at his dramatic ass.

JUICE

I wake up alone and I hear giggles coming from the kitchen I get up and go to the kitchen I find my two women playing with water busying splashing it everywhere I smile the way I love these two next thing Ulwazi slips and falls on her huge bums on the floor I bust out laughing they both look at me Nolwazi laughs too and Ulwazis eyes get glossy I go pick her up and carry her to the bedroom I go run a bath for us I start to brush my teeth and she's busy fixing the bed when she's done she strips and comes to the bathroom I take off my boxers and get in the water she gets in as well and lays her head on my chest tomorrow we flying to KZN they going to meet my family and the family is so excited to meet them. I know my relationship with them is taboo and society will have a big problem

with it and I know they will receive most of the backlash because they women. The moment I saw them step out the car at the club I knew I wanted one of them it's just I was not sure which one but when I started to chill with them I fell in love with them both I couldn't choose one and I didn't want too. They don't look like Lilly facially they look more like Amanda Du Point even their hair is just like hers the difference is that they have cubby chicks with dimples and blue eyes small nose and pouty lips their bodies are curvy with a thick ass even though they hit the gym regularly but their hips and ass are just the same size just like Lilly and they very short.

When I'm done bathing with Ulwazi we get out and Nolwazi is in the shower. We get to the bedroom I cuddle Ulwazi these two are like babies they love cuddling it's very nice honestly I never cuddled with other women before so this is really a wonderful experience. As we cuddling Ulwazi starts touching me seductively sex with them is the bomb but they really drain me especially if we have a threesome she starts kissing me I get on top

of her she's just wearing my shirt and I'm in my boxers. I take off the shirt she is wearing and start to kiss her neck down to her perky boobs then I move to her beautiful shaved haven her moans drive me crazy I suck her and gently bite her clit she comes hard with her body shaking I love seeing them enjoy themselves I go back to her face and kiss her roughly I take off my boxers and start rubbing my dick on her she flips me over I like it when they get a bit aggressive I look on my side I see a naked Nolwazi looking at us with lust and busy touching herself next I feel Ulwazi sit slowly on my dick I close my eyes as I feel pleasure I look at her and she has her head back with her eyes closed moaning my name next Nolwazi comes and sits on my face I grab her ass and start to suck her while Ulwazi is riding me. Fuck this is heaven sent they both get louder I know they close they both come together screaming my name I don't come quick I'm not a two minute noodle well I had to learn how to keep it in a little longer because satisfying two women is no child's play. After they both get off me Ulwazi lays on the bed with her

legs spread and Nolwazi bends over giving me a nice view of her ass as she eats up her sister. I gently hold her waist and brush myself in they both tight and warm and always wet I can never get enough of them I start to thrust her hard and fast she stops sucking her sister and starts fingering her the room is filled with moans, groans clapping sounds I swear this used to be my fantasy but now it's my life I'm never leaving them for anything or anyone. I start to feel my build up and Nolwazi is not helping because her pussy is busy tightening up as she's about to come I hear Ulwazi screaming and she starts squinting everywhere that sends me and Nolwazi over the edge we come together. I breath out and pull out my dick my juice drips from her pussy and my dick starts to get hard again I chuckle and I go back and we make love again and again until I'm tired. I go to the bathroom and clean myself I take the towel and pour warm water on it I go back and clean them up they look a bit tired I don't blame them we hardly slept last night and they woke up early to study I go make them food more like greasy food and take

it back to them I find them sleeping I wake them up and we all eat from one plate when I'm done I go put the plate in the kitchen then go back to bed I find them inside the blankets I get in between them I snuggle up to Ulwazi and suck her boob and Nolwazi comes cuddles me from behind I pull Ulwazi closer I'm really a happy man we fall asleep tangled up together. I know we going to spend the rest of the day lazing around when we wake up and they will be back into their hyperactive selves so it's best to rest when they sleeping.

It's now 5am and we in the plane flying to KZN Zizi (Ulwazi) is sleeping on my lap and Nono (Nolwazi) is sleeping on my shoulder I'm just resting my eyes thinking how amazing it feels to be in love and be loved. I never understood how Max does it with Lilly how he is able to switch into this soft person whenever his around her but the moment his outside the world his fucking ruthless I don't think people know how dangerous Max is he doesn't waste time when it comes to killing anyone on his way he will wipe you out and everything related to you it will be like you never

existed but you only see that side of him if you really push him when I first saw Lilly kill the Portuguese I swear they are match made in heaven but whenever they are at home they are just homey and cute. I actually met Max when I was trying to rob him years ago I dropped out of high school because I was hanging around the wrong crowd my parents were struggling to make ends meet so I wanted to help since I have two younger siblings it was not easy for my parents to have neighbors always complaining about me and the police always knocking on my door. All that changed when I met Max he took me under his wing Bongs was not happy about the idea but he learned to live with it. He taught me a lot of things before I knew it I had my first kill I guess he saw something in me and he taught me how to assassinate people honestly I enjoyed it I like how he never forces us to do anything we don't want too we always have a choice. Ever since Lilly came into the picture a lot has changed she has taught us a lot about making money not only starting businesses but also investing and buying shares she says having

money work for you and truth is she really saved us now my family lives in a nice house and I'm taking my siblings to school everyone is happy except obviously those few family members and neighbors who enjoyed seeing us struggling but now all the important people in my life are happy and doing well all thanks to Max and Lilly I'll always remain loyal to them I don't care what happens they have done so much for us and we always be grateful for they always share their knowledge with us if it was other people they would've been greedy and keep using us to their advantage.

We finally lend I go take their luggage honestly we will be here for two days I don't know why they packed so much I walk back to them pulling their bags. I see them standing there looking beautiful Nono is in a long yellow off the shoulder dress with her hair tied up and Zizi is in a short white dress and her big hair with its natural curls is loose they look so beautiful everyone keeps looking at them their skin is just glowing I must give it to Terminator he really made beautiful kids here.

The guard will be driving us I open the door for them they busy just blabbering about whatever I'm just focused on my phone since I'm replying some emails. Eventually we make it home I hop out and open the door for my wives they jump out I see my mom walking towards me fast when she gets here she's grabs my face and starts kissing me all over.

Me: Ma please stop what will my wives say when you do such in front of them.

Mom: Money!! I'm so happy to see you, hello my angels you look so beautiful.

I just leave them there my family calls me money now since I'm rich they so fun I'm sure my ladies will like them. I walk in the kitchen and my little sister who just graduated recently is busy washing the dishes.

Me: little one.

Her: money!

She runs into my arms I spin her around and put her down. My little brother who just started varsity comes down and gives me a bro hug.

Me: how are you?

Mbali: yho... money we are so thirsty hey.

Me: uhmmm... I'm sure you are.

Themba: hai money do the right thing for your siblings.

I just shake my head and pull out a few hundreds and give them Mbali kisses me excited. I do not mind spending money on them they very respectful and they do well in school they've never given my parents problems or anything like that plus they always do as they told so I really don't mind spoiling them that's why I work hard anyway for them to have it easy unlike me plus I don't want them being in the wrong crowd like I did they may not be as fortunate as me and this life is one you don't wish for your loved ones. I walk in to the lounge I find my dad watching TV he stands up immediately and starts dancing this one is another

drama alone I pull out a stack on money and start throwing it to him my mom comes in running and she joins her husband next thing she's twerking on him okay now this is just weird so I stop.

Dad: hai... money why did you stop?

Me: because this is turning into porn real quick.

Mom: so?

Me: ma...eeeewww... no one wants to see that.

Dad: you have two women in your life you should let us teach you a few things in satisfying them.

I frown and hear my ladies giggle behind me. I shake my head and pull them closer I introduce them to dad and we spend the day catching up.

Me: dad I want to marry them.

He looks at me. We chilling in the garden while my mom took my wives away from me.

Dad: are you sure?

Me: yes.

Dad: so which one will be the first wife?

Me: none I want to marry them both at the same time I don't want 1st or 2nd wife nonsense.

Dad: uhmm... okay if you say so.

Truth is this 1st and 2nd wife positions cause problems I've seen it with my uncle he has 4 wives and the 1st one is the one who always makes decisions and rules and the others have to ask her for permission first before doing this or that personally I think that is nonsense hence I don't want my wives to have that title they are just my wives and they both have equal rights to me as their husband and in our marriage I don't want one to feel superior to the other just because she was married first that would never be fair to the other person it's just wrong. If I introduce them to you they will be Nono and Zizi my wives and that's it.

Me: can we please get it done as soon as possible.

Dad: no problem I will send the letter this week and get your uncles ready.

Later we have dinner over a nice conversation with laughter everyone is in good moods even my ladies are now comfortable around my parents eventually we go to sleep and as usual I'm tangled between the two of us them. I woken up by someone wiggling in my arms I tighten my grip .

Her: Baby let go I need to pee.

I know its Nono because she's the one who uses pet names unlike Zizi she calls me with my full name Nhlanhla by the way I'm Nhlanhla Ncobo I'm 27 years old. Zizi is not in bed.

Me: where is your sister?

I whisper in her ear with my eyes closed.

Nono: I think making breakfast with your mom.

Me: uhmm... hurry back.

I let her go. At least I have a bathroom in my room when she's done she comes back and lays on my chest I run my fingers on her back. What I love most about these two is that they give each time to spend with me separately I never have to ask when I'm with one like now the other will not

disturb that gives me time to give them my undivided love and attention. I know they share me but sometimes one on one is important and right now I want to make love to this one on my chest so I pull her chin up and kiss her softly I flip her gently and get on top of her as I deepen the kiss we both naked and my member his busy poking her.

Me: I don't want foreplay can I just make love to you?

I whisper to her with my forehead on hers and she agrees I push myself in her and stop to look at her.

Me: you beautiful.

She blushes I kiss her and intertwine our hands together and I make slow passionate love to her we come together and she has tears in her eyes.

Me: I love you Makhumalo .

Nono: I love you too Baby

I kiss her again and give her another hot passionate round of love making I'm holding on

tight to her and she's busy moaning softly I love her so much.

LILLY

It's been over a month now and I haven't been feeling well so I went to the doctor and he confirmed I'm pregnant I'm actually 7 weeks pregnant which means it happened exactly when I left the hospital I'm very excited I've invited my mom, dad, Baba and Max's family for dinner this coming weekend I want to share the news with everyone in a cute way I want to buy them gifts that will give them a hint that I'm expecting and I asked the doctor to print out scan pictures as well I have a few everyone is getting one. Today its Friday and the dinner is on Sunday Max told me that he send a guard to come get me since his a bit busy I'm knocking off early so I want to pass by the mall and buy the gifts today. As I walk down the stairs something feels off I just brush it off next thing when I get to the parking I feel someone grab me from behind I was about to fight them off but

he put a cloth over my mouth and nose then I became dizzy I hear gun shots then its lights out.

I wake up and I feel dizzy I hear Nobuhle calling me eventually I manage to open my eyes and I see her I look around and it looks like I'm in an abounded room or something it's just filthy it even smells bad I gag a little I'm tied to a chair.

Hlehle: you need to get out of here fast.

Me: But how Hlehle I'm tied on a chair and I'm pregnant I don't want to hurt my baby.

Her: Nthombenhle listen someone very evil is coming for you this here is small waters I will help you don't worry about your babies I will protect them you just fight to get out of here.

I was about to say something when someone just walked into the room its three men they speaking a foreign language I think its Nigerian. I just look at them then they turn their attention to me.

1 guy: you look familiar.

I just look at him I see a table behind him it has knives I smile at him. He comes to me and puts his

hand under my shirt I kick his knee so hard he curses and backhand slaps me so hard. I feel my anger increasing.

Me: I'm going to kill you.

I say calmly looking at him and they laugh at me one kicks my chair and it falls back I hit my head on the floor then they leave I start wiggling my body off this chair they tied my upper body with ropes once I'm off the chair I try to stand up but it's hard so I roll to the wall and use it to stand up when I'm finally up I walk to the table and its combat knives perfect I turn and take one I cut the rope. I'm not worried about being found I know Max is already coming.

Me: Nobuhle. Nobuhle. Nobuhle.

She appears.

Me: I'm ready let's go.

Her: okay

I take the knives and walk out the door I see passage.

Hlehle: this way be ready to fight don't hold back nothing is going to happen to your babies.

Me: okay.

I see the first guy he charges at me I go in full force and fuck him up he cant even fight I stab him on the neck and his blood oozes out I walk again and find that who slapped me I smile at him he comes for me I just stab his stomach he freezes and looks back into my eyes I run both the knives across his stomach and his intestines fall out his friend grabs me from behind I stab his thighs and he let's me go I stab his neck and run out the door. I see black cars coming in the yard.

Hlehle: you need to run fast Entle go over the wall and run fast don't look back I'll keep them busy.

I run to the back of the house and jump over the wall it's just a forest here I'm still in my formal clothes I don't even have my shoes on I start to run fast into the forest hoping I don't meet any wild animal and nothing stabs my foot I keep running I've been running for a while.

Hlehle: rest now.

I just sit under the tree and catch my breath I feel a slight pain on my lower abdomen I put my hand there and brush it gently.

Hlehle: don't worry they fine you need to start moving now.

I stand and start walking it's now just black I cant see anything I keep walking for a while and finally I find a road I just start walking straight on it I don't even know where it's going it's just dark I keep walking then I see a truck coming I just stand in the middle he starts to hoot at me I just stand there eventually it stops in front of me I walk to the side of the driver it's an old man I greet him.

Me: can I please get a lift to wherever you going.

He hesitates first and agrees I jump in the passenger seat.

Me: where are you going?

Him: to cross the border into South Africa.

Me: where are we now?

He looks at me and back to the road.

Him: you in Botswana.

Me: okay my name is Lilly.

Him: nice to meet you would you like anything to drink or eat?

My stomach grumbles immediately.

Me: yes please.

He gives me bottle of water and some chicken I eat like I haven't had food in forever.

Him: it's not safe for a lady like you be on the road at this time especially that road.

Me: I also don't think it's safe for an old man who should be retired to be in the road at this time picking up girls I could a ghost you know.

He chuckles and looks at me for same reason I feel very comfortable around him.

Him: ghosts don't eat or drink anything offered to them.

I look at him.

Me: you really thought I'm a ghost?

Him: yes I've seen a couple and heard stories about them.

Me: can I please use your phone.

He hands it to me I dial Max's number it rings for a while then he picks up.

Him: what?

Gosh he sounds so scary.

Me: Max...

Him: Lilly I'm on my way are you good?

He speaks so fast.

Me: calm down I'm okay I'm heading to the boarder now can you get me there?

Him: I'm actually there right now. Who are you with?

Me: I got a lift from a truck driver I'll explain everything when I get there.

Him: okay... I love you Lilly.

Me: I love you too.

I hang up and give him back his phone I look at him and his really old he should be home enjoying his retirement not being a truck driver.

Me: why are you still working at this old age?

He looks at me and chuckles.

Him: why are running around at night covered in blood?

I look at myself I actually look like a mess I don't even have shoes on and his right I'm cover in blood.

Me: bad people are trying to kill me so I had to fight and run as far as I could.

Him: I have a family and grandchildren to take care of.

I nod my head and look out the window eventually I fall asleep I'm really tired. I feel someone shake me I open my eyes and see a lot of lights I look over to this old man.

Him: we here and I don't think they will let you cross over.

I start to look around I see black SUVs I know its Max but let me call him first.

Me: I please call my husband first?

He gives me his phone again I call Max and he picks up immediately.

Me: where are you? I'm here.

I look over the SUVs I see the door opening I my Max stepping out I hang up.

Me: please don't leave yet.

Him: you do realize I'm working right.

Me: yes please just 10 minutes.

Him: okay.

I jump out the car and run to Max when he sees me he runs to me and picks me up he hold me so tightly I cant breath.

Me: I can't breath.

Him: I'm sorry are you hurt?

He says putting me down and busy touching me.

Me: stop I'm okay I just need you to pay that man the truck driver I don't even know his name.

Him: okay let's go to him.

We walk to the truck driver his name is David Max said since his going to Johannesburg we will just drive with him one of the guards is going to drive the truck I took off the bloody blouse I was wearing Max's sweater when we get into the car with the old man we fall asleep he must be tired too. I will talk to Max later about what happened I'm sure whoever took me is his enemy.

Today is Sunday it's the day of the dinner. I've spoken to Max about the kidnapping it turns out it's the gang from Thailand once I killed the Portuguese they took the opportunity to take over their business the problem started when they wanted to go into business with Max and he refused then they decided its smart to take girls from Botswana and Malawi and those are Max's territory the girls were going to be used for human trafficking when Max found out he saved the girls which pissed off the Thailand gang and now

they've made Max very angry by taking me he has all of them with their families in the warehouse he said he will deal with them soon I know once he finds out I'm pregnant he will not allow me anywhere close to the warehouse especially after the stunt I pulled with Bongs. The truck driver Max gave him 2 million for helping me and I gave him 1 million to go home and enjoy his retirement he was so happy he even cried I also cried with him I think these hormones are about to make me a cry baby my I haven't had my morning sickness since I saw the doctor his medication is helping.

I've been sending Max up and down preparing for this dinner his annoyed by me shame and it's cute Im done with everything for tonight I even set the table nicely I made my mom's famous malva pudding and her homemade custard it doesn't taste as good as hers but it's good either way. I just finished showering I can see my stomach looks like I'm bloated it's my baby bump I wonder if Max has noticed anyway I decided to wear a long floral flowy summer dress it hides the bump and the weight gain perfectly plus I'm also hiding my

swollen feet. I had my hair braided into a nice simple straight up it's long though I put on my mascara and lip gloss this pregnancy has me glowing actually my skin is really glowing I hope they don't suspect anything I can hear some noise coming from down stairs I know those are my parents and Baba. When I walk down the stairs everyone goes quiet and looks at me I finally make it to them without tripping since their eyes are gawking at me.

Me: what??

Max: you look really beautiful.

He says staring at me I blush so much my dad and Baba bust out laughing at me now I feel like crying my eyes get blurry looking at them laughing at me.

Owami: what's wrong baby why are you crying now?

Me: why are they laughing at me?

Max is just looking at me confused they stop laughing at me immediately Baba pulls me in for a

hug now I feel fine. Max's family arrived we've been having dinner and now we eating dessert.

Dad: Baby your malva pudding is nice but not as good as my wife's.

I roll my eyes well I'm not surprised there.

Max mom: this is just too much fat.

She says with a frown and poking it around she has been making funny comments ever since she got here. Max's dad and Baba have been having their own business conversation Michael has been quite and Tumi looks like she's carrying the world on her shoulders my dad, owami, Max and I have been having our own nice conversation the sisters are just glued to their phones now that everyone is done eating our house help comes to clear the table I go get the presents for them. I place them in front of them one by one the only person who didn't get is Tumi I still don't like her I know I'm petty like that.

Me: okay don't open them first I will tell you.

Now the sisters have put away their phones. I take out mine and start to take a video.

Me: okay you may open them.

They open them and my mom is just looking into the box then she looks at me with her glossy eyes Max's mother pulls out the cup and looks at me with tears running down her face Max is just busy looking at me then back into the box then me again. Well the cups are written Dad to be or Grandma to be or grandpa to be aunt to be or uncle to be then there is a sonar picture inside.

Dad: Nthombenhle can you not see that I'm young and sexy to be a grandfather?

I just giggle.

Max mom: I'm going to be a grandmother?

She asks still with her tears running down.

Me: yes you going to be a grandma.

Max's dad stands up and pulls max into a hug suddenly its emotional in here I even have my tears coming out now they hug for a while I think they both crying. He whispers something in Max's

ear and lets him go then Max turns to me his eyes are red he looks down at me.

Max: I'm really going to be a dad?

I nod my head and he goes down on his knees and goes under my dress thank God it's long and flowy I feel his hand on my stomach he then kisses it I giggle as I find it ticklish. He comes back up and kisses me. The sisters are just happy and busy screaming making noise while singing.

Baba: you people just keep making me old and I don't understand.

Dad: can you not see yourself that you very old you a great grandfather now 5 to being an ancient ancestor.

We laugh at him

Baba: excuse me I'm sexy as fuck the ladies call me daddy.

We laughed even worse.

Owami; Nthombi ka Baba you grew up fast not so long ago you were clinging on Baba sucking your fingers.

Max: and now she sucks bigger things.

I give him a look my dad throws a napkin at him his dad and Michael bust out laughing. Something is seriously wrong with Max. We have a nice night full of laughter everyone decided that they are sleeping over except Tumi thank heavens for that lucky this house is big enough to accommodate everyone.

Its morning and everyone just had breakfast everyone is in a happy mood including my Max I've never seen him this happy his been smiling ever since last night. I'm currently in the kitchen looking for my ice cream I hide it in the freezer so that no one eats it.

....: how do you do it?

Some deep voice says behind me I find my ice cream and pull it out its chocolate ice cream with biscuits I drool immediately and I turn its Michael I've never had a conversation with Michael ever this is going to be interesting. I take the spoon and sit on the high chair facing him.

Me: how do I do what?

Michael: make him happy and love him.

Me: I don't understand your question.

Michael: his very intimidating and scary how can a woman like you fall for him it doesn't make sense at all and that scar on his face is hideous and then you get pregnant by him really Lilly??

Me: it's not supposed to make sense to you because you not my husband but I will tell you is that what you and your family did to him hurt him very bad it was not nice at all. Your father disowned him at very young age and left him to fend for himself your mother didn't bother standing up for him and protect him and you turned your back on him just because you were busy trying to prove that you better then him basically he had nothing and no one. Everything I have mentioned would turn anyone's heart into stone but not Max his heart is still soft as a baby's bum. None of you have acknowledged your wrongs and apologized to him but yet here you are in his house eating his food and sharing precious

moments with him and he has never mentioned anything about what you all did to him. You see that scar on his face he got that fighting for food that someone throw away and some street kid who was hungry just like him stabbed him with a beer bottle just for leftovers he found in the bin. You are his brother Michael and not once did you try to reach out to him and help him but all you did is rejoice in his struggle and now all of you here are busy acting like nothing happened well news flash just because he doesn't say anything doesn't mean I wont. You see that persona he has now and that scar you call hideous makes him a much better man than you and your father can ever be combined. His all tough and scary because he learned to man up real fast now instead of going to apologize for your wrongs you standing in my kitchen asking me bullshit I will fuck you up Michael you see what I did to your wife is small waters do not come into my husband's house and try to disrespect him I'll forget that I'm pregnant and jump over this counter and spoon your eyes out and believe no one will stop me.

I see him swallow his spit and look behind me I feel my blood rush I know its Max I turn and find Max and his father standing there with their hands in their pockets Gosh they look so much alike it's weird.

Me: how long have you been standing there?

Max's dad: long enough to know that you love my son enough to threaten to kill that one.

Me: I don't make empty threats Mr. Ngidi.

I looks at me for a while I return the look he blinks a couple of times I think he gets the picture.

Max's dad: Michael gather everyone in the lounge or dinning table.

He mumbles whatever walking out I look at Max hasn't said anything his just been staring at me. We leave the kitchen and find everyone on the dinning table I still have my ice cream with me this thing is delicious we all gathered waiting for Max's dad to start. I'm sitting right across Michael who keep moving uncomfortably this one really wants my crazy to shine maybe I should just let it go and

blame it on the pregnancy yeah that will do I want him to try me I want to see how far I can take it.

Max's dad: I asked everyone here to join me as I want to correct the wrongs I have done years back.

He looks down and sighs.

Max's dad: uhmm... years back I did something that shouldn't be done to any child as a parent. I disowned my son because he didn't want to be a yes man he wanted to stand on his own and be his own man and I wanted to tame him and hold him back and he stood up for himself and instead of being proud and supporting him I threw him out and never looked back. One day he came back a different man and I've been ashamed to admit my wrongs and apologize right now I wish I could take credit of the man he has become not only am I proud of him but he brought me a daughter in law who is amazing and very strong willed. Today Sphehile made me realize how wrong we have done Nkanyezi...

He gets interrupted by this stupid idiot shit head.

Michael: dad Max is a criminal and you know it and now you proud of what exactly?? Look at him his ugly and...

I didn't let him finish whatever he was about to say I just threw the spoon at him so hard it hit him between his eyes as he was busy trying to process whatever that is happening I jumped on the table and went right across him I hear everyone calling me I land right on him and he falls back on the chair with me on top of him the moment we land on the floor I start throwing punches at him he keeps blocking them I feel someone trying to pull me I just push them and grab Michael's hands and pin them on the floor I put my knees on top of them and start punching him he keeps wiggling trying to get out of my hold but his words keep ringing in my head which get me even angrier I see my spoon and I take it I start hitting him with it by now his bleeding from his nose and mouth and I don't know where I feel someone grab me from behind I know I'm going to be pulled off him so I grab his head and bite his ear so hard he screams by now I'm in the air I wrapped my legs around Michael

I'm definitely not letting him go that easy I did warn him he didn't listen. I know its Max who is holding me from behind his dad comes in front of me and tries to unhook my legs around him I dig my teeth deeper and I bite off his ear I spit it out and bite his nose he screams so loud he sounds like a sissy. By now the only attached thing together is my teeth on his nose and his still screaming his scream sound so annoying. I can hear everyone still calling me and saying whatever but their voices sound so far I try to pull my hand so that I strangle him but Max's grip around me is pretty strong so I just dig my teeth deeper again and his nose comes off I spit it out.

Me: now I want to see who the fuck is ugly you stupid bitch! The next time I see you I'm going to cut off your nibbles you fucking disgusting little piece of shi...

Max covers my mouth and I just keep humming out my insults. He doesn't know me I'm going to cut off those nipples. I decided to calm down his face is covered by a towel I'm just looking at him

I'm waiting for the opportunity to cut off his nipples. I feel Max loosen his grip I still have my eyes on him.

Owami: Max get her out of here!

I see a scissor on the coffee table since we now in the lounge I don't know how we got in here I look back at Michael everyone is still panicking and doing whatever good that means they not looking at me Max was about to go with me I slipped through his arms taking my shirt off in the process I take the scissors and jump on Michael I tear his shirt fast because know someone is going to try and stop me I feel someone try to hold me I just stab their hand and it moves away I cut his one nipple fast I still hear their screams I feel someone pull me back I know its Max again I take his other nibble in my fingers and run the scissor through it by the time I get off him I have his nibble in my hand and the scissors.

Owami: Max I told you to get her out off here now!

Now I'm happy I breath out where is my ice-cream. He just carries me to our room when we get there

he just strips me since I'm covered in blood. He tries to take the nibble I have in my hand.

Me: put it away safely I want to frame it.

He looks at me weirdly and just continues doing what his doing then he gets into the shower carrying me he cleans me up nicely when his done he cuddles me while brushing my stomach.

Me: I'm hungry.

Him: what would you like to eat.

Me: pizza, burger, some wings oh... and some chips.

Him: okay.

He takes his phone and starts typing then he puts it away. I fall asleep eventually he wakes me up when the food arrives we both eat in silence.

Me: are you mad at me?

I ask ready to cry I don't like how quiet his been.

Him: I can never be mad you Lilly it's just I'm still trying to process what happened.

Me: I'm sorry.

Him: don't be sorry I know I would've defend you if I was in your shoes I don't think I would've used my teeth though maybe a bullet but not my teeth. I'm just happy that somebody stood up for me for the first time it feels very weird but I'm very grateful.

I giggle. And look at him he sighs.

Him: I just don't understand what have I done to Michael for him to be like this towards me I wish I knew then maybe I can fix it.

Now I don't know what to say I just go over to him and hug him he has his head between my boobs he holds me tightly evenly he falls asleep. Later I start to crave some ice cream so I get out of bed and go downstairs I find Owami with Baba drinking tea they stop talking and look at me I go to the freezer and look for my stash and take it out and go get a spoon I sit next to Baba I see Nobuhle next to Owami they still looking at me I just ignore them and start eating next thing they bust out laughing I look at them they laughing so much they even

have tears in their eyes it's so contagious I start to giggle.

Baba: did you really have to bite off his nose though?

They continue laughing.

Owami: no Baba what finished me is when she cut off the nibbles you should've seen Max's face.

They laugh louder.

Baba: his also too slow when you told him to get her out of there he was busy looking at other things. The way you slipped through his hands he just couldn't believe it his eyes popped out.

We laugh hard about what happened.

Owami: you stabbed my husband Entle.

Me: Next time he must keep his hands to himself.

Baba: you just as crazy as your mother the Nigidi's haven't seen anything yet I wish I could be a fly in this family.

Me: you love drama Baba.

I look at Nobuhle she winks at me and disappears.

MAX

I swear Lilly never ceases to amaze me her pregnancy has her crazy going over the roof not to mention her crying the way I hate seeing her cry it drives me crazy. Right now we just landed in KZN there is a family meeting I do not know what to expect because Lilly here is just I don't know what to even say but honestly when I heard her defend me in the kitchen I fell in love with her even more and when she attacked Michael that was cherry on top yes a part of me is hurt about how my brother thinks of me but Lilly's trade of not caring about what people think about me is slowly rubbing of me. I've decided to starve the Thailand's and their families I will deal with them later I'm still trying to adjust to Lilly's hormones I can't juggle so many things right now she is just a handful. I'm so happy that she is pregnant when she told me that she planned it I didn't believe her I thought she wanted kids later in life and I didn't want to push

her I'm 30 years and she is 20 so I really didn't want to put her under pressure. We now in KZN I made sure I stock up on ice cream because the last time she woke me up crying in the AMs I cant have that. We walk in the house and uncle Joe and Lilly run into each others arms you see these two are going to be trouble especially with her being pregnant and crazy I just see a lot of trouble. Ever since we got here we've been locked up in my room making love I forgot to tell you that she's always horny and she loves blow jobs now she says it's like sucking or licking ice-cream well I don't care what she thinks all I'm saying is I'm enjoying my always horny wife. I leave her sleeping and go downstairs and I find uncle joe chilling outside rolling a joint.

Me: you still smoke weed?

Him: I will never stop. Tell me here what happened to Michael when he came here he had his face covered I only saw a blue eye the other one is closed

I chuckle first thinking about that day when Godfather told me that she is crazy I thought he was joking.

Me: let's smoke that joint first then I will tell you.

Him: now you speaking my language.

We smoke his joint over a stupid conversation I don't remember when was the last time I had weed it's been a while. We now high as fuck I start to tell him without leaving any details about what happened to Michael and his dead with laughter his even crying well we both laughing and crying. One of the kids calls us saying dinner is ready I follow him when we walk in we find everyone on the dinner table seated I go sit next to Lilly I kiss her cheek and she looks at me with a frown I know she can smell the weed she just keeps looking at me until I sit I don't want to look at her because she probably looks deadly so no I'm not looking at her she scares the shit out of me. I look around the table and I see Michael covered in bandages his eyes do look really bruised badly I've seriously grown new respect for Lilly her punches

are the real deal I've seen it in the gym but I never thought that those tinny fists can cause so much damage, next to him its Tumi and her parents one thing I know is those two really like running their mouths I think its because they think being rich makes them untouchable I have a feeling that my whole family is going to experience my wife's crazy and honestly I'm too high to stop her when they push her. I turn to look at my wife and she's just eating her ice cream you can tell she is enjoying it because she's busy dancing gently on her chair she's even humming softly I smile she's the most beautiful woman I've ever seen and the way she keeps licking that spoon just turns me on she looks exactly like this when she sucks me, she turns and looks at me licking her spoon.

Her: what is it?

She says with a frown I just smile at her she's so beautiful.

Her: whatever you smoked stop it its messing with you and you stink.

I smell myself I don't stink I go close to kiss her and she pushes me.

Her: stinky.

She then goes back to her ice cream I quickly kiss her lips and she looks at me with a frown again I just grin at her I hear someone clear their throat it's my dad I find them looking at us.

Me: before we start with this I think we should start with a prayer.

They all look at me weirdly expect Lilly who is busy with her ice cream and uncle Joe giggles next to me.

Mom: Maxwell please stop with your games this meeting is important and as you can see we have guests.

Me: uhmmm... don't say I didn't tell you.

I lean over to uncle Joe since he's next to me and whisper.

Me: you going to enjoy this meeting .

Then I lean back he just chuckles and whispers back.

Joe: I cant wait I've missed too much from the previous one.

Dad: okay now that we all here I would like to welcome Tumis parents to our home them being here is about their daughter which we will get into...

He get interrupted by Tumis mom.

T mom: no we will get into it now who the fuck is the skank that thinks she has a right to lay her hands on my daughter?! Ngidi you now allow cheap girls into this family?!

I slowly feel my blood boil I look at her clearly she was never told about insulting my wife.

Me: were you never told that I don't take it well when someone insults my wife?

Her husband jumps in...

T dad: you not going to threaten us here don't you dare for a second think that your disgusting face scares me you a boy to me yo...

We get interrupted by noise on my side and I see eyes popping out with gasps around the table I look on my side and my lovely wife with her spoon in her mouth has my gun in her tinny hands she checks the bullets and removes the safety then cocks it she then puts it on the table she takes her ice-cream tub and continues eating. See why I love her so much I just smile and lean back looking at them.

Me: you were saying?

They swallow their spits blinking a lot I raise my one eyebrow.

Joe: I think it's time for that prayer let's hold hands.

He says taking my hand and my aunts hand on his side he closes his eyes and looks up. I just look at him.

Joe: dear God your people want to see you please open your gates for them. Forgive them for their sins and accept them with open arms. Their time on earth is about to end if they do not behave

please God talk to your children they are testing the wrong person with the speed they going I can already see their grave. Please make them see that Max is beautiful his a handsome man we do not want to die now it's not our time yet but I pray that the rest of us who behave and see Max's beauty live long to witness your will God. Lilly would you like to add anything?

I turn to look at Lilly I really need to talk to the doctor about this ice-cream I don't want my child to have diabetes.

Lilly: Amen.

Joe: amen.

He let's go of our hands and opens his eyes I do not know what kind of prayer is that but I really hope it worked. Everyone on the table was just looking at him.

Dad: Siphosihle I don't think this being on the table is necessary.

Lilly looks at him and tilts her head I see him get uncomfortable on his chair I'm not going to

interfere this time around clearly he didn't learn a lesson with the previous meeting plus uncle joe prayed so whatever happens its Gods will.

Joe: Ngidi just start the meeting I have women to go attend too.

Dad: okay fine like I said before there are issues that I think need to be cleared starting with what happened the last time between Siphosihle and Michael. First Siphosihle we do not condone violence in this family I do not know how you were raised but here we do not use our hands to communicate.

All this time Lilly is looking at him with a serious face she even put her ice cream aside but she still has the spoon in her hand.

Lilly: Mr. Ngidi I'm a very humble and respectful person and you know this. You and Max were there when I spoke to Michael I believe I was clear when I told him to watch his mouth when it comes to Max I do not stutter Mr. Ngidi my warning was very clear I told him in simple words that I will fuck him up if he tries to disrespect my husband so

I guess he wanted to witness it therefore me putting my hands on him is entirely his fault it has nothing to do with me because I did warn him.

My dad sighs he knows he will not win this argument even if he tried.

T Dad: can we now move on to what happened to my daughter. My daughter didn't get married in this family to be abused now tell me who put their hands on my daughter.

All this time Tumi is smirking.

Joe: your daughter was beat up because she is a hoe and she needed to be put back in her lane.

T mom: you will not talk like that about my daughter do you know who we are?

Joe: do you want to find out who is Siphosihle?

T dad: can you tell me who did that to my daughter?

Joe: why don't you ask her yourself?

Tumi: it was Lilly daddy.

She says still with a smirk on her face pointing at Lilly.

T dad: do you know who I am girlie?

Lilly is just looking at him unbothered.

T dad: I'm talking to you man!

He says banging the table and the ladies jump but my Lilly is still unbothered well like I said I'm staying out of this he may continue pressing her buttons.

Joe: Father God look at your children coming to your gate.

He says with his eyes closed shaking his bowed head and his hands high in the air I just chuckle relaxing in my chair.

Mom: I think you should calm down Mr. Mokgosi.

T dad: don't tell me what to do! This little girl thinks putting a gun on the table scares me.

Joe: uhmmm... Jesus father God they coming very fast.

T mom: little girl you think your scary ugly husband can stop us from coming for you? Huh?!

Lilly looks at me I know she's asking for permission to do as she please I just nod my head and she smirks looking back at them.

Lilly: I dare you to call my husband names again.

Joe: oh... dear God.

T dad: do not tell about that stupid fuck how can you call that a husband...

Lilly grabs the gun and shots right at him she misses by an inch everyone is already screaming and running out the house I'm just layed back my dad is on his feet including Lilly he tries to take the gun from her and she hits his hand hard with her spoon she points the gun again at Tumis parents they quickly run out the room she just starts shooting going after them everyone is just screaming its honestly a mess I stand up and follow them taking Lilly's ice cream with me I start eating it with my finger since she has the spoon. I find them in the kitchen busy ducking using the

counter she just shooting I know she's just scaring them because if she really wanted to shot them she would have done that with the first shot. She's actually enjoying this you can see on her face its like she's playing a game and this ice cream is actually very nice I like the crunch next thing tumis dad tries to run out the door she shoots his leg he goes down immediately screaming my dad tries to stop her again.

Lilly: do you want to catch a bullet Mr. Ngidi?

My dad just looks at her scared well I don't blame him her eyes look pretty dark right now. She walks to Tumis dad and pulls him with his ear to her level his just groaning in pain. I don't know if it's the weed or what but this ice cream is going in I go get myself a spoon and start eating looking at Lilly. She points the gun on his face still pulling his ear.

Lilly: do you now know who I am?

He just nods his head fast.

Lilly: use your words.

Him: yes I know I know...

He says ready to cry.

Lilly: now what did you say about my husband?

He just starts crying uncle Joe is just looking at Lilly with his eyes popped out.

T dad: I'm sorry...

Lilly: no no no.... Remember you had the balls to talk shit about my husband maybe I should just blow them off since they give you too much power right.

She says moving the gun to his balls he cries even louder pleading with her my dad is just looking at her with eyes popping uncle Joe has his hands over his head with his jaw hanging Tumis mom is crying hysterically my aunts just keep picking hiding behind the wall, okay this is going far now maybe I should stop her but neah I did say I'm staying out of this one. Next thing she pulls the trigger I just close my eyes I don't want to see balls blow up only to find that the gun is empty.

Lilly: lucky you should thank uncle Joe for his prayers.

She then lets him go and walks away then she turns to look at Tumis mom.

Lilly: your time is coming.

She says pointing at her with her spoon what's with her and spoons these days she always has one with her. She then walks away I know she is going to the bedroom. I follow her and find her taking off her clothes first thing I see is her thick ass its looks bigger and her hips look wider she really looks very sexy plus the white lace underwear is really doing her justice I walk to her and wrap my arms around her my hand lands on her small bump I kiss her neck and she tilts her head to give me excess I kiss her softly while I run my hands on her body I turn her around she looks up at me she's really beautiful she removes my shirt and I take off her bra her boobs look bigger I touch them gently and squeeze them.

Her: not too hard they painful.

Me: I'm sorry.

I bend down and grab her ass and pick her up she wraps her legs around me she still has her beautiful eyes on me I walk to the bed and gently put lay her I take off her thong and take off my jeans with my boxers I get on top of her today I just want to bury myself in her and make sweet love to her. I kiss her slowly and loose myself in the kiss I really love her she's my everything I pull out the kiss and look at her as I push myself inside her wet minky she moans softly as she still has her eyes on mine I also groan I sneak my arm around her waist as I push in deeper she squeezes my shoulders and my body shivers to her touch I make slow love to her she ends up crying on my chest I would give the world to this woman I love her with my whole being. We end up cuddling with her singing until I hear her stomach grumbles I go get us food since we didn't have dinner the house is dead quiet when I walk in the kitchen I find uncle Joe busy dishing up for himself. I join him and dish up for me and Lilly his just quiet its unlike him I think his still taken back about what happened earlier. We

spend the whole night making love until she gets tired and sleep.

Today juice called me since his in KZN with the twins so we decided to go to kasi at a chisanyama joint with some of our old friends we haven't seen in a while. The vibe is nice and cool we just finished eating now we just drinking beer talking about the old days and laughing I haven't had boys night out in a while this is really refreshing. Lilly called to check on me I told her I'm still with the guys it's around 9pm she was cool with it and we not having a wild night it's just a relaxed night even the dj is playing chilled music. There is a table next to us its girls and some of my friends are entertaining them me and juice are the only ones who are not into them some did try to get our attention I told them to fuck off so we good as I'm busy talking to my boy Tummy next to me Biggy pokes me I look at him he points with his eyes to another direction I look there my jaw drops immediately as the Khumalo babies walk in looking all sorts of sexy it's my Lilly and her sisters and her three cousins who look like models

facially the all look alike but Lilly looks more white then colored. She is wearing a short black jumpsuit which has lace detailing with gold heels her hair is braided nicely, for some reason they look like they walking in slow motion everyone has their eyes on them Shekhinah- Please Mr. starts playing her eyes find mine and she smiles, starts dancing while walking to me she keeps moving her hips and hands and turning around everyone is just looking at her with googly eyes I don't blame them its difficult to take your eyes off her she just dances so beautifully I think I'm blushing even eventually they make it to our table and they look around looking at these girls she then comes to sit on my lap and kisses me softly I feel my dick jerk and pull out the kiss.

Me: you look beautiful Mrs. Ngidi.

She looks down and blushes I kiss her pink cheeks. Her sister gives her a mini cooler box she opens it and takes out her ice-cream and spoon.

Me: Lilly I thought we talked about you wearing heels you know how your feet get.

She chooses to ignore me and greet Juicy who has both the twins on his lap I really don't know how he does it but they look happy and in love. Honestly the Khumalo babies came with a vibe they even opened a dance floor next to our table they sing to every song and keep dancing the DJ is even hyped his been playing Nigerian music it's like they don't have hip bones their waists are loose even Lilly she doesn't even look pregnant you can tell that some people want to move to our table but we not having that even these girls with us they are behaving no one is being bitchy it's just a great vibe. The song just finished and they about to sit down but the DJ switched to old school Kwaito they just started screaming and went back to dance to say I'm surprised it's an understatement they know how to dance pantsula they look Trompis I don't even know how they can move their feet like that with heels on Ulwazi is even whistling everyone is cheering them on they really having fun Juice even joined them well his a kasi boy so there is no surprise there. Overall the

night was a jump from now on when I go out I'm going to make sure the Khumalo babies are there.

We came back to Johannesburg and we just left the hospital since it was her check up I'm so excited she is carrying twins and the doctor said she must slow down on the ice cream I don't know how I'm going to work that one out but I will make a plan. We now sitting at a restaurant we having lunch and I'm so happy I don't know what to do with myself I just keep looking at her and thanking God she's really amazing. As we sitting enjoying our food over a silly conversation we get disturbed by someone I haven seen in years.

.....: Max is that you?!

She says walking towards me she looks nice and grown I stand and give her a friendly hug I'm just amazed.

Me: wow Fiona look at you.

I say looking at her she's really grown we meet in the streets me, her and Bongs we were close we were always together and hustled together and

one day she just disappeared we looked for her and we never found her.

Fiona: it's been like what? Over 10 years?

Me: yea please sit and join us for lunch, this is my lovely wife Lilly.

Fiona: oh you married..

Me: yea a lot happened when you were gone. Lilly this is an old friend of mine Fiona.

Lilly: hey nice to meet you.

She says looking at Fiona. We have a catch up conversation while Lilly is just concentrating on her food well that's Lilly for you, eventually we leave later Fiona and I exchanged numbers we will hang out another time. When we get home Lilly goes straight to sleep I go to my office and catch up on some work later I go check on Lilly she's still sleeping so I order dinner for us as I'm sitting on the counter going through my phone a call comes through I don't know this number but I answer anyway.

Me: hello.

...: Hi Max its Fiona I hope you got home safe.

Me: oh... hi yeah sure and you?

Her: yes but I'm staying at a hotel I need to get myself a place.

Me: I actually have a place you can use while you look I know how it can get tiring looking for a place.

Her: thank you so much you such a life savor.

Me: you welcome I'll text you a restaurant tomorrow where we can meet up or I'll send you my current address you can come fetch the keys.

Her: okay I'll wait for the text.

Me: okay I have to go now bye.

Her: oh....ok bye.

The food arrives I go wake up Lilly which is a mission she's been sleeping for too long now and she needs to feed my kids next week she is going back to work so I'll be working from home until then. After we done eating we watch her movies until she falls asleep. Nothing much has been

happening I've been hanging out with Fiona she moved in my bachelor pad since I don't use it anymore plus it's a temporary thing Lilly made it clear that she doesn't like her and she doesn't like that I'm friends with her but I think it's just she doesn't like a lot of people Fiona is harmless turns out she was a victim of human trafficking and she managed to escape and went back to school now she works in marketing so she decided to come back home I guess I did have Biggy look into her and she is clean. I'm in my office with Juice we just finished our meeting when Fiona calls to tell me she is in the neighborhood so she is going to pass by I have no problem.

Juice: Max I don't like your new friend I think it's best you stay away from her I think she's bad news.

Me: not you too Juice I come far with her she's cool maybe if you could hang out with you'll see.

Juice: are you that blind Max?

Me: okay now you loosing me.

Juice: that chick likes you everyone can see it except you.

Me: you are just seeing things I'm not even interested in her like that she's like a little sister and she knows I love Lilly and I'm married.

He shakes his head.

Juice: I'm warning you Max that girl is going to bring problems between you and Lilly.

Me: I don't think so.

Juice: uhmmm... let me leave I don't want to see her.

He says standing up I walk him out and go check on Lilly and she's sleeping I kiss her and she moves mumbling whatever I let her be she's always sleeping I leave her and go back downstairs the security calls to tell me Fiona is here I let her in she's been here before and Lilly made it very clear that she hates her so I hope she doesn't stay long or she will upset Lilly and I don't want that. She knocks I go open for her we walk in the kitchen she

sits on the high chair while I get her something to drink.

Me: so you where doing what in the neighborhood?

Fiona: I was dropping off some papers to a client.

Me: okay.

Fiona: you know I still can not believe that Bongs died and you married I never pictured you married at all.

Me: well truth is I also never pictured myself married until Lilly came along.

Fiona: she really doesn't like me.

Me: no she doesn't but don't take it personal she's not a people's person so she dislikes a lot of people.

Fiona: I'm actually hungry don't you have something I can eat.

Me: I can make you a sandwich I cant cook for shits Lilly does that.

Fiona: let me cook maybe that can put me in her good books.

Me: well... that's worth a try.

I say shrugging my shoulders she gets up I show her were everything is I gave her a apron she is cooking stew and rice we just talking about general things.

Fiona: come taste.

Me: I still don't trust your cooking.

Fiona: come on Max.

Me: fine

I stand and walk around I get next to her she takes a spoon and takes out a piece of meat from the pot she directs the spoon to my mouth I open and eat it well it's not bad but Lilly's stew is much more juicy and mouthwatering I cant say that to her so after I swallow.

Me: it's okay.

Fiona: just okay?

Me: yes just okay.

She then looks up at me for a while I look at her I think her one eye is smaller than the other suddenly she smashes her lips on mine I just freeze she bits my lower lip what is happening and suddenly I feel chest pains I pull out and hold my chest when I turn my head I find Lilly standing on the bottom stairs looking at us. Fuck fuck now how do I explain this she doesn't take her eyes off mine they look glossy.

Me: Fiona I think it's best you leave.

I say calmly still looking at Lilly I see a tear drop my chest feels like someone is squeezing my lungs in she turns and walks back up.

Me: Fiona why are you still here?

I turn and look at her right now I just want to snap her neck.

Fiona: look Max I.... I.... Love you I always have please.

Me: Fiona if you don't walk out that door I will drag you.

Fiona: Max ple....

I just grabbed her hair and pull her out she screaming and crying and kicking I don't care I'm so pissed at myself right now I throw her out the gate and walk back when I get to my door those chest pains hit me hard I bend holding my chest I feel a lump on my throat my stomach turns I know its Lilly I only feel like this when she is crying or hurting emotionally. I pull myself together and go up to our room I hear the shower running I sit on the bed and bury my head in my hands. How can I be so stupid she told me multiple times to stay away from her even juice warned me but I didn't listen and my wife is hurting and it's all my fault I keep rubbing my chest fuck it's so painful I start to hit it with my fist as I feel like its closing in then I hear a loud sob coming from the bathroom I jump up and run in there I find her in the shower on her knees and her hand on her chest her cry is so painful I feel my tears fall out I wipe them then I close the water and pick her up she holds me tight and cries painfully on my shoulder.

Me: I'm sorry...

I say as my voice is failing me I put her gently on the bed and take off my clothes I open the blankets and get in with her I pull her close to me she's still crying and this is hurting me my tears come out again why didn't I listen. I hold her tightly she cries herself to sleep she even has hiccups. I just stay up looking at the ceiling asking myself why didn't I listen to my wife when she spoke to me since when do I put someone before her I don't even put myself before her. I fall asleep eventually I'm woken up by her wiggling in my arms I tighten my grip around her she stops moving.

Me: Lilly I'm so sorry.

I say softly I still have chest pains she doesn't say anything.

Her: I need to pee.

She says her voice is barely there I let her go she goes to the bathroom then I hear the shower going on I get out of bed and I fix it and go to the bathroom I brush my teeth and wash my face then go to the kitchen I throw out all the food Fiona cooked I even throw the pots I then make her a few

sandwiches and tea I see her come down her face looks pink and swollen my heart breaks seeing her like that I swallow my lump and look down and continue making her food she goes in front of the tv and watches her cartoons. I place her food on a tray and take it to her she looks at me I move my eyes elsewhere she takes the food and eats watching TV I keep glancing at her when she's done I take her plate and put it in the sink she then walks out the sliding door I sigh I feel my phone vibrate I look at it I see a message it's from Fiona she is confessing her love for me I didn't even finish reading it I just blocked her number I click my tongue annoyed I go to shower when I'm done look for Lilly I find her sleeping on a pool chair under a shade I pick her up and take her to bed I then sit on a chair and look at her sleeping her eyes still look swollen.

The past three days have been nothing but hell for me Lilly doesn't say a word to me she doesn't stay in one room with me for too long the only time she is close to me is when we sleeping even then I have to wait for her to fall asleep first so that I can hold

her she doesn't want me to hold her or be anywhere close to her. Last night I broke down our bedroom door she locked me out and all I could hear is her sobbing behind the closed door it was so painful I just broke down the door I found her on the floor curled up hugging her knees crying that sight still haunts me I've never seen her broken like this I only know my Lilly and the crazy Lilly not this one. I miss her so much I'm not coping at all not receiving her love and affection has my mind all over the place I tried going to work the other day to give her space when I got to work I spend the whole day biting everyone's head off I couldn't concentrate on anything so whoever came my way received all my frustrations by lunch time everyone in the whole building was tense and walking on egg shells around me when I got home I expected to see my happy Lilly ready to feed me and give me love but sad reality hit me hard.

Right now we currently at the mall she asked the guard to take her but I decided to take her and she still hasn't said a word to me I don't know what to do. I'm walking behind her pushing the trolley she

keeps throwing whatever in I'm just looking at how beautiful she is I want to wrap my arms around her stupid boys keep looking at her they want to try their luck the moment they see my face they turn around quickly which is good or someone will definitely die in this shop. As I'm walking behind her she stops and I stop a few feet from her she's busy looking at spices my phone vibrates I pull it out its juice two days ago I told him to feed the Thailands and make sure they clean and nice today I'm killing them I've already send all their children to orphanages I separated them and cleaned all their accounts I opened trust funds for them so when they older they will receive the money to start their lives but obviously they will never find out what happened to their families even if they tried tracing the money back it will point to their parents nothing will come back to me or South Africa as I'm busy standing leaning on the trolley texting Juice I hear some commotion I look up and see Lilly slap some chick so hard she hits the spice shelf and it falls over hitting the next shelf then the next then the next

next I hear a scream I look back at Lilly she has this chick by her hair pulling her I stand straight as I go to her to stop her she kicks her face I see blood and teeth flying then I see its Fiona's face now I know that I'm not going to interfere with this because I'm sure Fiona approached her and said something that pissed her off I go back to the trolley and look at my Lilly do her thing I don't know when and how but Fiona is naked and Lilly is whipping her with something that looks like a white wire Fiona is screaming and kicking around the floor and Lilly is whipping her hard she's not even giving her a chance her body is covered with strip marks some are bleeding people are just looking at Lilly none of them want to come anywhere close to her I don't blame them she looks very scary I look over and see the police walking towards the crowd I go to Lilly and hold her hand as she was about to hit her I take her weapon and she let's me she's breathing heavily looking all sorts of red and has two veins popping on her forehead I pick her up and walk out the mall the security tried to stop me I gave them one deadly look and they moved out

my way I got at the parking I just went to the guards car I don't feel like driving us home so he drives out I pull out my phone and call Biggy.

Biggy: Max.

Me: I just left the mall with Lilly please clear the footage we were never there.

Biggy: what did you do?

Me: hai just do as I say.

Biggy: it's fine I look at the footage myself.

Me: mxm.

I hang up and look over at Lilly who has her head leaning on the window looking outside. I miss my wife I really need to fix this she can not be fight stupid girls because of me hopefully Fiona learned her lesson because next time she will deal with me and when that happens she will definitely die. We walk in and she goes straight up to our room I sigh and follow her I find her undressing then she goes shower I sit on the bed and wait for her. When she comes out she lotions and puts on a baggy shirt.

Me: Lilly

She turns and looks at me now I wish I didn't call her because she looks very intimidating .

Me: I'm sorry.

She just looking at me I feel like she can see my soul.

Me: please say something I cant take the silent treatment its killing me.

I say softly.

Her: what exactly do you want me to say?

Me:.....

Her: you know Max what hurts me about this situation is not the fact that she kissed you it's the fact that I come to realize that my emotions are not valid to you.

My heart breaks.

Me: you my wife Lilly your feelings are valid and you know that.

Her: no I thought I knew that but clearly I was over exaggerating my place in your life. I voiced out my concerns about that friend of yours I told you

exactly how I feel about her and your relationship with her I specifically told you to stay away from her and what did you do?

I just look down ashamed.

Her: not only did you ignore my feelings but you decided to disrespect me by bringing her in our home knowing very well how I feel worse you put her in my kitchen in my apron and cook my food. Max you don't respect me, you don't see me.

Me: I do respect you Lilly yes I was wrong I should've listened and I didn't I'm sorry.

Her: your sorry does nothing for me Max now you gave that girl the power to talk to me like I'm her mate. You gave her the platform to think that she actually has a chance with you. Not once have I ever made another man think he can take your place in my life even Amu knows that but now your friend has the balls to tell me your wife to stay away from you my husband because you gave her that space now I have to fight stupid bimbos in public because you disregard my feelings.

I rub my head frustrated because she's right had I listened to her and put Fiona in her place this wouldn't be happening. I look at her she's standing in front of me. Her thighs look so thick and appetizing Gosh I miss touching her so much.

Me: I will fix it I promise and I'll make sure she moves out the pad.

Her: sorry??

Fuck I close my eyes I never told her that I allowed Fiona to stay in the pad.

Her: you did what??

Me: I'm sorry I didn't tell you I forgot I let her stay at pad because she's looking for a place to stay its was just a temporary thing.

She chuckles shaking her head her eyes change this is not good. She starts pointing at me still chuckling and shaking her head.

Me: Lilly...

She walks out fast I sigh out loud why am I so stupid? I walk out when I get down I see my sports car driving out fast shit shit I run out and jump in

my car I follow her she drives really fast she passes a closed robot fast leaving two cars colliding with each other fuck I move through the cars and take a short cut I know she is going to my pad eventually I get there and find my car parked by the door I run in I take the elevator I feel like it's slow when it opens I'm welcomed by screams coming from my pad for fuck sakes what is she doing to her I try to open the door and its locked I start kicking it in it busts open and she has a sjambok in her hand and Fiona on the floor covered in tears her clothes are torn caused by the sjambok she immediately turns to look at me and I see red she's really going to kill me today is my day I'm dead.

Me: Lilly please let me get her out of here there's no need for this.

Her: oh... so you still want to help her??

Me:....

Eish... she starts walking towards me slowly I take steps back I swear today I'm going to die.

Her: Max.... Remember what I said about getting a woman close to you?

Me: yes I remember.

I hit the wall which is across my door why I'm I so scared.

Her: what did I say?

Me: that you will fuck me up if I allow any woman close to me.

Her: and what did you do?.

Gosh this short person really looks scary

Me: I'm sorry...

I didn't finish that sentence I felt a burning sensation on my arm did she just hit me with her sjambok as I'm trying to process what's going on I feel another one followed by another my anger shots up I grab her hand as she was about to hit me again I look down at.

Me: are you crazy?!

Her: fuck you Max!

I wish she didn't say that I grab both her shoulders and pick her up to my height her face looks all sorts of red.

Her: put me down! This is all your fault!

I shake her then remember she's pregnant I stop then I feel a shooting pain on my balls I let her go immediately and hold my balls groaning in pain she kicked my balls hard as I'm concentrating on my painful balls I feel a stinging pain on my back followed by another she is busy whipping me fuck this is painful I hold the sjambok as she was about to whip me again the pain stings on my hand I stand up and look at her the way I'm so pissed right now if she was someone else I would've killed her in a heartbeat but because it's her I can't do that. I grab her hand and pull her to my chest I can feel her body shaking with anger seeing her like this hurts me because she's right it's all my fault. She's looking up at me.

Me: I'm sorry Lilly ..

I say softly her tears run down her cheeks my chest starts to hurt her anger is replaced by pain I

wipe her tears with my free hand then I gasped as I feel pain on my abdomen.

Her: I'm also sorry.

She says in a shaking voice I look down I see she has her hand holding a knife that is deep into my stomach I see a lot of blood coming out I look back at her. Her eyes look beautiful I bend down to her face I groan as I feel the pain in my stomach but I don't care I kiss her lips softly finally the past few days that's all I've been craving to do just kiss her suddenly I feel like gasping for air I pull out the kiss and look at her she still has her eyes closed with tears coming out I look down and she has pulled out the knife she really wants me dead hey the blood is now coming out fast I slowly drop on my knees she holds me and lays me gently on the floor facing up I look on my side and people are just looking at us shocked I look back at Lilly its difficult breathing if she thinks I'm dying then she has another thing coming because I'm not going anywhere she then kisses my forehead and stands

up walking away I look at her walking away she looks blurry now I close my eyes as I feel drowsy.

I woken up by a beeping sound I try to open my eyes but I'm struggling eventually they open but the light is too bright I blink a couple of times and I look around my eyes move to my doctor who is standing on my side with a tablet his busy touching it his looking down then I remember what happened it all comes back flooding in my brain I close my eyes and sigh Lilly is really crazy its official she's crazy but I still love her and I miss her, her lips were so soft when I kissed her it felt like it was the first time I kiss her. I open my eyes and clear my throat the doctor looks up at me and he comes to remove this oxygen mask.

Me: water..

My throat feels so dry he helps me drink then he does his check up on me which I find annoying.

Doctor: Mr. Ngidi how are you feeling?

Me: like I've been hit by truck. How long have I been here?

Doctor: well three days and when you got here you were stabbed and lost a lot of blood lucky the knife didn't do much damage even though it was pretty deep don't worry you'll live.

Me: okay thank you.

Doctor: you and your wife need to stop meeting with me like this.

I chuckle.

Me: I hear you Doc but we like seeing you.

Doctor: just take me out for lunch when you miss me.

Me: I'll discuss that with my wife.

Doctor: well you healing just fine you might be out of here sooner than I thought let me get you something to eat.

Me: okay thank you again.

Doctor: don't worry about.

He walks out and I lay there thinking about Lilly I hope she comes to see me as I'm lost in my thoughts juice and the rest of the crew walk in I

look at them why are they silent looking at me weirdly.

Me: what??

I ask irritated by their stares then they bust out laughing they continue laughing holding their stomach and crying the nurse walks in with my food looking at them like they are crazy.

Me: don't mind them thank you.

She then walks out slowly looking at them I slowly start eating the food it's so tasteless but I'm hungry so I cant complain. They finally cool down and look at me.

Bozza: I really respect Bozzayam I will never get on her wrong side.

I look at him.

Bozza: don't look at me like that we saw the footage from your old apartment with Bozzayam blessing you with her sjambok.

Me: that's why yall are laughing so much?

Juice: oh... believe me you would also laugh if you saw yourself on the floor getting a beating of your lifetime.

You know Lilly really hurt my ego but I cant be mad about it because it's her. But it's fine I'll just fuck her till kingdom come.

Me: how did I end up here anyway because she left me to die that I know.

Juice: she just called me and told me you got stabbed and I must come take you to the hospital when I got there the paramedics where already there taking you and Fiona left what actually happened that lead you two fighting like that?

I sigh because I know his going to say I told you so. I tell them what happened from Fiona cooking in my kitchen to us driving to my pad by the time I'm done they all mad at me judging by their faces.

Juice: you are stupid Max I told you about that girl of yours I really wish Lilly had stabbed you a couple of times.

Me: yea I know I fucked up I need to get back home to her she cant be by her self with her condition at the moment.

He frowns.

Juice: what condition?

Me: she's pregnant.

They all exclaimed.

Bozza: so you did all this nonsense while she is pregnant?

I nod my head ashamed.

Juice: you the definition of stupid what would've happened had she miscarried because of you.

Now that I think about it fuck I can't hurt her like this I would kill myself if something happened to my winegums because of me.

Bozza: wow Max I didn't expect such from you you really disappointed us.

Me: I'll fix everything I know I fucked up.

Juice: I hope so because she hasn't set a foot here ever since you got admitted and your Fiona also disappeared into thin air.

I sigh when a person disappears into thin air it's never a good sign I know she will come back and it won't be good. Later they leave I told Juice to kill the Thailands since I'm here now and when I leave here I want to fix things with my wife so I don't have time for them and I've held them hostage for too long. Days pass and I just got discharged Juice will be taking me home I haven't seen Lilly I miss her so much my wound has healed but you can see the wound is fresh since the stitches were removed yesterday. Juice arrives and we leave he drops me off and I walk in I see my Lilly wearing my shirt dancing in the kitchen eating and humming a song I smile and walk in slowly I wrap my arm around her and she jumps frightened.

Me: relax it's just me.

I say softly she turns around and kisses me deeply I drop my bag and pick her up she wraps her legs around me I walk to the couch and lay her gently I

feel her hands sneak up under my shirt I get goosebumps from her touch she pulls up my shirt I take off my pants while I'm still kissing her then I tear the shirt she's wearing her boobs look bigger I look at her all I see is lust I want her just as much I don't even want foreplay I get between her thighs my eyes are locked with hers I rub my dick on her very wet minky she opens her legs wider I slide in gently she gasps with tears running down her sides I wrap both my arms around her and bury my head on her neck I start to move slowly as I take in her scent her soft sweet moans drive me crazy I nibble on her neck and make sweet love this is I'm sorry sex it's all about hitting all her right spots so I take my time and give her slow long thrusts her legs shake as she has her third orgasm and I'm still at it we then both come together and I stay inside her I can't put all my weight on her I will crush my winegums so I flip us over and have her on top I'm still inside her. She looks down at my wound and run her finger on it.

Her: I'm sorry

She says with glossy eyes I hold both her hands.

Me: no no MaNgidi I'm the one who is sorry I fucked up badly I made you doubt your place in my heart and you had every right to be hurt and angry so do not apologize for my fuck ups please just please let me work on earning your forgiveness and trust again I promise I will never put you in such a situation ever again.

She just nods her head with tears coming out I wipe them with my hands.

Me: now tell me how are my winegums? I hope you've been playing far from the ice-cream.

I say brushing her cute bump she giggles first and I know she is going to lie to me.

Her: I haven't had ice-cream since I stabbed you.

Me: why are you lying?

She giggles again my heart warms up I haven't see her like this in a while.

Her: what makes you think I'm lying?

Me: you busy giggling and you only do that when you about to lie.

Her: haaa... I don't do that.

Me: okay so tell me when was the last time you had ice-cream?

She giggles

Her: hao I just told...

She stops and makes her weird face she realizes that I'm right about her giggling when she's about to lie she then comes down to my chest I just chuckle she's adorable.

LILLY

Last two months have been busy I went back to work I just started working with Amu shame his so smitten by me it's so cute and sad another thing is he smells bad I cant stand it every time he walks in a room I just walk out I avoid him but that needs to stop because I have to learn a few things from him. Finally Juicy was able to pay lobola for the twins they even did their ceremonies it was just beautiful dad gave them a hard time he really

didn't want them to marry him he said it's just taboo for two sisters to agree to marry one man he hated the idea until the twins told him that if he doesn't do right by them they will just move in with Juicy since they've applied to complete their residency in Joburg and it was approved plus Owami really came through for them when I asked her how did dad change his mind so suddenly she said handcuffs and stripper pole did the trick I couldn't believe she said that I honestly don't want a image of my parents having sex its disturbing. Truth is daddy is worried about our safety at least he knows Max is capable of taking care of me that's why he didn't give him much of a problem and since he doesn't know Juicy that much plus looking at Juicy you can undermine him because of his character his a goofy kasi guy even though he has a muscular body his just too playful but Juicy is just as ruthless as Max you can never say his an assassin just like dad he actually has much more in common with Juicy than Max, on the other hand Owami is more concerned about our happiness whatever makes us happy she's for it. Two weeks

ago they officially moved in some as Mrs. Juicy and we always go out for dates it's nice having them around at least I get to do girl things plus they spoil me rotten, they did their photoshoot with Alex for the lingerie well I didn't take part in it since I'm pregnant but that inspired her to start a line for pregnant women so I'll be modeling that in a few months Juicy was there for the photoshoot it was fun seeing him cheering on his wives he turned the photoshoot into whatever that was happening in his head it was just cute to watch my sisters were a blushing mess but the photographer managed to get great pictures some were goofy blame it on Juicy he was even in some pictures I don't know how he became the Male model but it worked out pretty nice.

I'm on my way to work with Max since his my driver my bump is bigger but you still can't see it when I'm dressed up plus now I don't wear my tight clothes my dresses are loose and I always have a blazer on but I definitely did put on some weight so Max has taken a decision that I will not take stairs anymore since he says it's too much

pressure on his winegums right now our biggest fight is my high heels and ice-cream I will not stop wearing high heels unless if I have too I'm a short person so I really need the extra height so that people don't look down on me especially these men already gossip about me and Amu is going around the office I'm happy that we both mature enough to not even entertain it. We make it at work and Max comes to open the door for me I step out holding his hand he already has my handbag and laptop bag on his other hand we walk in with people looking at us we get to the elevator and he picks me up I hide my face on his neck with my eyes shut and hold him tightly I feel him walk.

Him: what would you like for lunch today?

Me: your dick.

He chuckles.

Him: anything else?

Me: nando's hot chicken and their garlic rolls.

Him: okay I'll come personally this time since you want my dick as well.

I giggle. I feel him walk and he puts me down I open my eyes and see Kagiso walking out the elevator with that HR lady who hates me I forgot her name they both look at me weirdly I think they were in the elevator with us so they heard our conversation well that's not my problem he walks me to Amu's office he kisses me and leaves well that's how my mornings are like since he doesn't allow me to take the stairs. Few minutes later Amu walks in I close my eyes as I smell him I gag a little I open my eyes his looking at me weirdly. His wife walks in behind him this one I still have to teach her a lesson not to mess with me she puts her hand on him seductively and she kisses him I gag again cant she smell him? He pulls out the kiss and looks at me again I just shake my head and go back to my work.

Amu: Bongiwe I have to work can you please come around lunch time?

Bongiwe: but baby I'll be bored at home you know our son is at daycare.

She whines my God do we really sound like this when we insecure I just zone them out and continue with my work until I smell Amu who is now standing behind me looking at my PC I frown and look at him.

Amu: what's wrong Lilly?

Me: you stink

I say blocking my nose he smells himself frowning.

...: my husband doesn't smell

I turn to look at her I thought she left.

Me: why are you still here again?

I see her breathing heavy I start packing my things I'm not going to work in this smelly office.

Amu: where are you going?

Me: away from you I'm really trying to keep my breakfast down and your stinky self is not helping.

Bongiwe: stop insulting my husband or I put you in the lift again.

I turn and look at her.

Me: I would like to see you try.

I say calmly smiling at her I wish she could come closer plus my hand is itchy.

Amu: Bongiwe stop it! Go home I want to work you disturbing me.

Bongiwe: can you not see she is trying to come between us? She wants you.

Me: huh?

I say with a frown is she insane what will I do with stinky Amu? I just take my things and walk out but Amu stops me.

Me: you really need a shower dude.

Amu: please stay I'll go shower and come back okay.

I nod my head and Bongiwe looks shit angry I don't care. I go back to my desk and Amu leaves dragging angry Bongiwe with him I just continue working Amu comes back and we work great together his really enjoying working with me and I just enjoy getting the knowledge later lunch time comes and my Max walks in looking sexy as ever I

stand up grinning and run into his arms he hugs me tightly swinging me in the air with one hand he puts me down and greets a now grumpy looking Amu who walks out furiously we sit on the couch for a bit then suddenly I crave his dick I just want to lick it I start touching it and brushing it slowly and his getting hard which gets me excited.

Max: eat your lunch my winegums are starving.

Me: stand up.

he stands up right in front of me I start taking off his belt then we hear the door opening I move my head and look behind him its Amu his frozen at the door.

Me: I'm trying to have lunch would you like to sit in and watch me eat?

Max chuckles he is still frozen on the same spot he then walks out. I go back to my meal I put my hand inside his pants and pull out his dick I look at it and drool a little I start to lick the tip like a ice cream cone then I take him in my mouth I hear him groan my heart melts same time I suck him like my life

depends on it eventually he shoots his cum in my throat and I swallow it I take the serviettes and clean him up we than have our lunch over a silly conversation when we done he leaves as his rushing to some meeting I go back to work well Amu never came back and later I went home.

Its been a week now and I've been having an unsettling feeling I keep calling Max every 10 minutes and his really annoyed by me because it's like im paranoid I swear something is going on I keep checking on SamSam on all the gangs just to make sure no one is coming for us but nothing everything looks fine and its frustrating me because I know nothing is fine. Today is Friday and I'm knocking off early Max told me the guards will take me home because he has to attend some meeting with one of his clients I've been restless ever since I walked in this office I called Owami and she prayed over the phone but no man I still feel the same I called the twins and they feel it too. I continue working trying to get my mind off whatever that is going on, later I leave when I get home I go shower and get started on dinner I tried

calling Max and it took me straight to voicemail I took my laptop and start looking at my club and the Numbers company but I cant concentrate I call Max again but it's still the same thing I call Juicy maybe they together but it also takes me to voicemail I try everyone in his gang all their phones are off okay now I'm shit worried I call Zizi. The moment she picks up I just sob over the phone.

Zizi: Entle I'm coming stop crying.

She sounds like she is running it's now around 7PM the door busts open Zizi and Nono walk in still in their work clothes looking like they've been running a marathon.

Nono: Entle what's wrong?

Me: they all disappeared and their trackers have been removed.

I say teary.

Zizi: who are you talking about?

Me: Max and the gang all their phones are off I don't know what to do.

They both freeze looking at me with my tears coming out Nono pulls out her phone and calls who ever.

Nono: fuck!

She says frustrated Zizi sits down slowly with glossy eyes.

Nono: Nthombenhle this is not the time for crying you need to pull yourself together and we have to find them we cant loose our husbands we just got married.

She says looking at crying Zizi and me well Nono has always been the one who motivates us I know she will cry later but now she is the strong one. I wipe my tears because I know she is right.

Me: okay let's do this.

I take my laptop and try to trace them but they all just got kidnapped and disappeared into thin air their trackers are thrown in the last place they were at and they all were at work or meeting with a client I already know it's a set up. Every client they were meetings are from Rome this doesn't

make sense at all what do the Roman want with Max and his gang yes I know he runs Rome but he they've never given him problems before now what is this?.

Zizi: you see this is the time where Owamis trackers come in handy.

I shoot my head at her. I remember Max got one I don't know about juice.

Me: Lucky us Owami gave Max one I don't know if Juicy has his.

Nono: he has it she told me but I forgot to tell Zizi about it.

I open the tracker and it shows that they in North West. I look around the area eventually I manage to get into the cameras of the building they in and looks like an abundant old building but the security is tight honestly it's a good hide out I see the have all of them in a room that has cameras so I think it's their control room then I see her face I cant believe it its stupid Fiona what does she have to do with the Roman's? Anyway I dig deeper into

the past I find that she was sold to one of the Roman's most greedy man and apparently he died of a heart attack and left everything to Fiona who was his wife I can bet my life that she killed him. Now it turns out that she also took over his gang so all those man guarding the building belong to her. What I want to know is why did she take Max and his gang because if she wanted Max she would've taken him alone not everyone. Now I know where they are but getting in is going to be a problem.

Me: I found them.

They both look at me its 2am and we tired.

Nono: okay let's go get them.

Me: that's the problem its not going to be that easy.

Zizi: entle just tell us what are we looking at.

I sigh.

Me: well the place it's an old abundant building the problem is its guarded like a fortress good thing is none of them is hurt everyone looks okay and unharmed but I don't know how long that is going

to last so we need to come up with a solid plan to get them because we cant walk in there guns blazing without a plan we will definitely die within a mile away.

They both sigh.

Zizi: I think it's time we go on our first mission as Khumalo Babies.

Nono: you think we can take them on? Without Owami and dad?

Me: well I think we can they taught us well it's time we spread our wings.

They both look at me and each other.

Nono: okay call them.

Me: Owami and dad can never find out about this.

Zizi: deal.

I take my phone and call Kuhle it rings for a while and he picks up.

Him: did you see the time?.

Me: Kuhle...

I hear him shuffling.

Him: what's wrong Entle? Are the Cubs fine?

That's what they call my babies.

Me: they fine but I need you all here in Johannesburg as in yesterday. Please don't tell Owami and dad about this.

He goes silent for a while.

Him: okay we will be there in a few hours.

Me: thank you.

Him: now get some sleep please you straining our Cubs

I giggle. Then hang up.

Me: okay they will be here in a few hours for now let's sleep there's nothing much we can do.

Nono: okay but you need to eat first you didn't have dinner.

She goes to the kitchen for a while and comes back with the pots we just eat together then later we sleep on my bed they cuddling me in the middle Nono is even brushing my bump from behind Zizis

boobs are just soft if this is how Juicy sleeps then I understand why he married them both this is really nice. I fall asleep immediately.

I'm woken up by noise Zizi and Nono are not in bed I see breakfast on my side my stomach grumbles I sit up and start eating thinking about Max I take my phone and I see his tracker is still green that means his okay I check Juicy and his also good that gives me hope when I'm done eating I get out of bed and start cleaning up I go take a quick shower I wear Max's tracksuits and kicks these people are still making noise I know all the Khumalo babies are here I go down and I find everyone running around in the lounge and kitchen they even made boarders they playing tag I just look at them and smile I swear these ones will never grow up at this age they still play tag screaming and laughing well it is funny because they adults running around jumping my furniture ducking and falling I pull out my phone and take a video of them zizi slips and falls on her ass this one is always falling I don't know if she is clumsy or her feet are just not about

her life we all laugh at her they all turn and look at me.

.....: little one!!

They all scream then run towards me I run back upstairs but Lu grabs me I scream giggling he carries me back down and the tickle me I laugh so much this is not fun I hate it when they do this to me Siyanda has my one Foot Kuhle has the other one they took off my shoes they busy tickling me Lu is holding out my one hand and Lwetho has my other hand Zizi and Nono are working my armpits I laugh while busying wiggling my body so that they can let me go but it's not working I feel myself pee this is embarrassing I start crying they stop immediately:

Ndumiso: Little one what's wrong did we hurt you?

I just cry louder.

Sbusiso: is it the Cubs?

I shake my head crying I don't want to stand up because they will see my mess and I know they will laugh at me.

Kuhle: then what's wrong Nthombi ka Baba?

Me: I peed myself.

I say softly looking down they all silent I look up at them they all looking at me then they bust out laughing my tears come out again I stand up and run up to my room with Zizi and Nono on my tail I just shut the door and lock it. I hear them bagging me to open the door but ignore them and go shower I wear another set of tracksuits then I decide to sleep they gave up knocking on my door thank god Max got it fixed. Later I wake up and I go pee I rinse my mouth and wash my face I go open the door I find all of them sitting on my door with laptops and papers they all look up at me.

Nthando: we are very sorry Nthombi ka Baba Nono explained to us that we cant tickle you like that when you pregnant.

I just look at him.

Nkosi: oh...come on little one you cant be mad at us for too long you know we have work to do.

His right I spend half the day sleeping when I should be looking for my husband.

Me: fine I forgive you but you all know my forgiveness comes at a price.

Kuhle: anything for you.

I smile.

Siyanda: kunle why would you say that? You know very well her favors are not easy.

I pass them they all follow me I go to the kitchen I find cooked food thank god I warm it up and go join them in the lounge.

Ndumiso: okay Entle Zizi and Nono filled us in on what's happening and you were right that place is like a fortress getting in will not be easy.

Me: so were you able to come up with a solid plan?

Luthando: I say we can take them on so let's go in guns blazing.

Siyanda: true but those are not just guards they are trained well so just 11 of us going in will be suicide mission actually 10 of us because Entle cant be on the field.

I frown his crazy I'm going to get my man and he wont stop me. Then I see Hlehle standing behind Siyanda.

Hlehle: you can go take him it's okay I'll protect the babies plus you have the Ngidi ancestors protecting you as well so I'm giving you the green light.

Me: are you sure?

Hlehle: yes Entle I'll be there with you like the last time.

Me: okay thank you.

Hlehle: but yall need to hurry up you running out of time. I'm trying to keep them safe but that woman is going to kill them and take Max so stop playing around

She disappeared then I realize they looking at me weirdly.

Zizi: was that Hlehle?

Me: yes

Siyanda: who is that?

Nono: her dead twin.

I told Zizi and Nono about Nobuhle and they cool with her.

Kuhle: I don't understand.

Zizi explains everything to them and they just shocked.

Me: guys we don't have time we need to start moving at least tonight we should have a plan and go get them Hlehle said we running out of time.

Zizi: okay can I have their organs we need them.

We all look at her weirdly then it clicks.

Me: are you two the Blue twins?

Zizi and Nono look at each other then back at me.

Zizi&Nono: Huh?

They both say with high voices I cant believe it why didn't I see it? The Blue twins are underworld

doctors not just any doctors but they perform major surgeries legal and illegal ones and sell organs and illegal drugs/medications on the black market no one knows them or have even seen them I don't know how exactly they get clients but apparently they just send you a location and I don't know but they take you and fix you then bring you back when you healthy and fine.

Me: don't HuH me it's you two now everything makes sense.

Nkosi: okay since we taking out secrets I'm Stones.

Fuck no! We all exclaimed. Well Stones is a jewelry thief any diamond, gold, Pearl's etc. you name it he has it not only does he steal jewelry but he also sells it obviously I'm talking expensive pieces. He even has successful jewelry company called Stones where he supplies jewelry shops with materials they need.

Me: wow.

Kuhle: I'm Silence.

We all turn to look at him with jaws dropped honestly I'm not surprised by this one his always been into snipers and his a professional sniper well the name comes from how he kills its clean and you never expect it and he never misses all his targets died with one bullet between their eyes basically his a contract killer if you looking for fast clean and untraceable his your guy.

Siyanda: okay the rest of us are the KK Table

Zizi: wait ... you mean you, ndumiso, sbusiso, Luthando, Nthando and Lusanda are thee KK Table?

Ndumiso: yes.

Well the KK Table are a gang or let's say a group or members I don't know what to call them but they don't do small crimes they steal very expensive things cars, gold, ships, trucks airplanes etc. basically they slowly taking over and most gangs are looking for them they either want to sit on the Table or they really want to take them out since some now answer to them this is just wow I never knew my siblings are this busy.

Nthando: and you Entle what's your story?

Me: huh?

I say with my high pitch voice.

Siyanda: hai Nthombi ka Baba we all know here you've been busy but we want to know with what exactly.

Zizi: I say she's a IT guru I've seen her work.

Nono: I agree with you plus Owami taught her how to work the PC well.

Kuhle: nope I think she's using IT to her advantage she's something else.

They all looking at me with their aliens eyes its creepy.

Me: would you all stop you going to give me nightmares.

Sbusiso: then tell us.

Me: fine how about I show you.

I stand up they follow me I go to Max's office his desk has this button I installed when I press it it opens a secret door behind the shelf then it has to

scan my hand and eyes then it opens we walk in and you welcomed by a wall covered by screens and there are three laptops connected to them it looks like high tech shit in here on the other wall is my knives placed nicely I go sit in front of the laptops and switch on one and it automatically opens the other.

SamSam: welcome Madusa.

They all scream shouting different things in excitement I giggle looking at them.

Siyanda: do you know how long we've been looking for you?

Me: well I couldn't work with people I don't know and when I tried to look for KK Table you guys are literally ghosts so I didn't trust you.

Kuhle: truth is I'm not surprised it all makes sense you love numbers and you a business guru your work is amazing.

Me: thank you.

Nono: okay guys now that introductions are done can we get back to business.

We all work in Max's office plan is we all going to take them on head on Owami always taught us that we must face our enemies and never sneak up on them I called Lolo to get me about 20 man and 10 snipers lucky the place is covered by trees so they can work with that the rest of us are going in from the front I told them that Hlehle gave me the go ahead they were not happy at first but they finally agreed.

Me: we need cars.

Ndumiso: I can supply that.

Zizi: Now that I know you part of the KK Table I want Ferrari.

Me: Lamborghini.

Nono: Audi A8.

Kuhle: a military tank.

We all turn to look at him.

Kuhle: what??

Siyanda: this is not fast and the furious you all will be driving GTis.

We all complain.

Nono: Siya please don't bore us I'm not going on my first mission with a GTi.

Nkosi: there's nothing wrong with a GTi I don't mind it.

Zizi: yea you can have a GTi but I want a Ferrari.

Siya: no you guys....

Nthando: well I'm with Nono on this one if we going on our first mission as Khumalo babies then we have to go in style. I want a Bugatti by the way.

Siyanda: do you know how much are those cars?

Me: okay Siya you drive a Toyota and let the rest of us enjoy the benefit of having brothers who are KK Table please.

Zizi: Thank you little one.

Ndumiso: okay fine I will have the cars delivered at North West we leaving tonight.

Siya: you all do know that they will see us coming yall like attention.

Lu: well I'm sure they expecting someone to come save them so sneaking around is not happening.

We discuss the details of how we going to take them on then we later leave for North West we arrive at the bnb we all rest my men are here too so tomorrow I'm go to get my husband.

I slept between Nono and Zizi since we sharing a room and now we just finished showering we wearing Owamis bullet proof suites honestly we look sexy I strip on my knives around my waist and thighs I took my bow and arrows today I'm not going to fight using guns but Nono and Zizi are strapped with bullets and their favorite guns we walk out and find the guys in the lounge all dressed in black military boots and pants and black shirts I'm sure they wearing their suits underneath. They all look the same if you don't know you would think they are clones even though they have different hairstyles they still look like one person . The moment they see us they start to whistle making us blush you can actually see my very visible bump in this but I still look

sexy. It's around 10am and yes we are doing this day light Sbusiso made sure that police officers don't come through no matter what happens there Kuhle helps me put on my arrows he ties the bag behind my back this is for me to reach for an arrow from my shoulder without any problems even if I get into a fistfight they will not fall over that's how good the bag is designed. Eventually we walk out and all the cars we asked for are parked nicely even though they all black I don't care I get the Lamborghini I asked for even the Tank is here I don't know how Ndumiso pulled this off but he really came through the rest of the guys will be driving GTis but not the Khumalo babies honestly I'm too excited we gather around Lu says a small prayer him and Nkosi will be our eyes and ears so they will be hiding somewhere with their computers. Lu gives us ear pieces we put them on.

Nkosi: please don't fuck up this mission I'll be recording it for memories.

I see Hlehle standing next to Kuhle he shivers a little I smile at her she nods her head I know we

ready to go. We all walk to our different cars Kühle will be with the snipers I'll be going in with Nono and Zizi I think Hlehle too since she is sitting quietly on the passenger seat which I don't understand.

Me: hlehle I don't think ghosts travel using cars.

Her: and how do you know that?

Me: when have you seen a ghost sitting in the front seat singing and dancing?

Her: I'm a special ghost.

Me: sure you are.

Her: what's that supposed to mean?

Me: nothing twini.

Why doesn't she fly there like she usually does?
You now what its none of my business.

Ndumiso: Entle are you talking to yourself.

Zizi: no dumb dumb she's talking to Hlehle.

Siyanda: you riding with your ghost sister?

Nthando: God this family is so weird.

Kuhle: can yall shut up.

Siyanda: no like seriously I've heard about those beautiful ghosts who ask truck drivers for lifts is it like that little one?

Me: I'm not going to justify that with an answer.

They carry on arguing about Hlehle and whatever until we get close to the destination.

Me: okay enough you guys let's do this.

Kuhle: all snipers are set.

Lu: I got you.

Nkosi: okay on my count snipers you can hit.

Kuhle: count Khumalo baby.

Nkosi: don't call me baby.

Kuhle: baby.

Nkosi: Thandokuhle I will fu....

Me: count man!

Everyone chuckles. Gosh these two can go on forever.

Nkosi: hai Nthombenhle who you talking to like that?

Everyone now is screaming in my ear piece.

Nkosi: okay fine fine geeez yall will break my ear.

Siyanda: would you just count for fuck sakes.

Nkosi: don't swear at me.

All: count!!

Then he laughs I'm starting to think this is a mistake even Hlehle is laughing next to me I don't know at what because she doesn't have a earpiece.

Hlehle: I'm a ghost I don't need a earpiece I can hear everything.

Me: why are you listening to my thoughts?

Ndumiso: huh?

Sbusiso: what?

They all say at the same time.

Me: I'm not talking to you.

Zizi: gosh this mission is going to be fucked.

Lu: can yall shut it for a moment please.

We all mumbles whatever.

Nkosi: okay Kuhle you ready?

Kuhle: I've been ready.

Nkosi: why don't you just say yes like a normal person?

I roll my eyes.

Kuhle: god Thandowenkosi just count for heaven sake.

Nkosi: okay fine. In 3.....2.....1.

Well since we on the street its still quiet we cant see what's happening until we get to the building.

Nono: what happened?

Lu: they just made it rain that's what happened. Now yall need to hurry most of their guys are inside the building everyone outside is out.

We make it at the gate and I see Kuhles tank parked there.

Me: kuhle please tell me here why did you drive here with this tank if you going to be up there on the trees.

Kuhle: for style little one when I saw it on fast and furious it looked cool I wanted to try it out maybe I might use it I don't know.

Siyanda: wow so we wasted money for you to experience your fantasy? Do know the administration that goes in to getting that thing here?

Kuhle: siyanda you a bore you don't have fantasies so you will never understand.

His right Siyanda is a bore his always cautious and doing things on the safe side.

Zizi: we need to take him to bungee jumping just to loosen up.

Sbusiso: and a kinky strip club.

We all agree. We make it at the gate and the building is covered with dead bodies well it's their guards.

Lu: guys I just connected you to their speakers so they will be able to hear everything you say inside.

Nono: perfect plus I feel like singing.

We step out the cars I have my bow on my hand Nono is standing on my right and Zizi is on my left. The guys step out and we standing there just looking at the building.

MAX

I can't believe my whole crew has been kidnapped me the mighty Max and my gang have been kidnapped by Fiona a whole Fiona that just pisses me off. Her reason is that when she came back to South Africa it was be with me so that we can combine gangs and be the power couple but unfortunately I'm married so her plan changed to her seducing me and falling pregnant then I leave Lilly for her I literally laughed at her when she said that. Now that didn't work out she kidnapped me and my gang well according to her she is going to kill my gang then inject me with some drug that is going to wipe my memory for the past three years so that I can love her and marry her this girl is delusional. I'm more worried about my gang yes I know we can take her on but her man are too many they would kill my guys and I cant have that

so I had to stay put and pray that Lilly makes a plan I know she is going to come here with her crazy especially if she finds out that its Fiona. We've been tied to our chairs in their control room so we looking at these screens which are cameras inside and outside the building I noticed it's a old building but I cant tell if we in still in South Africa or not because its covered by trees. The two guys who watch I guess is the security they keep their eyes on the screens and report to whoever are just playing cards here not even watching what's going on as I'm looking at the screens lost in my thoughts I see all the men walking around with guns drop on the floor like flies I smile because I know that means my Lilly came to get me I turn on my side and juice has his head down I don't blame him we haven't had food or water since we got here so we feel a bit weak. I nudge him with my elbow he looks at me I indicate with my head to look at the screens he looks then we start hearing voices through the speakers that's when the security looks at the screen I think she came with all the Khumalo babies. The moment she stepped out that

Lamborghini my dick jerked a little then I see her sisters they dressed in black jumpsuits with kicks then I see their brothers but I'm worried about my winegums.

Lilly: I feel like Charlie's Angel's with you two beside me

She says through the speakers they all laugh I chuckle I see my gang is now up they also chuckle listening to them Fiona walks in the door fuming with anger she starts shouting at her man in a foreign language.

Ndumiso: you ready to go play.

Zizi: yes I miss my husband I'm horny as fuck.

The brothers complain they so loud.

Nthando: enough.

Nono: let's go.

Lilly: All my girls at the party, look at that body

Shakin' that thing like you never did see

Got a nice package alright

Guess I'm gonna have to ride it tonight

All my girls at the party, look at that body
Shakin' that thing like you never did see
Got a nice package alright
Edit; four, three, two, one

Kuhle: is that Janet Jackson?

Zizi: say baby.

Lu: I got you little one.

Nkosi: don't forget to have some fun babies.

Next thing the song starts playing through the speakers then I see the girls walking in like they in a music video in my entire life I've never seen such a rescue mission we might as well just die here they even singing along I chuckle in disbelief. I see Lilly pull something over her shoulder is that her bow and arrow?? What are we in? Game of thrones? She keeps shooting and people dropping before they can pull the trigger.

Fiona: I'm going to kill this bitch.

She says angrily looking at the screens the Khumalo babies are just all over the screens some

are even dancing a part of me just wants to join them they really having the time of their life. I look at the other screen I see one of her sisters fighting some two guys she's as good as Lilly now I think Terminator was raising a small army here.

Lilly: did you just shoot me!?

She screams at whoever I jump on my chair as my heart drops immediately she cant be shot.

Lilly: I'm pregnant you idiot! What is wrong with you!

She screams again the guy is just frozen and Lilly looks fine wait now I'm confused she then attacks the guy with her knives.

Kuhle: Nthombenhle!? You good?

Lilly: yes I'm fine.

Sbusiso: the cubs?

Lilly: perfectly strong.

I smile that's my Lilly. She then runs into another room she starts using her arrows again honestly

I'm watching a movie here starring Khumalo babies.

Nono: Lu where the fuck is my husband?

Lu: hai Nolwazi watch your tone.

Zizi: Luthando I want my husband talk man.

I look over Juicy he looks amused I think his blushing. Fiona is busy barking orders on her phone frustrated.

Nkosi: will you two relax they all enjoying the movie so give me more. Give me more!

We chuckle this is just entertaining I even forgot I'm kidnapped. We relax watching them busy doing their thing the song changes to Cardi b up.

Siyanda: Lu what is this? A twerk song?

Nkosi: shake that booty baby.

Siyanda: you will shit yourself.

Nono: shake what your mama gave you baby remember my husband is watching.

They all laugh then the door busts open its one of her brothers he shots the security and looks at Fiona for a while.

Him: Fiona?

Lilly: you found her??

Him: I think so she's just staring at me I think she's going to pee her pants.

Nono: like someone we know.

They bust out laughing okay that's an inside joke. Then I hear Lilly sniff.

Kuhle: little one are you crying?

She doesn't answer them she's just busy fighting people I'm scared she might have hurt herself and my winegums maybe that's why she's crying.

Nono: Nthombi ka Baba we sorry it's too soon.

Lilly: mxm

She says sniffing

Lilly: Ndu please keep Fiona safe for me where is Max?

Ndumiso: oh...sorry they all here I forgot about them.

Zizi: you not serious wena I'm sure they tied up let them free.

Ndumiso: Eish sorry man it's just Sbu ndoda stocko my guy.

Sbusiso: say no more I'm coming.

Siyanda: hai you two this is not the time for your threesome

What is wrong with these boys?

Sbusiso: oh... come on Siya what's a movie with no little romance?

Siyanda: No man why are you always horny?

Ndumiso: hao Siya a little Bold and the Beautiful.

Siyanda: I just said no.

Ndumiso: oh....come on Siya all I need to do is band her over one good round before she dies I'll be quick quick fast I promise.

I look over at Fiona and she looks frightened she's even frozen on her spot.

Sbusiso: I'm sure the guys there would appreciate the porn.

What no we don't want to see that. Next thing my baby mama walks in looking all sorts of yummy with her baby bump and her bow on her hand she she throws her knives at Fiona so fast they all land on her legs she screams in pain and drops on the floor. She then turns and runs to me she removes the tape on my mouths and kisses me I probably smell like shit.

Me: please untie me.

Nono: oh my God ndumiso they still tied what exactly are you doing there?

He immediately starts helping Lilly untie us.

Ndumiso: hai Nthombenhle just stabbed my meal.

Sbu: hai she's always been violent that one.

Eventually they help us out the building they took us to their bnb Lilly has not left my side she help me get cleaned up and feed me and now we cuddling with her holding on me for dear life.

Me: I'm sorry I left you I could feel your pain sometimes.

Her: Its not your fault I was just trying to keep calm for the sake of your winegums and they didn't give me problems.

Me: I'm happy you all okay you scared me when I thought that guy shot you.

Her: he did shoot me twice but luckily I was wearing Owamis bulletproof suit so it just felt like he poked me.

Me: I thought he missed actually those jumpsuits are bulletproof?

Her: yeah Owami made them she actually made it for my dad at first but then he made for his crew and when we were doing our training we also got.

Me: wow... your mom is amazing.

Her: I know hey she is like superwoman or something.

We spent the night talking nonsense and making love. I didn't even ask about what happened to

Fiona but I know her brothers probably took care of it.

JUICE

It's been a few weeks since we got kidnapped by Max's side chick that was really a wake up call for us it shows we've been too relaxed what surprised me was my wives yes I knew that they able to fight obviously but that was the first time I see them in action sexy is an understatement. We currently chilling in Max's private jet I'm sitting across Max and Lilly who is clinging on him her bump is now visible when she is standing straight my wives are in the back finishing their assignments. We on our way to KZN my sister is having her memulo and my wives have to assist her with her preparations, Mbali just loves being around my wives and they love her too they always video calling each other even Themba he says they buy him nice things and they hot so he likes bragging about them at school but I just love how they've created a bond amongst themselves. I'm trying to go through my emails and work on my laptop but my eyes keep moving

to Max and Lilly he has his eyes closed facing up and his hand gently brushing her bump as she is asleep on his chest I really envy them I would love to go through the experience of having one of my wives pregnant even if it's both of them but starting a family is something we need to discuss because our marriage is still new and they both in school I don't want to add too much on their plate but I would love to start a family with them they would make wonderful mothers.

Eventually we make it home I asked Mbali to prepare a room for Max and Lilly since Lilly will also be helping but Max is keeping a close eye on her I know she will not work that much he treats her like an egg. We drive home when I get to my street you can tell that some of my family members are here I don't know if I should be excited or not because I know some of my dad's sisters are really rude and mean they don't like us or my mother they always have something negative to say. I park by the gate and Max parks behind me I jump out then open the doors for my wives they already dressed in their makoti attire

they look beautiful I go get their bags from the boot Lilly walks to her sisters and they busy giggling about whatever I see Themba running out the gate he goes straight to my wives and hugs them he literally ran past me to my wives you know what it's fine. I turn and see some of my cousins standing outside looking at us.

Max: and than?

He asks pointing at my cousins standing there looking at us.

Me: just know it's going to be a long week of nonsense.

He just shakes his head and follows me as we dragging these bags what do woman pack in these things? I know my wives could just pack one bag because they share everything but no I'm here dragging three big bags and a small one I know that one is mine we pass my cousins and greet them I hear them mumble their greetings the girls are looking at Max like a piece of meat I chuckle shaking my head I look at Max and he also noticed the moment we walk into the kitchen its flooded

with Mbali and her friends she comes running at me I hug her she greets Max.

Mbali: where are my sisters?

She's talking about my wives.

Me: so you not going to ask me how am I?

Mbali: I can see you fine you know what let me go outside.

She says walking out more like running I turn and find her friends looking at me and Max drooling what exactly is happening today? My eyes land on my ex Amanda she blushes looking down I frown and walk away I show Max where he will be sleeping I go to my room and put the bags then walk out to go look for my mom I find her serving tea to her in laws the moment she sees me she smiles I walk to her and hug her and kiss her chick.

Me: How are you Ndlovukasi?

She blushes that's what my dad calls her whenever he wants to soften her.

Mom: I'm okay have you seen your dad?

Me: not yet I just got here.

1aunt: so you don't greet us? Or we not visible?

I turn and look at them.

Me: I was going to greet you after I'm done greeting my mom but since your forward im sure you will do fine without my greeting.

Mom: Nhlanhla no.

I look down at my mom I kiss her chick and whisper that I'll see her later as I let her go I hear my wives greet respectfully they mumble whatever at them mxm my mom goes and hugs them tightly she hugs Lilly and telling her how pregnancy looks good on her and she's a blushing mess it's cute I look at my wives and wink at them they blush I go kiss them and walk out. I bump into Max and I pull him we walkout the back door the last thing I need is to see girls drooling over us that shit is awkward. I find all the men at the back braaiing meat my dad immediately starts dancing I pull out my stack of cash I start making it rain my uncles join him Max also pulls out a stack we make

it rain for them they even singing man I love my uncles when they done dad comes to hug me and they pick up their money my uncle pass us the beer they know Max as he worked closely with them during the lobola negotiations. We chill and catch up I honestly don't understand how they got married to their evil wives when I was growing up and always in trouble they rejoiced in seeing my mom cry and suffer whenever my dad asked them for help when we were struggling they shut him out but now they find it hard to see us doing well all they do is judge and keep reminding my mom that I'm a criminal sometimes I see it breaks her heart but she doesn't say and the last time I checked they don't like my wives they kept calling them jozi wives and that they lazy and gold diggers until my wives did their duties so well that they had nothing else to say but call them gold diggers if only they knew. My uncles know that my wives come from money because when they went to their home they didn't believe the cars and house they saw but they were mostly impressed at how humble they are because till today my aunts still

think my wives are gold diggers. When we done braaiing I take the meat inside and find my wives cooking, Lilly sitting on high chair making a salad Mbali talking too much Amanda drinking whatever in a mug and two other girls I don't know. Amanda looks at me and smiles widely I just ignore her and put the meat next to Nono who is chopping onions I kiss her neck she thanks me for the meat I go to Zizi who is cooking pap I kiss her neck too and she giggles I smile and kiss her again.

Zizi: aha.... Nhlanhla man please stop.

Me: I like hearing you giggle

I whisper in her ear and bite her gently she giggles again. I let her go and find Max clinging on Lilly whispering sweet things because her face looks all sorts of red I knew he can never stay away from her for too long. One of my aunts walks in and looks at us we look at her. She smiles when her eyes land on Amanda.

Aunt: hello Makoti I'm happy to see you, where have you been?

Amanda is blush looking down. Lilly is looking at her making a face she then looks at me for a while then she chuckles shaking her head I guess she just figured out what is happening.

Amanda: I've been here ma and it's nice to see you too.

Aunt: you should come more often you know you our makoti Nhlanhla can still take you as a wife you would make such a better wife.

Nono stops chopping immediately and looks at Amanda who looks at me and blushes Zizi is now next to me also looking at Amanda same as Lilly now this kitchen feels very small. I look at Max who is looking at me I indicate that we should go now we walk out quickly the moment we get outside I breathe out I didn't even realize I was holding it in.

Max: juice what was that about?

I sigh.

Me: that is Amanda my ex since I was in high school she was like my ride or die she loves bad

boys long story cut short when I meet you and moved to joburg she started fucking around when I got back we fucked and weeks later when I was in joburg she claimed to be pregnant I told my dad about it but then I started hearing rumors about her going around eventually I confronted her and she denied everything two days later she had a miscarriage only to find out she had a abortion because the baby was not mine and that I found out when she was confessing to her friend they didn't see me I overheard their conversation so I was kind of hurt as I was looking forward to having a baby I just left KZN and came to joburg and never looked back until years back when I came back to fix the house I saw her and she tried talking to me but I didn't entertain her then I met my wives so I don't know how my aunt even knows her because my mom just knows her as Mbalis friend which is also shocking because I didn't know they friends.

Max sighs.

Max: with your aunt and Amanda shit is going to hit the fan believe me you don't want your family to see your wives crazy it will not end well for them I suggest you put them in their place fast.

Me: my wives crazy??

Okay I'm confused. He looks at me for a while and chuckles.

Max: I remember looking like you when Godfather told me to look out for Lilly's crazy and learn to tame her or she will go wild. Clearly you have not seen the Khumalo crazy and if your aunts and your ex don't tread carefully around your wives you going to see a movie.

Me: Max you scaring me are trying to say my wives are psychotic or bipolar?

He laughs.

Max: no they not that kind of crazy their crazy is triggered by anger and they get very impulsive and creative you know what let me not tell you. Just wait and see I'm seriously going to enjoy this week.

He then whistle walking away I run after him because now I'm worried and super confused.

Me: Max wait!.. can you tell me what you mean.

Max: I mean my family has seen Lilly use a gun and throw her tinny fits around.

Me: Fuck man Max I'm shit confused and you not helping.

He smiles at me and pat my shoulder.

Max: don't worry soon you will understand I just pray you can handle them because trying to control one Khumalo baby is mission impossible but I trust you.

What?? Now I don't know if I should be worried I don't even know what I should be worried about maybe I should talk to Lilly I know she will tell me what's up.

We now sitting at the dinner table Nono is fixing my plate I don't know why is Amanda still here because Mbalis friends have left already she is sitting across from me on my other side its Zizi and next to her its Lilly then Max. Next to Amanda it's

my aunts. Nono puts the plate in front of me I thank her she sits Lilly places a plat in front of Max my mom says a prayer I decide to open my eyes I don't know why but I find my wives and Lilly looking at Amanda and my aunts their aura feels very dark Amanda opens her eyes I think she felt that someone is looking at her she looks frightened when she finds eyes on her she moves uncomfortably on her chair I look at my wives they just close their eyes and I see Lilly wink at Amanda while smirking she then closes her eyes okay that shit is scary as fuck I hear my mom say amen they open their eyes and start eating like nothing happened I look at my wives they just keep eating unbothered.

Mom: Nhlanhla are you okay?

My wives look at me I look at my mom.

Me: yes I'm okay ma.

Dad: you haven't touched your food you sure you okay?

I was about to answer when I got interrupted.

Aunt: maybe his thinking about the next crime his going to commit.

I look at her I hear my wives chuckle I look at them and they just eating their food I see Lilly also eating unbothered Max looks at me and smiles.

Mom: Vuyi please stop this is not the time.

Aunt: stop what? Telling the truth? That you failed to raise your children? Now he bought us white people in this family when he should've married Amanda the mother of his child.

My wives shoot their heads up immediately and look at me for a while.

Me: Aunt Vuyi what child are you talking about?

A Vuyi: you see? You not even ashamed you left her pregnant she had a miscarriage because of stress you brought for her while you were busy running around after your gold diggers you call wives she was alone.

I chuckle.

Me: is that what she told you?

I look at Amanda who is now looking down I look at my dad and he looks disappointed at me I push my chair back and stand up. I take my wives hands.

Me: let's go sleep.

They stand and follow me they moment I close the door Zizi looks at me with tears running down her cheeks now I understand why Max hates seeing Lilly cry. I look at Nono who is completely ignoring us as she undresses I pull Zizi into my arms and I wipe her tears as I feel my heart break.

Me: stop crying I will explain everything okay

She just nods her head I undress her and also strip we get into bed I pull them both to my chest.

Me: Amanda is my ex more like a high school sweetheart....

I explain everything to them about my relationship with her from how it started and to how it ended. By the time I'm done they looked relieved.

Nono: so why is she here then?

Me: honestly I don't know I'm even shocked that she is Mbalis friend I haven't seen her in years.

Zizi: well Aunt Vuyi insisted she stays for dinner I guess she told your family a different story when you left for joburg.

Nono: clearly because you never explained to your dad what happened you just left I'm sure they went and try to fix things on your behalf.

Me: you right I will talk to my dad tomorrow and explain everything.

Zizi: gosh I can believe this chick is so desperate.

We spend the night talking about silly things eventually we fall asleep. I wake up and none of my wives are next to me I get out bed and go shower when I'm done I fix the bed and go down when I get there everyone is already at the table my wives keep bringing food to the table I greet everyone and sit Zizi comes and sits next to me I kiss her and greet her Nono comes with the last bowl she bands and kisses me and start to fix my plate when she's done she settles down and Zizi passes her plate of

food my aunts and cousins keep looking at us but we just ignore them. After breakfast my dad calls me to the garden when I get there I find him with my uncles I sit down he then clears his throat.

Dad: Nhlanhla me and your uncles wanted to talk to you about Amanda and her pregnancy. I don't know what happened between you two but last time you told me she is pregnant and you wanted to do right by the child next thing you disappeared and you were no where to be found. Few days later she came with her family to make demands about you marrying her I called your uncles here and your aunts also thought it's best we pay lobola for her but I refused because I couldn't make such decisions for you when you not present. She did tell us she miscarried and she couldn't get a hold of you I'm not going to lie I'm disappointed at how you left but I want to hear your side because I know you, you my son I know you would never leave your child like that especially after asking me to help you when her family comes to ask for damages.

I'm happy my dad didn't do anything without me I'm fucked up annoyed by Amanda and her stupid lies. I start to tell them what happened between Amanda and I by the time I'm done my dad and uncles look pissed and annoyed.

Uncle 1: imagine had I listened to my wife and paid damages and lobola for such nonsense.

He says pissed.

Uncle 2: it's a good thing your parents stood up for you because now we would be trying to fix this.

Dad: why was she even here?

I shrugged my shoulders.

Uncle 2: I think she came to get you back.

I chuckle shaking my head.

Me: hai uncle I don't want her I'm perfectly fine with my wives.

Later Max comes to join us we get called for lunch and Amanda is back my wives and Lilly keep looking at her with their funny faces and my aunt keeps making stupid comments but luckily my

wives are not offended at all. It's now afternoon and everyone is watching the sunset and kids are playing in the garden it's just beautiful I see my wives and Lilly sitting under a tree eating some fruits my dad is braaiing meat again well that is just snack we just having beers discussing the cow and some thing that we need to get done tomorrow for Mbali's memulo next we hear some commotion I look up and don't see my wives and Lilly Max stands up immediately to go look for Lilly I follow him we find them at the other side of the house. I see Amanda slap Zizi and Zizi returns it with a fist I was about to go to them and Max grabs my hand to stop me. When Amanda is done stumbling she charges to Zizi with so much anger Zizi just kicks her on her chest and she stumbles back as she is about to fall but Nono catches her and push her back to Zizi who throws her another hard punch that send her to the floor I don't know where Lilly comes from but she kicks Amanda's face and its lights out I see Max going to her and he scoops her into his arms and walks away my wives also walk away leaving me and my dad and uncles

shocked. I follow them and when we get into the house I find Max and Lilly arguing and my wives just looking at them.

Max: did you forget that you pregnant Lilly?

Lilly: so?

Max: so? I thought we spoke about you getting into fights do you want to get hurt? Or hurt my kids?

Lilly: that was not even a fight I just kicked her and that's it.

Max sighs defeated.

Max: no more ice cream for you until you know how to behave.

Lilly: you wouldn't dare.

She says in a shaky voice. I think she is going to cry.

Max: watch me.

Lilly just walks out stumping her feet on the floor with her lips pouted looking like a 5 year old throwing a tantrum. Max sighs looking frustrated and my wives are busy giggling I turn and look at them with a serious face they look back at me with

their beautiful blue eyes they look so innocent right now they even smiling showing off their dimples we have a stare contest as I'm try understand how they just carry on living life like they didn't hit poor Amanda well I'm not defending her but for them to do this in their in laws home and still be okay with it just confuses me. We still staring at each other these two really like challenging me then they start giggling and doing their weird stupid funny dance because they know it gets me all the time I smile and they just continue making their funny faces I shake my head chuckling we get interrupted by aunt Vuyi and her buddies which are my other aunts since they like to follow her around she's the leader of the pack I guess.

Aunt v: yeeey you stupid girls!

She shouts at the top of her voice my wives stop dancing and turn to look at her with frowns on their faces. My cousins come in running as they hear her noise.

Aunt v: you two come here with straat mate tendencies...

I interrupt her.

Me: aunt Vuyi please watch how you speak to my wives. You will not raise your voice at them like they your kids.

Aunt v: wena you piece of shit will not tell me what to do in my brothers house!

Zizi: I dare you to call my husband a piece of shit again.

Her voice sound rusty and deeper I look down at her and I see a vein popping. They both standing beside me. I look back at my aunts and you can see that they some expect that normally they just ignore her when she talks like this but I guess they tired of her.

Cousin 1: yeey!!...don't talk my mother like that she is not your friend!

We turn to look at her, this one is aunt Vuyi first born Thembi she's just like her mother always in

other people's business and starting unnecessary drama.

Me: sorry?

I say calmly looking at her I guess my face intimidates her because she starts stuttering.

Auntie v: yeeey!.... you will not scare my daughter with that criminal face of yours. My brother did your mother a favor by marrying he....

She didn't finish that sentence as I saw a bowl of fruits fly right at her face all the bananas and apples hit her Zizi threw it at her I see Thembi charge to Zizi but she didn't make it as Nono jumped at her and started to throw fists at her. Aunt Vuyi walks fast to get Nono off Thembi but she doesn't make it as Zizi put her foot forward and it tripped her she fell hard face down I think I saw her teeth on the floor the other cousins run to Nono I quickly grab Nono from behind and pull her back big mistake she starts kicking anyone in front of her everything is just a mess everyone is either on the floor or flying across the room next thing

we hear a gun shot we all freeze I turn and find Zizi with a gun pointing at the ceiling.

Zizi: opppsss!

She says sweetly giggling covering her mouth. I look at her in disbelief.

.....: what the fuck is going on in my house!

We turn and find dad standing with my uncles shocked at this scene well I don't blame them. Zizi hides the gun behind herself I see Max at the corner looking amused with Lilly I think I now understand the crazy he was talking about.

Well after that scene my dad decided that everything will be discussed tomorrow morning since everyone's emotions are high we didn't even have dinner we all ate separately my dad looked so pissed if it wasn't for my mom I'm sure he would've chased everyone out. I'm sitting outside having a cigarette I still can not believe Nono and Zizi I always thought Max let's Lilly get away way with a lot of things maybe because he fears her or something but today I just saw that Khumalo

babies are just crazy people how the fuck I'm I going to tame two crazy woman? Max is trying with Lilly but now I have double the trouble I just cant. I walk back inside I find Max sitting on a high chair looking depressed .

Me: and then? What's your problem?

Max: take a good guess.

Me: Lilly?

He nods his head while brushing it I chuckle.

Max: I'm going to grow grey hair because of her.

Me: what did you do now?

Max: why do you assume it's me?

Me: because it's always your fault.

Max: mxm

Me: you know what I don't want to know I'm go to bed I miss my wives.

He chuckles

Max: uhmmmm...

I look at him and I can see his hiding something I choose to walk away I'm not going to deal with Max. I get to my room and open the door I switch on the light I see three people in my bed. Nono raises her head and looks at me.

Me: why is Lilly in my bed?

Nono: shhhhh.

I frown.

Me: don't shush me. I want to sleep with my wives.

Nono: well not today go sleep with Max.

Me: like hell I will!

Nono: would you keep it down cant you see they sleeping?

She whispers again.

Me: why is she not sleeping with her husband.

Nono: because her husband refused to give her ice cream.

Me: how is that our problem?

Nono: she was emotional and she came to us now please switch off the light I want to sleep.

I look at her as she pulls the blanket over her head. I'm pissed as hell I walk out to look for Max he must come get his wife I don't find him in the kitchen I just see my mom busy in the fridge I go to his room I find him ready to sleep his in his boxers he looks at me and busts out laughing I'm fucking annoyed and his laughing.

Me: go get your wife I want to go sleep.

Max: well I tried but your wives refused with her.

Me: don't tell me nonsense Max I want to sleep between my wives. Where will I sleep?.

Max: there's the floor do you want a blanket and a pillow?

Me: you do know you a guest here right? I can chase you out or just call my mom on you.

He laughs again he really finds this situation amusing.

Max: like your mom would agree to chase out a guest who do you think is going to be chased out between me and you?

His right my mom will definitely take his side. I was about to say something when my mom disturbed us.

Mom: you two I can hear you from the kitchen why are you not sleeping it's late.

She's in a gown and holding a bowl of something.

Me: Ma Lilly is sleeping with my wives and Max refused to go fetch her I want to sleep.

Mom: and why is she sleeping with your wives?

Me: Max refused to give her ice cream so she's mad at him.

I say pouting my mom laughs.

Mom: then just sleep together the bed is big enough for both of you.

Suddenly dad is behind her with a gown too he holds her waist and looks down at her while she looks up at him.

Dad: what's taking you so long Ndlovukasi?

Mom blushes looking down.

Me: maaaaa.....!

They both look at me.

Dad: why are you two naked and alone in here?

Max: it's not what you think.

Max says quickly while dad chuckles.

Mom: well their wives ditched them tonight so they refuse to sleep together.

Dad laughs mxm this is not even funny.

Dad: my love leave them alone I've been waiting for those strawberries let's go please.

My mom blushes again.

Me: what are doing with strawberries at night shouldn't you be sleeping?

Dad: I'm going to do something that you couldn't do to your wives tonight since you will be dick kissing with Max.

I frown as he has a smirk my mom slaps his chest looking flushed then he spanks her.

Me: dad please stop doing that.

Dad: doing what? She's my wife I can do as I please with her.

My mom just pushes him out as he laughs. I turn back to Max and he throws me a pillow and blanket I hit him back with the pillow there is no way I'm sleeping on the floor.

Max: I'm not playing pillow fight with you Juice.

He says getting into the blankets. I undress and get in as well I pull the blanket and he pulls it back I also pull it back again I feel him turning around and next thing he kicks me off the bed I fall on the floor he grabs the blanket and pulls it up. This piece of shit I get up and take the pillow and start to hit him hard with it he just annoys me fuck! He grabs it and throws it right at my face.

Max: juice! Fuck man! Just sleep!

Me: fuck you!

Max: you fucking childish take the other blanket and sleep!

He turns around and sleeps mxm I take the other blanket and sleep too I could be laying on soft boobs right now but no here I am with stupid Max.

Me: pussy..

I mumble.

Max: I will suffocate you with this pillow call me pussy one more time and see.

Me: mxm

I wake up in the morning and I see Max looking fresh he greets me and walks out I quickly fix the bed and go to my room I find it empty I take a quick shower and get dressed when I get down for breakfast I see Aunt Vuyi looking bruised with her daughter everyone is silent I greet them and everyone mumbles whatever I sit and Zizi gives me my food we silently eat soon as we done my dad clears his throat as he was about to say something but we get interrupted by four police officers walking in I know all of them since they on

our payroll they greet us they quickly look at me and Max and we greet back.

Dad: how can we help you officers?

1 police: uhmmm... we here to make an arrest for assault for Amanda Zungu.

We all go silent I look over at Max and I see him turning angry my aunts are smiling. My wives and Lilly stand up and walk towards the officers.

2 police: okay you must be Ulwazi, Nolwazi and Nthombenhle?

They nods their heads looking unbothered Lilly is just concentrating on her ice cream standing next to her sisters.

Nono: can we go now?

Me: Make sure they in one cell alone.

The officers nod.

3 police: Mam you cant take the ice cream with you.

Lilly: what are you going to do? Take it from me? I like to see you try.

She walks past them the officer looks defeated and just follows her I hope he doesn't try. Once they all out my dad sighs.

Max: Baba let me go get my wife.

Dad nods looking defeated. I also stand and walk out with Max we both lost in our thoughts I swear I'm going to kill that bitch Amanda nxa. The moment we get to the police station they don't give us problems we go to their cell we find them laughing and Zizi standing doing whatever that's making Nono and Lilly laugh with tears out I swear when God made these women I think he forgot to add something because any woman who goes to a prison cell should be scared ready to shit themselves but no these ones are having the time of their life. They don't even see us Max clears his throat they look at us and smile sweetly I shake my head I seriously give up on them I can't with them I seriously refuse. The officer opens for them Lilly is the first to come out running and throws herself into Max who pick her up I look at my two wives these two are still in trouble and they know it they

slowly walk out looking at me I raise my eyebrow then they start with their stupid dance I just turn immediately and walk away smiling I feel one of them jump on my back I hold her thighs on my sides Nono is now walking on my side I look down at her and she smiles at me.

LILLY

It's been a few weeks now since the whole KZN drama well juice fixed it I don't know how but Amanda disappeared I guess. Mbalis memulo was beautiful we left her rich normally we supposed to pin notes all over here but I came with tape to stick two rolled notes which amount to R20 000 on her well everyone did the same to her including the Khumalo babies yes my brothers came through for her memulo they were looking all fly with spots cars girls couldn't even contain themselves the aunts where in disbelief when they realised that they are our brothers that gold digger nonsense they kept throwing at us went out the window, by the time we were done sticking money on her the neighbors and aunts couldn't hid the shock on

their faces im sure she was walking around with R100 000 taped all over her body if not properly more juicy had to take the cup by gifting her with a matt olive green g wagon she was literally the happiest girl ever my sisters gifted her with a traveling voucher to 5 counties of her choice she is allowed to take two extra people I gave her Chanel make up set with traveling bags the Khumalo babies just gave her two suit cases filled with money. thank God the aunts didn't try to do their drama but Juices dad was really angry his a bit scary reminds me of Baba he straight up told the aunts that if they fail to behave they must leave his house and gave me and sisters a earful about being violent all we could do is nod our heads looking down but the moment he was with us alone he was laughing at how dramatic we are he even called Baba to laugh with him.

Anyway everything has been nice and chilled ever since all the Khumalo babies came out with our underworld identities we even more close well we now part of the KK Table besides what we do separately obviously Max is not aware that I'm

part of the KK table but I know soon he will hopefully when I've given birth I'm actually 6 months pregnant now and we currently driving to my lingerie shoot with Alex she is done with the pregnant collection and I'm super excited Max is just tagging along because he feels like I need protection but I don't care all I want is to see myself in some sexy and cute lingerie. The twins collection my sisters did has been doing good juice is always bragging about them and how his wives are sexy and so on. We get to the location Alex send me and it looks like we will be doing this shoot on the rooftop facing the joburg view I walk in hand in hand with Max when Alex sees me she comes to hug me.

Alex: Hey Lilly look at you looking all beautiful.

Me: thank you I wish I could just give birth already I'm so tired.

Alex is your petite kind of lady she probably in her 30s but looks 21.

Alex: the moment they here you will wish they will go back to your stomach.

We laugh and have some small conversation Max goes to sit on the couch with his eyes on me the whole time, Alex takes me for make up and hair as soon as they done she goes to help me wear the first lingerie I made sure I go wax I don't want to scare poor kids here with my bush. When I look at the mirror the way this red piece looks on me I swear I don't feel pregnant anymore I'm so sexy I cant believe it pregnant women deserve this line honestly it's to die for my baby bump makes it look even sexier. I wear a gown and walk out Max is still there his holding a bottle of water busy on his phone.

Alex: Mr Ngidi I think you might want to put that phone away.

She says at Max who looks at me and puts his phone away the way his so serious his making everyone here tense. I quickly to him and kiss him.

Me: would you relax you making everyone uncomfortable.

Max: they about to see my wife naked they should be uncomfortable.

Me: if you play nice I might reward you with the lingerie that I'm currently wearing.

He looks at me I wink at him giggling I go back to Alex and the photographer is ready for me the lights are on.

Alex: lilly we going to have work a bit fast as we want the first collection shoot to be done while the sun sets and the other will be done with the dark okay.

I nod my head and look back at Max who still has a serious face on I take off the gown he sits up immediately while swallowing hard I smirk at him because I know his horny now.

Photographer: looks like I'm going to need your husband closer to you since it looks like his your mouse. Handsome husband please come here.

His gay everything he said looked and sounded extra I giggle when I see Max's hard on which he tries to fix but honestly nothing worked there.

Photographer: come stand next to me and you Lilly look at your handsome horny husband and picture yourself snacking him okay.

Max frowns looking at him I giggle and do as he says Max has his eyes on me and doesn't move them. I go change from lingerie to lingerie we ended up doing a pregnant photoshoot with the topless Max and me in black lingerie and another white lingerie its beautiful after that I'm shit tired I passed out the moment I got in the car Alex gave me the whole collection I don't know when the pictures are going to be out but I'm very happy I did that even Max loosened up when he joined me well that happened when he refused the male model to take pictures with me .

the guys want us to hijack a few military equipment and we've been preparing for that since I'm good with the computer I'm working on hijacking their satellite connections to make sure once we take them it can be not traced or found basically whatever tracking or whatever they have on them I'm going to disable it and install new

system all together, well I want a submarine for Max that's going to be his birthday gift don't ask me what his going to do with it I also don't know but I want it for him, I've never bought him anything for his birthday I normally make it a special day like take him out and such but now I want to get him a nice gift. I'm sitting on the couch with my laptop and my feet on Max's lap I'm finishing up some assignment this will be my last assignment next year I'll be a graduate and I'll be 9 months pregnant I just hope my babies don't come when I should be walking on the stage. As I'm busy I see a conference call coming through I answer it and all the Khumalo babies are all over my laptop screen.

Me: I'm busy what do you want?

Siya: is that how you greet us?

Ndu: this one is disrespectful .

Nthando: it's like she forgets that we all older than her.

Sbu: greet us properly Nthombenhle.

I roll my eyes at them they all complain swearing at me I just laugh at them my sisters are also laughing.

Me: are you all done?

Siya: we will hit you Nthombenhle.

He says hitting his screen I laugh even worse Max chuckles drinking his beer while looking at his game.

Nono: are you going to tell us why yall called us because some of us are really busy.

Ndu: ever since yall got married you are disrespectful.

They all agree we just roll our eyes.

Lu: one day your eyes will fall off and roll under your bed.

Me: what??

I say laughing at him.

Zizi: you have such an imagination hey.

She says laughing.

Me: where is Khuhle?

Then the guys go silent and then bust out laughing okay me and my sisters are just confused now. We wait for them to finish.

Sbu: that one is whipped.

Ndu: that's why we called you, little one since you close to him please knock some sense into him.

Nono: wait are we talking about the same khuhle? As in our Thandokuhle??

Siya: yes the one and only.

I see max is now looking at me he even came to sit closer to me this one likes news.

Zizi: okay if Khuhle is in love I don't see a problem with that.

Me: yeah I agree with Zizi I just hope it's a nice girl who wont hurt him.

Nono: she hurts him she dies and we not even discussing it.

Lusanda: yhooo.... You are so violent.

Me: no we not violate if she cant love him right then she must stay away.

Lu: I think we should start a group like alcohol anonymous but this one will be for violent people. Especially for you girls we know the drama you've been causing for your in laws.

I frown.

Max: I agree with you Lu your sisters are not normal.

I smack the back of his head.

Max: ouch.....!

Lusanda: you see what we talking about.

Nono: there's nothing wrong with us.

Me: yes we perfectly fine.

Siya: the first step is admitting that you have a problem.

Nthando: yes and right now you are in denial.

Zizi: the last time I checked yall called about khuhle.

Nono: yes not this intervention nonsense yall are trying.

Ndu: look at yall you already worked up.

Siya: I'll book you girls for anger management classes.

Me: okay I'm hanging up.

Them: nooo/wait.

Sbu: I think my sisters are fine there is nothing wrong with them the problem is you people.

Nono: thank you Sbu.

Siya: you just saying that because you like their drama.

Sbu: who doesn't??

Zizi: can we talk about why yall called.

Nthando: okay okay... like we said little one you need to get through to him because I don't think stalking a girl is how to go about it.

Me: Sbu and Ndu stalk girls they want all the time when his ready I'm sure he will make a move.

Ndu: yea but I stalk them so that I can fuck.

Sbu: yes plus we don't make the guys who are interested in them disappear.

Me: wait what??

I say with a frown.

Nono: please don't tell me his killing innocent people for her already.

Siya: no it's not like that he just makes them move to other countries and such.

Lusanda: yeah and he keeps sending her money and things I think his being creepy now.

Nono: yeah that is creepy.

Siya: plus the other problem is that the girl is Mbali.

Max chocks on his beer my eyes pop Nono and Zizi are just frozen.

Me: which Mbali?

I whisper.

Nthando: Juices sister.

I close my eyes juice is going to kill my brother.

Max: Khuhle is a dead man walking.

Me: okay I will talk to him but I like Mbali I don't have a problem with her.

Nono: same here.

Zizi: I will talk to juice and see how he feels about Mbali dating.

Siya: I knew I can count on you three.

Lusanda yes now can we get back to booking these three anger management classes.

I just hang up I don't have anger problems. I look at Max his shirtless concentrating on the tv drinking his beer for some reason everything his doing is in slow motion I gave him a haircut and trimmed his beard yesterday so right now he looks like a 5 course meal including a appetizer and palette cleanser I look at his lips as he licks his bottom lip he turns to look at me and I'm already wet.

Max: you want me to eat you up?

He says with a smirk on his face. I just look at him as I feel my clit twitch he chuckles and puts his beer on the coffee table and removes my laptop and papers. When his done he pulls me to lay on my back and comes between my legs I'm wearing his shirt with no underwear he kisses me softly and I return the kiss with a moan in between the way I'm so horny I feel like crying. I feel him tear his shirt now my big bump is out and my huge boobs which he loves the most he goes down leaving wet kisses from my neck to my stomach before he I know it his tongue is doing the most on my minky I keep moaning and pushing him deeper I feel my body heat up as my orgasm is coming I moan louder trying to pull back but tightens his grip to keep me still I let all my juices out as my body shakes. After being fucked on the couch I passed out on his lap I'm woken up by people talking I find Amahle and Esihle(Max's sisters) well Max's family have grown close to us since this pregnancy they always come to visit us sometimes sleep over I can tell Max is happy with that and honestly I'm also just as happy because now I have

two new sisters in Amahle and Esihle even Max is being a big brother to them it's cute to watch Amahle is 23 and Esihle is 20 they both finished high school and decided to chill at home and spend their parents money I don't know how their parents agreed to that but I know for a fact Owami would have gave me a few punches that would lend me in doing something with my life. Michael has disappeared ever since the last meeting I wonder how his doing. Max's mother is possessed with buying my babies all the baby things you can think of me and Max have not even bought a small pair of socks but his mother has probably bought in every expensive store you can think of sometimes I receive online packages which she bought for her grandkids. I've hung out with Max's dad a couple of times and I must say his cool and smarter than I thought he even gave me an idea of opening my own company it's going to be a IT, Accounting and Business consulting company I've not given it a name yet I've decided to start with a business plan in January since I just have a month left for this training so no I will not be working for

anyone I'm very excited to start with it actually. I look at these two who have their eyes glued to the tv it's some ratchet reality show they normally watch. I'm covered with a small blanket since I'm naked and fell asleep on Max who is not here. Esihle sees me awake and she comes rushing to me with excitement she immediately pulls off my blanket exposing my naked self and her hands go straight to my stomach my boys start kidding like crazy while she does her baby talk on my stomach Amahle comes to join her well that's what they do whenever they see me at first I found it weird and uncomfortable but now it's cute to watch.

Max: yeeey leave my wife alone !

His deep voice fills the room as he walks in with food my stomach grumbles as my nose hits the aroma. They both move away from me I cover myself with the blanket again.

Amahle: thank god it's like you knew that im hungry.

Max: it's not your food.

Eshle: maybe we should also get pregnant then we will receive this nice treatment.

She says looking all innocent Max looks at her with a frown I giggle because I know she is just teasing him.

Max: your child will be fatherless so no one will give you any special treatment.

Me: hao Max...

Max: don't even try to enter this Lilly.

Amahle: you do know that we have boyfriends right.

Max: the last time I checked I made them disappear so you single.

Their mouths hang I bust out laughing shame this is sad.

Me: Max you didn't.

Max: shush wena.

Eishle: that's why Thabo ghosted me?

She says ready to cry. Max just start giving me so much food ignoring her I also start eating

shrugging my shoulders because they both looking at me as if I know where their boyfriends are at. I know Max is serious about making them disappear but I'm sure he did that because they probably bad for them. I watch them walk out pissed with their lips pouted. Later I decide to call Khuhle I really have to talk to him about Mbali he cant keep being a creep on the poor girl. It rings for a while and he picks up.

Khuhle: little one.

Me: hey how are you?

Khuhle: I'm okay and how are you and the cubs?

Me: the cubs are doing well but I'm worried about you.

He sighs

Khuhle: let me guess your brothers called you.?

Me: yeah and what they said about you has me worried even more.

Khuhle: am I wrong for loving someone?

Me:Khuhle we both know there is nothing wrong with you loving someone but how you going about it will definitely scare her off.

He sighs again.

Me: khuhle you can not keep sending her money and gifts and making all the guys who like her disappeare you just being a creep.

Khuhle: then tell me what to do because when I tried talking to her at her memulo but I just froze my mind went blank.

Me: ncwoooo... you really smitten it's cute.

He chuckles.

Khuhle: yea I guess I've never really been interested in girl before so I don't know how these things work.

Me: first just stop sending her money and gifts it's weird.

Khuhle: yeah but I wont stop making these stupid boys disappear.

Well I'm not surprised there.

Me: as long as no one innocent is dying. Now have you tried calling her on the phone and just talk?

He goes silent.

Khuhle: what will I say though?

Me: anything first tell her where you got her numbers just say from me I know you already have them. Then ask to see her maybe for lunch or something. I'm sure you will not go blink over the phone.

Khuhle: okay I'll try that and thank you.

Me: you welcome but you do know that Juicy is going to kill you right.

Khuhle: ill deal with him later right now let me just get my woman first.

Me: uhmmm....my woman ne??

He chuckles

Khuhle: yeah whatever I have to go now.

Me: okay bye bye and stop being a creep please girls don't like that.

Khuhle: yeah whatever love you.

Me: love you more.

It's been a few months and we currently in March I'm graduating in two weeks and I'm big as a wale I walk like a penguin Max finds it sexy which I don't understand his always horny and I'm always tired I don't even bother wearing clothes im always walking around the house naked Max makes sure I shower everyday since I'm lazy he took time off work to take care of me since I can pop anytime, his mom is always here to see me my mom is also on her way she said she wants to be there for the birth. Nobuhle is always here next to me literally everyday which I don't know why because sometimes she doesn't say anything we just sit in silence she does brush my stomach sometimes which gives me a tingling sensation whenever she touches it.

Max has been in the study working and now I'm bored I decide to go to him. Gosh trying to get up from this couch is a mission itself eventually I manage to stand after 5minutes of struggling I'm even breathing heavy honestly I'm really ready to

give birth. I walk to his office I open the door and I find him talking on the phone facing the window it sounds like his usual business calls I just go to him and stand right in front of him he looks down at me and smiles still talking on the phone his free hand goes to my large boob and squeeze it softly I take my hand to his dick and squeeze it softly and his already hard I start to brush it gently and his eyes get small his not even concentrating on his phone call anymore. I put my hand into his sweat pants he closes his eyes next thing I hear people calling us. He looks at me and hangs up these people are so noisy I think it's my brothers why are they here? I let go of Max as I'm about walk out he holds my hand I look back up at him.

Max: you going to leave me like this?

I look down at his huge dick which is very hard. Honestly I just want spread my legs for him right now but I know my brothers will just walk in here. Their voices are getting louder.

Me: I'll make it up to you.

I say as I'm about to walk out and he pulls me back into his arms with both his hands on my boobs.

Max: you do realize that you naked right.

Me: yeah they are my brothers so it makes no difference.

Max: yes it does I don't think they want to see you naked Lilly.

Me: really?

Max: yeah if I had to see my sisters pregnant and naked it would be very uncomfortable.

Me: really??

Max: whatever you thinking don't do it.

I smile and wiggle out of his hold fuck yeah I'm going to make these cockblockers uncomfortable I miss annoying them. I walk out modeling my penguin self to the lounge the moment they see me their faces are priceless.

Them: whuuuuuuuu/ haaaaaaaaa/ yhoouoooo....

They shout out loud closing their eyes I just stand there with a smile and my hands on my hips I don't

even know where that is because I'm just shapeless.

Me: like what you see?

Siya: can you please put on some clothes

He says still with his eyes closed.

Me: no can do boo.

Ndumiso and Sbusiso are just looking at me more like analyzing me with a weird facial expression.

Kuhle: where the fuck is Max?

Ndu: is that how yall look naked when pregnant?

He asks with a frown.

Me: definitely.

Sbu: your back looks like is about to snap at any moment like in that vampire movie.

Lusanda: why are you not closing your eyes?

Lu: this shit you doing Nthombenhle is traumatizing us.

Siya: I'm never getting a woman pregnant.

I laugh still standing there.

Nkosi: god I can never get this image out of my head.

Me: I'm sorry I'm now dressed you can open your eyes.

I say giggling.

Lu: I don't trust you.

Me: open your eyes and see.

I'm still giggling

Siya: why are you giggling?

Lusanda: shes enjoying this that's why.

Ndu: Entle why is your stomach so big?

Sbu: it looks like it's going to tear up in the middle and the cubs will just walk out.

Me: you have a very weird imagination.

Kuhle: why are you still naked Nthombenhle?

Me: it's hot and clothes irritate me.

My babies start to kick.

Ndu: whoooooo...what the fuck just happened Nthombenhle??

He says frightened with eyes popping I look at my stomach while touching it.

Sbu: I think they are about to walk out her stomach.

Me: stop being stupid they just kicking.

Siya opens his eyes and immediately closes them.

Siya: would you please put on some clothes!

Me: don't shout at me in my house.

I feel Max put on something fluffy on my shoulders it's his gown. He puts in my hands and tie me up.

Max: yall can open your eyes.

They open them slowly looking at me like I grew horns.

Nthando: why do you hate us like this?

I giggle and go sit down next to Ndu and Sbu who have their eyes on my stomach.

Kuhle: Max you really let her do this to us?

Max: what my Lilly wants my Lilly gets.

Lu: I've been saying that this one is brainwashed by Entle.

Ndu: I'm just trying to figure out how the cubs move around in there.

He says pointing at my stomach.

Me: you want to feel?

He looks at me making a face. I just take his hand and put it on my stomach they immediately start kicking again he quickly removes his hand screaming we all laugh at his reaction.

Ndu: this shit is not normal.

Siya: don't call the cubs shit.

Ndu: I'm not saying the cubs are shit why are you forward?

Kuhle: can I touch?

Me: yes come.

He comes he goes on his knees between my legs and puts his hands on my stomach they keep kicking like crazy I look at him and he just has his eyes on my stomach with a smile it's cute his eyes

look glossy Ntando comes to join him but Kuhle slaps his hand the moment he tries to touch me. Ntando slaps the back of his head and Kuhle looks at him.

Kuhle: you will shit yourself.

Ntando: and I will fuck you up.

Me: would you two stop it.

Ntando: he started it.

Kuhle: hai why did you bring your feet here.

Ntando: my feet??

I giggle clearly he doesn't get it kuhle rolls his eyes dramatically I laugh out loud with Ndu and Sbu since we saw him.

Ndu: that's gay shit right there kuhle.

All this time Kuhle still has his hands on my bump and my babies are kicking like crazy. Lu comes and pushes Kuhle off, kuhle immediately kicks his feet and he falls.

Max: not next to my wife are trying to hurt her??

His immediately on his feet pulling Kuhle and Lu away from me. Siya and Luyanda come and put the hands on my stomach my babies are still kicking they smile.

Siya: I think we got soccer players here.

Luyanda: not a chance I say dancers.

Kuhle: maybe they will not be the sports type.

They carry on arguing later Juice and my sisters join us we have a nice loud dinner and game night even though I really feel tired but I'm enjoying their presence everyone slept over even juice and my sisters. Apparently they came here for birth of the cubs and I'm happy to be surrounded by so much love and support. Max immediately took me to sleep when he saw my first yawn I cant even enjoy my sleep because of this big bump tonight they even restless Max is fast asleep the house is quite I decide to go make myself some warm milk since I'm not close to sleeping I'm standing naked in the kitchen drinking my milk slowly while going through my phone. My babies are still kicking and

moving around I'm getting worried because they never active for this long.

.....: Entle

I look up and its Nobuhle looking all beautiful I smile and greet her back she walks to me and touches my stomach I get the tingling sensation she always gives me my babies cool down with the kicking. I release my breath feeling relieved.

Me: thank you so much.

She looks at me with a smile something is really going on with her shes been acting weird these past weeks.

Me: hlehle what's wrong?

Hlehe: you know I love you right? More than anything in this world or universe.

Me: my first response would be "are you dying?" but since you a ghost I don't know what to say to you.

She laughs a little.

Hlehle: do you believe in reincarnation?

Okay where is this going?

Me: I don't know I've read about it a few times but I don't know if it really exists. It sounds more like a fantasy

Hlehle: do you remember the reason why I came in this form for you?

Me: yes I remember. Why?

I say thinking I don't feel alone anymore shes always been there for me and I don't have a void in me anymore I'm happy now and I'm content.

Hlehle: you don't need me any more.

I look at her she must not think of leaving me I will not survive it. My eyes feel glossy.

Me: you want to leave me?

My voice is shaking.

Hlehle: I can never leave you Enhle. I love you but I can not stay in this form forever.

Me: please don't leave me Hlehle yes I'm no longer lonely and have that void it's been filled by you please don't take me back to that place again.

I say crying and bagging she cant do this to me I need her. I know if she leaves me I'll go back to that lonely place again I'll feel lost again

Hlehle: stop crying I'm not leaving you Max is the one who filled in that void not me.

Me: then what are you saying Nobuhle?

Hlehle: I'm saying me coming in this form is messing with mother nature. The ancestors are not happy about it it's been go on for too long I cant keep opening portals there are bad spirit that also want to come through.

I'm fucking confused and angry shes not saying anything.

Me: Nobuhle I love you please don't do this to me.

I say defeated because I can see that I'm not going to win this she has her mind made up.

Hlehle: Nthombenhle.....

She stops and looks at my stomach I also look at it suddenly feel water splashing on floor. That is not how I pee..

Hlehle: I'm out of time listen carefully
Nthombenhle I love you and I will always love you
I will always be with you just in a different form
and I will not remember this part of my life but I
will always be with you okay.

Me: Hlehle please....

I feel a sharp pain hit my lower back I scream
holding the counter.

Hlehle: Nthombenhle I have to go now I'll see you
soon I love you okay.

Me: Nobuhle....

I scream her name crying as she disappears. I feel
some one scoop me up its Max I see my brothers
also running around but I'm in so much pain I
don't know if its because of these babies or
because Nobuhle is gone. Max keeps whispering
that his sorry I don't know who is driving but I feel
like this car is flying.

Zizi: Entle breath slowly.

She is doing breathing exercises with me honestly
they not helping because I keep having the pains.

The car stops and Max carried me out the nurses are already there taking me to a ward they put me in a hospital gown I immediately take it off this shit is irritating me.

Nurse: Mam you have to wear that.

Me: fuck you!!

The doctor walks in with a scared looking Max.

Doctor: okay Mrs Ngidi I need to see how far are you okay.

He says standing at the end of the bed opening my legs Max is just standing next to me. The doctor opens my legs and stick his fingers in my vagina.

Doctor: looks like you have a long way to go I'll come check you after two hours.

Max: are you fucking crazy?! Can you not see she is in pain?! Can you give her something so she can stop crying.

Doctor: do not worry Mr Ngidi she is doing well there is no need to be upset the kids are also okay she just needs time as the babies are preparing to come out.

Then he walks out.

Me: help me off this bed I need to walk a little.

Max: I don't think that's a good idea.

Me: I didn't ask you to think! Get me off this fucking bed!

I scream at him as I feel like my back is about to tear apart he immediately gets me off I walk around this room I go to the door some nurses look me making their faces I do care I see a vending machine I go back to Max who has been looking at me through out this.

Me: give me your wallet.

Max: why?

Me: give me the fucking wallet Max.!

He immediately gives it to me the moment I turn the pain comes back hard I scream crying he holds me as soon as the pain stops I walk out Max runs after me with that stupid hospital gown he tries to make me wear it I grab it and start hitting him with it throwing in some punches as well he just had to annoy me with this shit.

Me: don't fuck with me Max! This shit is all your fault! You did this to me! It's all your fault and your stupid huge dick did this to me! I'm divorcing your stupid big head shit ass you bitch!

All this time I'm screaming and crying hitting him with the stupid gown I feel someone hold my hands I turn to swing my fist and she immediately blocks it its Owami I sob in her arms I'm in so much pain I don't know what do with myself. She gets me back to bed she came with my dad and Baba I don't know how and when they got here but I don't care I'm just happy she is here with me even though the pain is still there but she managed to calm my nerves down.

Hours later the doctor comes in with some nurses by now I'm tired and ready to take these babies out. Max looks like a doctor with his scrubs on his holding my hand and he keeps kissing my forehead.

Doctor: okay Mrs Ngidi I can see your baby crowning so I'm going to need you to give me a big push okay.

I just nod my head.

Max: we can do this Lilly. I'm here okay.

He whispers kissing my head for the millionth time. I start to push squeezing Max's hand who has his forehead on mine before I know it we hear a loud cry.

Doctor: its baby boy. Okay now let's get the next champ out Mrs Ngidi you ready to push again.

I nod my head. Then start to push again another loud cry fills this room hear Max sniffing on my neck. I suddenly feel something pushing through my vagina I just start to push again.

Doctor: looks like we have another one coming.

I thought I was carrying twins now what is this? I push as hard as I can with the little energy I have left as soon as I'm done I pass out.

I wake up hearing a beeping sound I try to move and I feel someone is holding my hand I know its Max with his rough hands. I open my eyes slowly I see Max looking tired but happy he cant even hid his smile.

Max: hey how you feeling?

He says softly brushing my cheek.

Me: exhausted.

I say smiling back at him he kisses me passionately I don't know where that came from but I'm not complaining I moan in his mouth.

.....: please don't make more babies you making me old.

I hear a deep voice we pull out the kiss it's my dad, Baba Owami and his parents. My parents come to kiss me.

Me: where is everyone else?

I ask because I know all the Khumalo babies would be crowding my room right now.

Owami: I told them to come later or tomorrow I don't want them to crowd you And I know you need to rest.

Dad: where are my grandkids?

Three nurses come in at that moment they pushing three small beds one with a pink blanket

and two with blue. Everyone gets excited. The nurses greet but honestly everyone eyes are on the babies

Nurse: they hungry it's time for mommy to feed them before they get grumpy.

They show me how to breastfeed my son first and I fell inlove with him I cant say who he looks like right now but his beautiful. I pass him to Max when I'm done the nurse gives me another one he looks likes the first one. When I'm done I pass him to Max he has given the other to his dad who is glued to him and smiling he is locked in his own world it's cute. They pass me the surprise baby girl she is so hairy and white. She has too much hair for a person who has been here for a few hours, I'm looking at her sucking my nipple shes beautiful her tinny nose looks pink even her ears she has deep pimples just like me I didn't see them on the boys. I feel so drown to her I cant take my eyes off her, she slowly opens her tinny eyes I smile widely as I feel my eyes getting wet. I gasped when I see she has one black eye and one blue eye.

Max: I think you just gave birth to yourself.

He says right next to me I was not even aware his this close my dad and Baba come closer to see she looks at them and smiles her dimples look deeper my God she is so beautiful.

Baba: why does she look so much like you when you were a baby?

Dad: I was about to say the same thing she also smiled like this when Owami held her for the first time.

Max's dad: we should name them.

I still have my eyes on my baby who is still smiling looking at me. I'm lost in her eyes they look too familiar. Wait a minute I frown looking at her she smiles wider.

Me: Nobuhle...

I whisper looking at her she still has her big toothless smile on. She must be fucking kidding me.

Max: Lilly

Max brings me back from my thoughts I look at him.

Me: huh?

He looks at me for a moment.

Max: are you okay? You look flushed.

He says with some concern now the entire room is silent looking at us luckily the nurses are gone. I look back at my baby girl shes still looking at me.

Max: Lilly... should I call the doctor?

Me: huh?? Uhm... no no. Do you believe in reincarnation?

Max looks at me like I'm losing it. Well everyone is looking at me like I'm crazy except my mom she is looking at me then she looks at my baby then at me and back at the baby her eyes get glossy.

Max: reincarnation???

Owami: Nthombenhle....

She says softly looking at me I look back at my baby I swear this is some freaky Friday shit.

Me: Ma...

Owami: please don't tell me its who I think it is?

She says shaking my dad is already by her side.

Dad: owami what's wrong? Please talk to me

We both quite looking at each other we both trying to process this this. We both have tears

Max: lilly what's wrong? Please stop crying

Gosh him and my dad are the same I want to laugh but this is not the time.

Me: I think I gave birth to Nobuhle.

Owami gasps my dad looks at me like I cursed him.

Max: Nobuhle as in your ghost sister?

I look at him and nod my head.

Max: I dont get it.

Me: reincarnation. My last conversation with her she said she can not keep seeing me through her spirit anymore I thought she was leaving me but she said she will be in my life in a different form and she will not remember being in spirit or ghost but this is not what I had in mind.

Max: so what you saying is that my Princess is your sister?

Me: yes and no. Look I don't know much about reincarnation what I know is that it's like the spirit or soul is reborn usually they do not remember their previous lives in a rare case some do remember the life they had before they died.

Max: will it affect her?

Me: I don't think so Nobuhle said she will not remember being a spirit so I guess we have a normal baby but her spirit is Nobuhle .

Dad: can I hold her.

He says with glossy eyes. I hand her over and his immediately locked into her eyes. She falls asleep in his arms. My mom is standing with my dad busy brushing her chick. Max's parents look confused as fuck well I don't blame them Max looks like he doesn't have a problem with his Princess I don't know how to feel about it because it's just I don't know.

It's been 4 months since the birth of my babies no I didn't go to my graduation since I had just given birth. Max built me a farm house as a push present it's our new home its beautiful I have a barn which has two horses named Star and Thunder it's a girl and a boy they beautiful I even have a small place to ride them. The house is a 10 bedroom double storey with a underground safe house a huge garage the décor is exactly of a farm house but looks modern I love how every time I get home it feels like I'm not in joburg its peaceful and quiet yes there are neighbors there are white farmers and some black farmers I just love everything about it. Both our parents stayed with us so that they got to teach me how to take care of a baby my mom and Max's mom didn't really get along at first but now they cool. Maxs dad named the boys Sphamandla Ngidi and Nhlakanipho Ngidi and Max and I decided to name the Princess Nobuhle we just saw it fitting well she is just a normal baby nothing weird about her it's just she looks exactly like me she is daddies angel this one sometimes she doesn't even want me she will cry for Max until

she gets him sometimes I even video call him when his at work so that she can stop crying, Max hates hearing her cry so whatever she wants Max gives I feel like I'm going to be the strict parent and his the going to be the soft one especially for Nobuhle this child doesn't even like it whenever I'm next to Max she just wants to take all his attention I wont lie sometimes I get jealous Max finds it funny. My two boys are just my angles they don't cry as much as the Princess they only cry when they hungry and Gosh the really eat a lot my boobs will be sagging when I stop breastfeeding. I think they took Max's personality because they just relaxed babies as for Max his heaven sent even though he goes to work everyday he still stays up with me to help me with the kids we have sis Busi who helps with the cleaning she stays outside we have a three bedroom small house for her and the gardener.

As for me the past months I've been working on my business plan even though I'm taking it slow but its coming together good and I've been hitting the gym everyday eating healthy my baby fat

dropped and I kinda have my old body back but I'm a little thicker maybe a size bigger I'm good with that I just want to be physically fit Max gyms with me in the morning or we go for a jog we even have a schedule and weekends are family time we even give our workers the weekend off . As the KK table we have been planning on how we going to our mission and I need to be ready for that because in three months we going to make history so all in all I'm a very busy person plus the Medusa work I'm happy Max made a office for me he also has one he still doesn't have a clue about the KK table but in the underworld we the talk of the town well soon they will know that the KK table consists of 11 people but for now they think its 6. Tomorrow we meeting up here in joburg we have three headquarters one here the other in Capetown and KZN so since I had my babies we thought it's best they come down here because I cant travel to them Max will be too suspicious and I don't want to travel with my babies they still too young and I have no intention of leaving them behind. Anyway it's now the afternoon and I'm preparing dinner sis

Busi is sitting on a high chair keeping me company the kids are sleeping and Max will be home in two hours. Sis Busi is 43 years old Baba found her for us she comes from a poor background and she is so rural it took her months for her to stop calling me Madam now she just calls me sisi and calls Max Buti she has one daughter who is 23 years old her husband left for another woman the last time I checked she is living at home in KZN with her aunt which is sis Busis sister. I like sis Busi she is not too old and not too young shes more like a big sister she is scared of Max.

Me: sis Busi Max is not that scary come on.

Sis B: haaa....no he never smiles or talk and whenever he does talk his voice just scares me.

I laugh at her shes so dramatic sometimes I even forget she works for us she is actually a very bubbly and kind person but you can really tell that she is rural from how she dresses and speaks.

Me: you exaggerating.

Sis B: ahhh... obviously you will say that because his your husband so you don't see what I see.

Truth is most people find Max scary and intimidating not only because of the scar on his face but he has an aura that demands respect his presence is heavy you can always feel when his in the room and having that big muscled body and a very deep voice doesn't help it just makes him even more scary, only a few people are willing to risk it all and try to be friends with him but that never really ends well for them because he never smiles or hold small conversations with people well except those close to him and know him to that level he really keeps a small circle and it's very tight especially after the Bongs and Fiona situation.

Me: ai I don't know what to say to you anymore.

Sis B: because you know I'm right. I actually wanted to ask you something well and your husband but I'm too scared of him so I will ask you.

Me: okay..

Sis B: Can my daughter come stay with us well me in the cottage for a while she will be starting at the university next year and I was hoping that she gets a small job close by so that she can save up for pocket money. I promise you will not even see that she is here.

Me: well I don't see a problem there but I will obviously have to talk to Max about it first.

Sis B: thank you so much I really appreciate that.

We carry on talking about how she is finding joburg its actually funny how she describes things somethings I had to show her how they work but otherwise she is cool and she cleans well and shes also good with the babies so I love her. I love how much she respects me and Max as a married couple and our space she never over steps her boundaries sometimes she even gives me advice on being a married woman even though some of it I don't agree with it. Later she leaves I'm done with dinner so I go check on my babies and I find them awake looking at the colorful ceiling my boys have blue eyes but they look like Max Max can not even

tell them apart well I can I don't know how but the moment I look at one of them I can see the difference. I take Spha his already giggling looking all sorts of cute Nhlaka starts to scream I know he also wants attention I go to him and give him lots of kisses he also giggles my heart melts. I quickly change their nappies and feed them and I go to the drama Queen she looks at me with her big eyes.

Nobuhle: haaaaaaaahaaaaa....

She screams with a smile.

Me: hai suka.

Nobuhle: hsiekddhieowonshsosnsbghsieoke.

She speaks her baby language this one is very hyper and loud shes always screaming I just take her and change her nappy and feed her she normally has her leg swinging and she would squeeze my boob as she sucks the life out of it. I get lost in her big eyes this normally happens whenever I breastfeed my babies we connect on a different level they normally look at me like they analyzing my face Nhlaka would always reach out

to touch my face with his tinny hand it's cute and I just fall more in love with them.

I hear noise coming its Max and the boys he walks in carrying both boys Nhlaka has his head layed on his chest its cute and Spha is just fascinated by his face his hands are all over his dad. The drama queen immediately stops sucking and start screaming for her dad we both laugh looking at her trying to wiggle out of my arms.

Max: hey

He says bending down to kiss me which fails when Spha slaps him hard I laugh at him because he now looks frustrated.

Me: hey how are you.

Max: I'm happy I'm home I missed you.

I blush he puts down the boys and takes the Princess who gladly clings on her father the boys don't care they just lay on the floor kicking and throwing their hands everywhere I stand and Max pulls me into his chest Nobuhle looks at me like I just committed a sin.

Me: what you looking at?

Nobuhle: hshdidbdhehkeowjwheiwlns.

She says in her baby talk I know she is swearing at me and I don't care this is my husband.

Me: hai suka.

Max laughs kissing me I kiss him back and tell him to go freshen up so we can have dinner I put the kids in front of the tv and play some kids cartoons while I go dish up and set the table I can hear them making baby noises. Later Max and I have our dinner over a nice conversation.

Max: how is your business plan coming along?

Me: so far so good I would be done with it but I already have so much on my plate but I'm not in a hurry.

Max: I think we should get a nanny to help with the kids I don't like that you work so much I can see that there is something else you working on I know you will tell me when you ready but I don't want you overworking yourself you still have to

make time for yourself and in the past months I haven't seen you do that.

I sigh his actually right all I've been doing is taking care of kids, him this house and working I haven't had time to relax and unwind plus this KK table mission is taking so much of my energy.

Me: let's do this after your birthday I will take a vacation. Actually can I make it a girls trip I miss hanging out with them.

Max: but my birthday is in 6 months that is far.

Me: I cant go now the kids are too small and I'm working on a deadline here.

Max: okay but please get a nanny or ask Sis Busi to help you I'll pay her extra.

Me: speaking of Sis Busi she asked if her daughter can come stay with her in the cottage for the rest of the year she will be starting varsity next year and she was hoping to get her a job close by so she can save up for pocket money. So I wanted to check with you if it's okay I don't don't have a problem with her coming here.

Max: well there is your solution she will help Sis Busi with the cleaning and Sis Busi can help with the babies since she is already familiar with them.

Me: thank you so much now I can finish my work quickly.

Max: anything for you. You already doing a wonderful job with the kids and being a wife the least I can do is lift some of the weight off your shoulders.

I smile that's very thoughtful of him now I can get the mission and my business plan out of the way.

Me: so the girls trip?

Max: who do you want to go with?

Me: Nono,Zizi, Amahle Esihle and Mbali and I'm not sure where we will go but I'll dicuss that with the ladies.

Max: for how long is this vacation going to be?

Me: a week.

He looks at me.

Max: a weekend is enough.

Me: no Max you cant do that to me a weekend is small.

Max: but a week Lilly? You killing me.

Me: a week is not bad.

Max: a week without my wife is bad enough I will not even mention the my machine he can not stay long without talking to his minky.

Me: we stayed two months without sex I'm sure your machine can take a week.

Max: it's not the same you were there to give me some blow job and hand job.

Me: no sex for a week will not kill you.

Max: my machine will fall off.

I laugh at him.

Me: I don't think so.

We continue to argue about this he helps put the kids to sleep while I clean up as I'm busy wiping the counter I feel strong arms wrap around me I feel a butterflies in my stomach. I feel his soft lips on my neck leaving wet kisses that have my minky

feeling like a waterfall, he turns me around and lifts me he puts me on the counter and kisses me I deepen the kiss as I remove his shirt I run my fingers and nails on his chest down to his abs then his hard dick that gets me excited as he groans in my mouth I smile music to my ears I pull it out and start giving him a hand job he pulls out the kiss breathing heavy he looks at me with small red eyes I play with his tip since its oozing out pre cum. He takes off my dress and I'm left with my thong he tears it and start working on my clit while I give him a handjob his eyes have not left mine all along the more he fingers me the more I get wet I even forgot about the handjob I was busy with. He pulls out his fingers and penetrates me slowly with his dick I see my name tattooed going down behind his ear I lick it slowly and nibble on his ear he groans softly as I feel his body shake and I hold him tightly around his shoulders digging my nails on his back as my blood rushes giving me goosebumps all over he moves in and out slowly the deeper he goes he just gives me pleasurable pain his big hands keep squeezing my thighs my

hips they move gently to my lower back and he squeezes me again I moan out again his touch still gives me butterflies in my stomach he wraps his arms around me tightening his grip as he moves faster I know his close so am I the tighter he holds me and the faster his going I'm struggling to breathe but I don't care my body heats up as my built up so close my walls tighten around his dick he groans out my name that sends me over the edge I scream out his name as my orgasm hits me hard he follows me he lazily looks at me breathing heavy.

Max: I love you Lilly

He says softly his eyes show me nothing but love and warmth I see my whole world in them.

Me: I love you Max.

He kisses me and we move our love making to our bedroom it's a good thing I put back the 3 years implant otherwise I would be pregnant again and I'm not doing that anytime soon.

Right now I'm at headquarters with all the Khumalo babies we here to discuss the last details of the mission and add some new things here and there. I spoke to sis Busi about what Max and I decided and she was happy about it her daughter will be here nextweek I left her to look after the kids for a few hours while I'm here.

Siya: why didn't you come with the cubs?

Me: we will all go home and you can see them. I'm not ready for them to see this cruel world.

Nkosi: you sound like a mama bear.

Me: yeah well they my cubs.

Nono: well I'm definitely tagging along I miss them.

Kuhle: can we start with this meeting so we can finish quickly I really want to see them.

Kuhle is like a second father he always video calls me to talk to them sending toys and unnecessary things honestly I've never bought my kids anything everyone is always buying something for

them, his the most attached one to them I wonder how his going to be once he is a father one day.

Me: before we start with that do yall remember when yall tickled me till I peed myself?

They all bust out laugh I look at them with a serious face waiting for them to finish. I want to see who is going to have the last laugh here.

Ndu: you see that little one was classic.

I just look at him.

Luyanda: yes we remember what about that day.

Me: I'm glad yall find it amusing remember you said you will do anything for me to forgive you?

Lu: whatever it is Kuhle will do it since his the one who said it.

Sbu: ya I didn't say that so count me out.

Me: oh.... No no boo it doesn't work like that. When you all tickled me it was fun right so now it's time to pay up.

Siyaa: you know Kuhle this is all your fault.

Sbu: I'm not doing shit I didn't promise anyone anything.

Me: oh... really let me call Baba and see how he feels that yall made me cry especially while I was pregnant.

I say this while I take my phone about to dial his number when Ndu snatches my phone.

Ndu: you don't have to do that. We will all do what you want.

I smirk

Nono: I blame Kuhle whatever she wants you going to get it maybe we will assist you.

Zizi: yeah the last thing we need is to deal with Baba because of we made his Princess cry.

She says rolling her eyes making is sound like I'm a brat I don't care all I know is I'm getting what I want either way.

Siya: okay Nthombenhle tell us what you want.

I look at all of them looking at me.

Me: a Virginia Class Submarine.

I say grinning at them they all silent waiting for me to say I'm joking Sbu throws the popcorn his eating at Kuhle who throws it back at him

Sbu: you see the shit you got us into?!

Kuhle: hai fuck off I didn't tickle her alone.

Siya: come on Nthombenhle be reasonable.

Me: aha... you said anything.

Zizi: I just knew that you going to be extra.

Nono:why can't you be a normal child and ask for a car or a house or something that doesn't require us breaking our backs.

Luyanda: I've been saying that last borns are shitty people.

Lu: now I see it Yanda this one was send by the devil to test us.

Me: oh... come on it's not going to be hard we already stealing from the military why cant I get a Submarine? Plus I'm a Khumalo baby I can never be normal

Nkosi: Nthombenhle what exactly are you going to do with a Submarine?

Siya: this I seriously want to hear.

Me: I'm going to gift it to Max for his birthday.

They all exclaim I giggle.

Sbu: God it gets worse.

Sbu: so all this trouble for Max?

Me: no all the trouble for your little sister that you love very much and would do anything for.

I say grinning at them and they looking at me in disbelief.

Nono: I don't know what Max fed you but I don't like it one bit.

Me: but you guys said anything I want.

I say softly I think it's time I bring in my tears.

Lu: choose another anything Nthombenhle.

My eyes get teary.

Me: but Lu yall said anything .

My tears fall as I say this.

Siya: fuck man! Fine fine we will do it stop crying.

Sbu: I told yall I'm not doing that shit Kuhle will do it since his Nthombenhles personal father Christmas.

Nkosi: Sbu it's either this or deal with Baba and we all here don't want to experience his punishment we remember what happened the last time right.

Well the last time they made me cry and I told Baba he took them and left them half naked at a old graveyard for the whole night but that time they really did hurt my feelings so ever since then they don't mess with me like that. sbu mumbles whatever under his breath annoyed but all in all they agreed to get the Submarine for me I'm a happy girl.

Me: okay back to serious things I was able to hack their security system it was hard and it took me months but I'm in I got us a about 80 soldiers who are now on our payroll so they will be there to assist yall.

Siya: okay that's good so who will be going where.

Sbu: we not going to ignore the fact that you got us military guys on our pay roll. How the fuck did you even get them?

I look at him with a bored expression.

Me: I have a few FEDs, Hawks, black squard and a few others on my pay roll as Madusa.

Their jaws drop looking at me.

Ndu: I'm so happy I'm related to you.

Lu: you the best thing after slice bread I swear.

Me: yes please don't disrespect me now back to business you all going to the field I would tag along but this time I really can't I personally need to make sure everything on side goes smoothly the last thing I need is to lose one of you.

Sbu: okay what is the plan.

Nono: we going to group ourselves then we can take different equipment at the same time.

Me: that can work I've been looking at their schedule and some of their equipment will be coming from servicing well not really they will be

done with servicing it and the next two days it will have to move back to the rightful places that's where we come in we going to steal them before they move them.

Nkosi: why cant we take them when they move them wouldn't that be easy?

Luyanda: I agree with him.

I shake my head.

Me: no that is when its guarded heavily they will have too many soldiers on board and their systems will be too tight for me to work around alone on that day I will jam the signal so literally everything in the world will shut down so yall don't have much time to move it. While you guys are busy moving it I have to keep a eye that no one sees yall and install my new security systems because the moment I shut it down it will erase their systems in everything so us taking their equipments will be the least of their problems.

Siya: you do realise that you opening a a door that will give most criminals access to anything.

Me: yes but they don't know that now do they? only smart people will use this time to their advantage anyway by the time they realise that their equipment is gone we will be long gone so no Nkosi we can not move them on that day

Zizi: I agree will Enhle right after they serviced no one will pay much attention to them because they know they will be moved and there probably have no soldiers on board and since her new systems will be on no one will be able to trace them or find them.

Me: yes they will have to install their systems from scratch the soldiers on board will be the ones on our pay roll but they are there to assist yall so I need you guys to train how to and move handle the machines.

Siya: you do know it takes years of training to operate those machines.

Nono: and we the genius Khumalo babies we can do it in the next few months.

Sbu: hai hai hai yall are very ambitious hey.

Kuhle: oh... come on Sbu you know you can do this I've seen you fly a plane and you only learnt that for a week.

Ndu: yeah stop selling yourself short.

Lu: okay what exactly are we taking that day.

Me: CVN-78 Class Aircraft Carrier. Virginia Class Submarine. P8- Poseidon. I'm sure the Carrier will be carrying a few equipment on it expect to see F/A- 18 E/F Super Hornet , F-22 Raptor, F-32 Lighten II and probably some more weapons.

The guys whistle.

Nono: Nthombi ka Baba you giving me goosebumps.

She says shivering.

Luyanda: people are going to feel us.

Ndu: it's about demn time they recognize.

Me: but guys this is a suicide mission I want it to be as smooth as possible so you really need to focus and give it your all.

Zizi: okay so how are we doing this.

Me: Siya, kuhle and Ndu are getting the Submarine. Nono, zizi, lu and Sbu you getting the Carrier. Nkosi and Luyanda are getting the Poseidon. Yall need to start doing your research about operating them and basically everything about them. Next week expect laptops from me to do your research do not use your personal laptops or phones please the laptops you all get will have everything you need on them about the machines nothing will trace back to us so whatever you research will not show anywhere. On my side I will be preparing all the things you going to need that day.

Siya: so on the day how are we going to get them.

Me: don't worry about that you will be in disguise as soldiers and I'll be making face masks for yall and the soldiers on our pay roll will basically set yall up then yall can take them and leave.

Sbu: sounds too easy.

Me: less is more baby. We do not want to attract attention to you because that can go south real quickly we need to be as quiet as possible you

don't need worry about creamers and such I got you.

Ndu: you little one you deserve that Submarine.

Zizi: yeah shes not Madusa for nothing.

Nono: you make us proud.

I blush. We continue with our planning and everything looks in order.

Nono: well now that we done planning that one we have something to tell yall.

Sbu: please don't ask for a Submarine.

Zizi: shut up Sbu.

We give them our attention.

Nono: well me and and Zizi opened two orphanages one for girls and the other for boys we take from age 5 years to 18 years.

Siya: okay you want us to donate something?

Zizi: shush!

Nono: as I was saying the orphanages are actually created for blue twines the orphans there we not

only give them a nice home but we basically train them to work for us we don't have grown men working for us it's been teenagers and kids all along.

Ndu: so yall have like spy kids going on.

Zizi: something like that.

Kuhle: so what happens when they get adopted?

Zizi: they continue working for us obviously this is a secret no one knows besides us and the those orphans it's just when they adopted their program is a bit different from when they are in the orphanage.

Nkosi: wow this is actually smart hey.

Me: definitely who would suspect kids though.

Nono: exactly. The reason why we telling you this is because we want them to work for the table as well yes I know we already have different men working for us separately but since we combined now why not bring them together.

Siya: I like how you thinking.

Me: yes plus no one knows our identity even the men who work for us the kids will definitely come in handy in most situations they can get into places where grown men cant.

Kuhle: I like how yall think.

Me: Nono how is the training on the kids though is it not hard?

Nono: well sometimes I feel like it is because at the end of the day they kids but we always make sure they also experience being kids and them working for us give them an opportunity to be who they want to be so they can choose whatever career when they get to varsity and they can get married and have kids but they will work for the table until they retire or die and they will not tell anyone about it if they do they die.

Kuhle: how will you know that one of them doesn't speak?

Zizi: so far we working on a substance that we will inject them with, it will only kill the person when

he or she is about to talk too much but we not done yet we still working on it.

Me: I suggest yall talk to Owami shes really good in creating such substances just don't be too direct with it.

Nono: why didn't I think of that?

Siya: so now we have mini soldiers.

Nbu: no we have spy kids.

Me: we cant call them that come with a cool name please.

Lu: so we all good with this?

We all agree.

Nkosi: just make sure their training is good good now because we don't want mess up.

Kuhle: can I be part of training them

Ndu: me too.

Zizi: yes please.

When we done discussing everything we leave and go home we bought dinner on the way I'm not

going to cook at this time and for so many people. When we get home they I go to the cubs sis Busi goes to her house since it's late Max will walk in anytime I did tell him that my brothers are here to spend the weekend and his cool with it. I'm busy setting up the table when hear his voice talking and laughing he finds me in the kitchen he just hugs me while breathing out he holds me for a while and let's go.

Max: let me go freshen up quickly.

He says about to walk away from me I pull his hand and look up at him I can see in his eyes his not okay something has him annoyed and tired.

Me: let's have dinner first then I'll run you a bath.

I can see his hesitant but he allows me to take his jacket off and tie then he goes to join everyone I take them to our room then I go back everyone is already on the table about to eat my brothers have the cubs with them my babies look very happy with all the attention they receiving even my drama queen. Conversation and laughter is flowing nicely but I'm worried about Max his not

entirely himself. When dinner finished Nono and Zizi cleaned up Kuhle offered to take care of the kids to night so I gave him the monitor I'm happy about that because that will give me time with Max. I leave them arguing about whatever and I go prepare a bath for him with candles and oils that will help him relax I know it always does with me, as soon as I'm done I go get him he is actually surprised at how romantic it looks he strips immediately and gets in I get him a glass of whiskey and I also join him in the bath. I'm sitting at the end cutting off his toe nails well somehow that became one of the things he depends on me to do for him like how I cut his hair and beard well I do the same with his nails if I don't do them he walks around looking like a cave man until I sort him out honestly I love it actually some people might think it's too much or it doesn't make sense because he has money he can simply go to a salon or barbershop but I love that he depends on me to take care of him it's our love language even when I'm angry at him or not around he waits for me to come do it he doesn't want anyone else to do it and

I also don't want anyone else to do it for him. Anyway as soon as I'm done I gave him a foot massage all this time he has his eyes closed relaxing. When I'm done I move up to him and sit on him with my legs on his sides his hands goes to my ass lucky I put my neck pillow for him to lay his head comfortably I take my shampoo and start massaging his head he has his eyes closed his really enjoying it he keeps groaning and that makes me horny.

Me: are you going to tell me what has you this tense and stressed?

I ask softly.

His hands move my ass up I feel him push his dick inside me I slowly sit on it he groans again.

Max: the two hotels in Pretoria.

Me: I'm listening.

I say moving my waist slowly while I keep massaging his head honestly multitasking this is hard because I'm also feeling pleasure.

Max: the hotel manager there if running both hotels down.

He says as his voice is deeper and his breathing has changed.

Me: uhm...m...

I moan for him to continue his hands are on my waist tightly moving me back and forth.

Max: well I noticed they not making money like they should and when I looked at the numbers carefully because I thought that someone is stealing I only found that its because guests don't like staying there and when I checked the online reviews they were really bad.

All this time he speaks slowly while trying to regulate his breathing.

Me: uhm...m...m

I moan out again.

Max: so I decided to drive there and check it out and it's true the staff is rude from the moment you walk through the receptionist their uniform looks messy because they have these colorful kinky

hairstyles with nails looking like Hillbrow prostitutes. They pissed me off.

He says as his fingers get tighter around my waist it's a bit painful but I don't care. He starts to move me faster I stop massaging him and take the shower head to wash off the shampoo when I'm done my hands drop to his shoulders his hands get tighter with every thrust since his now fucking me roughly from underneath its painful with some pleasure I don't want him to stop I know his taking out his frustrations on me but he needs this. He pulls me out and has me on my knees I'm grateful that this bathtub is big enough for us I feel him roughly slam into me from behind I scream out he fucks me hard and spanking me painfully I'm not going to cry I know his not intentionally hurting me I don't want him to hold back like he normally does. I feel him grab my neck from the back as his sucking my neck it stings he chokes me and his groaning louder I've never heard him sound like this as much as its painful there is some pleasure in the pain I keep moaning with tears his hold around my neck is a bit too tight I'm about to

orgasm for the second time now and I know it's going to hit me just as hard as the first one. The only thing you hear is our moans, our bodies clapping and water splashing everywhere I feel him ram into me groaning out my name I scream as I feel something tear inside. He slowly let's me go and pulls me in his arms while I cry my vagina is in so much pain.

Max: I'm so sorry Lilly

He whispers holding me tightly kissing my forehead. He carries us out the water and dries us I'm happy I'm not bleeding so that means I'm still okay but my minky is burning he goes to get some ice and eats me up using it. The coldness and his soft lips makes it better. When his done he pulls me on top of him I lay on his chest with his big arms wrapped around me like I'm going to run away I sing softly untill I fall asleep. I wake up alone in bed my body is in knots I see breakfast on my side I slowly get out of bed and walk slowly to the bathroom I pee first and it's so painful I shut my eyes and moan out in pain while I pee slowly

when I'm done which felt like forever I hop into the shower that also takes forever since I'm slow. I'm standing in front of the mirror looking at my bruises the thing about being light skinned the bruises look like I was in a hectic fight my neck is covered with purple greenish fingers I have a few dark maroon or blue love bits my waist has purple marks around it my ass has a few fingers too I think from the spanking. I get pulled back from my thoughts when I see Max on the mirror looking at me when his eyes find mine he looks down immediately. I turn and walk to him I stand in front of him and he still refuses to look at me I cup his face and make him look at me his eyes still move everywhere but me.

Me: please look at me.

I say softly.

Max: I cant I'm too ashamed.

Me: I know you are but I'm not mad at you I know it was never your intentions to hurt me and I know if I asked you to stop you would've stopped but I didn't.

He looks at me.

Max: why didn't you stop me when you were hurting?

Me: I was kind of enjoying it and you needed it.

He looks at me for a while I know he thinks I'm lying but as much as it was painful it was nice.

Me: I really did enjoy the rough sex it's not something I would do everyday but once in a while is okay. I'm okay Max yes I'm in pain now but I wouldn't do anything different last night maybe have a second round but unfortunately minky wouldn't be able to handle your machine.

Max: I don't like how you sacrificed yourself for my frustrations. Did you see how you look like? Lilly I hurt you and I hate myself for it.

I shake my head.

Me: you sacrifice yourself for me all the time I didn't mind doing it and I would do it again if I have too. I don't care about my bruises they will fade away but my husband is less stressed and tense. Max you couldn't get close to our babies

because of your mood you kept your distance the whole night because you were too angry and annoyed I couldn't have you like that for too long.

He sighs looking at me.

Max I'm sorry next time please tell me when I'm hurting you.

Me: and deprive myself of such God sent orgasms. I don't think so.

He laughs a little I smile.

Me: I love you Max.

Max: I love you Lilly. Let me put on the ointment you have for marks and get you dressed before you catch a cold.

Me: yes daddy.

I say seductively he chuckles.

Max: no sex for you till further notice.

Me: we'll see about that.

Max: you a sex addict.

Me: you cant blame me have you seen how sexy you look?

He blushes his cute. I kiss him we spend the weekend having fun even sis Busi at first she was shocked at how my brothers look alike I would always find her looking at them with a confused expression but eventually she got used to them and they also like her.

Today its Monday my brothers are staying at my old house since they will be doing their training at headquarters here in jozi and I will go time to time to ensure they on the right track and I'll be doing some of the work I need to finish there right now Max decided to take a sa day off I'm actually working on making face masks those that look like silicone I'm goo put them on their faces and bland it with make up as much as I know that cameras will be down and no one will see them I still need to keep in mind that there people who can not know their identity when they help them we can not risk having people know who are the KK table which is why I have very few people in this

mission even made sure that these ones know their work I don't want any mistakes whatsoever.

Right now I'm in the kitchen cleaning up we just had breakfast I fed the babies and Max is giving them a bath honestly I don't want to be there because every time he helps with the kids he has his own method of doing things and that gives me anxiety because his doing it wrong I know if I go up there he probably has them taking a bath at the same time and those are just messy and water will be everywhere let me not even mention the baby powder and you know what I'm not even going to think about it because it just drives me crazy when I try to show him how it's done he says it doesn't matter as long as it's done even though it takes him hours to finish doing something that should take him 30min or less. As soon as I'm done I get a call from security telling there is a lady by the name of Nosipho at the gate I know its sis Busis daughter she did say she will be here today sis Busi went out to hang the kids laundry I think that was a while ago she might walk in anytime now, anyway as I wipe my hands I hear a soft knock at the door I go

and open my eyes pop I look at the security guy behind her and his holding his laugh I look back at this girl and blink a couple of times.

Her: hello I'm Nosipho.

She says with a big smile on her face I blink again she has such a squeaky voice.

Me: uhmm... okay please come in.

I say moving aside to make way for her she walks in looking all over the house she stops in the middle of the room well the door is facing the stairs which divide the kitchen and living room the guard put her bag next to her and walks out giggling I still have my eyes running everywhere on her body. She looks nothing like her mother she has a very bright red skirt on it looks like those old silky skirts it's very short, a orange tank top that shows off her big boobs, she is wearing cowboy boots, she has relaxed hair which looks short at the back like she sleeps facing up. Then there is what I think is the make up it looks like caramel foundation but now it's like that thing the old ladies at a village put on their face for the sun she

is not even caramel her skin tone is probably two shades darker judging by her neck and shoulders. She has a red lip gloss a blue eyeshadow I think its mixed with green and her eyebrows look like she just took a black marker and colored them she over used the eyeliner around her eyes. People a lot is happening here I'm so confused.

Me: hi Nosipho I'm Lilly welcome to my home.

I say politely she smiles again I blink a couple of times again.

Her: hi it's nice to meet you. This house is amazing.

I blink again and close my eyes for a moment when I open them shes still there I don't know what I was hoping to see but no my eyes are not deceiving me. This is really happening.

Me: thank you.... Uuhmmm your mom will be happy to see you shes somewhere around the house.

Her: don't worry about it I'll see her soon I'm sure

Me: ehh... okay can I get you something to drink or eat?

...:wwhoooooooooaa

I hear Max saying out loud I look back at him first let me say he looks sexy as fuck he is wearing shorts and socks he is shirtless and those shorts are holding on his torso perfectly he is carrying his Princess who just has a dipper on and her curly hair all over the place I cant stop drooling anyway he has his popped eyes with a confused face looking at Nosi. He finally gets to me and kisses me bringing me back from my thoughts I pull myself together and look back at Nosipo who is just lost in her world drooling at the shirtless Max.

Max: what's with her?

He whispers in my ear still looking confused. I look back at him and find him staring at me.

Me: ehh... uhm this is Nosipho Sis Busis daughter.

He clears his throat I can tell he wants to laugh but his face still looks serious.

Me: why are you shirtless?

Max: I'm trying to put this one to sleep and shes not cooperating with me.

Me: I still don't understand why you shirtless.

Max: its wet.

He looks at me with his googly eyes I know his trying to annoy me.

...: Nosipho!

We hear sis Busi shouting we look at her and she looks so shocked by her Daughter.

Nosi: Mom!

She says running to her and throws herself on her and Sis Busi looks frozen I hear Max giggle next to me. She pulls back she still has her big smile sis Busi has a frown looking at her from head to toe I guess she doesn't know that her village slay queen is here to slay us.

Sis B: what are you wearing Nosipho?

She says with her frown and Nosipho looks at herself and back her mom.

Nosi: huu...Ma what wrong with my clothes.

Max is giggling again he cant even giggle his deep voice is loud. I nudge me him to stop.

Sis B: I don't even know where to start.

Max busts out laughing they both look at us his laughing so much I join him even his Princess is now laughing I don't know at what exactly because she doesn't even know what's going on.

Me: Max lets go get you two dressed.

I say pulling him back upstairs and his still laughing.

It's been a month now and we've been working our asses off I really want this mission to just be done already I'm tired my siblings have been working hard they make me proud hey, ever since Nosipho arrived honestly I don't know how to feel about her because she is honestly testing my patience shes always wearing her short dresses and skirts at least she doesn't wear her funny make up anymore I find her voice the most annoying I already see she wants Max and Max is finding it funny truth is I'm tolerating her because of sis Busi she keeps reprimanding her about how she carries herself and always trying to be in Max's face she annoys the shit out of me and I'm trying to be a

better person but with the speed she is going one of these good days she will know me.

Today we going to some business gala dinner I'm obviously going with Max it will be taking place in one of his Hotels. The past two years we were unable to go because he was recovering from the shooting incident then the other time we were too busy with other things so today we definitely going. Alex did send me all my lingerie pictures we did and they were so beautiful when the pictures went public I kinda became a little famous because now some people recognize me when I'm out or in public my Instagram followers doubled I honestly hate the attention Max doesn't really care as long as no one is trying to be in my space he has five more body guards on top of the five I already have and no no one can actually see them unless you pay careful attention then you will see that I always have about 10 people following me I don't mind because they are not in my face and they don't attract attention to me, my sisters also have them and they also don't have a problem with it. Truth is we know that our husbands are in a

dangerous business of drugs and we also have our own on the side the last thing we need is dealing with kidnapping and such. Anyway I just came back from the spa I needed to wax since my dress will be revealing my legs and I had to make sure my skin will be glowing Max got me a glam team so they will be here soon since its already lunch time I'm glad I was able to groom Max's hair so his good. I open the door and the first thing I smell is food somebody is cooking in my kitchen no one cooks in my kitchen besides me everyone knows that even sis Busi doesn't cook or clean my kitchen unless I specifically ask her even Max knows this if I'm not there he makes his own food or order in he doesn't eat food that's not made by me or obviously my family or his. The moment I walk in I see the village slay queen in my kitchen with my apron on I silently look at her moving around my kitchen I remember making it clear to her about my kitchen shes even singing I chuckle shaking my head as I walk in and sit on the high chair when she sees me she fake smiles at me. I put my hand under

my chin balancing it on the counter still looking at her.

Me: Nosipho what did I say about my kitchen.

She rolls her eyes thinking I cant see her I smile a little.

Her: well you were not here since I saw Max around I thought he might be hungry.

Me: really?

This one is testing me.

Her: yes really.

Me: so when I said never cook in my kitchen you thought I was being stupid?

She shrugs her shoulders. You see the problem? Then my brothers will say I have anger problems I need anger Management classes but when shit like this happens they not here to see it.

Me: uhmm...

I stand up and go outside I go to the big black dustbin and pull it I see sis Busi hanging laundry

she greets me I greet her back I pull the dustbin I walk in the kitchen and shes singing again.

Her: hey!... you can't bring that in here its dirty.

Is she trying to tell me what to do in my kitchen?? I choose to ignore her today I woke up in a good mood and I want to keep that mood. I see Max coming down the stairs I ignore him instead he stands there leaning on the wall with a smile and his arms folded on his chest I'm pretty sure his ready to enjoy this show. I go to the pots and switch them off.

Her: hey!... what is wrong with you? Cant you see I'm still busy with that?!

She shouts with her squeaky voice which hits my nerves in a very irritating way.

Me: you making noise.

I say calmly taking her first pot and throw it in the dustbin.

Her: are you crazy?!

She screams again I give her a hot back hand slap she spins and collides with my cupboards I go take

the other pot and throw it in. I throw in everything she used in here.

Her: Max are you going to let her do this to me?

She says crying I slap her again she spins again and drops to the floor I knocked her out nxa coming to disrespect me in my house.

Me: Max nywe nywe nywe nywe.

I say mimicking her irritating voice as I pull her with one leg Max busts out laughing at me I open the dustbin top again and go pick her up shes a bit heavy but nothing I cant handle I put her over my shoulder and throw her inside she behaves like trash then I'll treat like one coming into my house with her village slay queen tendencies all this time Max is busy looking at me with a smirk. I close the bin and pull it out as I'm busy pulling it sis Busi comes to me.

Sis B: have you seen Nosipho?

Me: Nope.

I say pulling it I put it at it's right place and dust off my hands and walk back inside I find Max where I

left him. I walk pass him but he pulls me back and picks me up I wrap my legs around him.

Max: I miss seeing your crazy self.

Me: she just had to piss me off shes very disrespectful nxa.

He laughs at me because I'm very annoyed by her and I have no intentions of telling her mother I will deal with her the Lilly way since she doesn't listen to sis Busi when she talks to her.

MAX

I'm currently sitting down at the lounge waiting for Lilly to finish getting dressed honestly I cant wait to show her off at the gala dinner before I used to go alone at first I wanted to take one of my side chicks but decided against it the last thing I wanted was to have pictures of me with random girls I'm happy I waited because now I'm going to take my Lilly plus its time people know who shes married too I've seen a few blogs about her ever since she did that lingerie photo shoot people are really recognizing her and I don't think shes aware

of how big she and her sisters are becoming. I'm pulled back from my thoughts when I see her glam team walk down the stairs I stand up because I know it means they are done finally we can go I don't know why they took so long. I'm wearing a black suite with a maroon Chinese collar shirt well Lilly choose this for me and I actually like it its different from the suites I wear I'm happy im not wearing a tie. Her glam team are now looking at me smiling looking excited I first smell her sweet perfume I turn my head and look at the stairs then I hear her loud heels shes walking slow eventually she appears up the stairs the first thing I see is her yellow thick sexy leg drop to the next stair my jaw drops as my eyes move up her thigh she has a slit that goes up until her waist I don't think shes is wearing underwear my dick jerks I close my mouth and swallow hard when I see her waistline looking smaller then usual my eyes move up her boobs her dress is maroon coved in glitter all over the dress is a mermaid so it hugs her perfectly with a deep sweetheart line and thin strips that go over her shoulders. Her hair is tied up nicely her

makeup is not too much but it's much more beautiful than other days. She has a small black bag on her hand she looks like the most beautiful woman I've ever seen she finally makes in down I take her hand and she stands in front of me looking down I think shes being shy I want to kiss her but I'm scared to even touch her she looks like a doll a beautiful doll I've ever seen.

Me: you look beautiful.

I say softly she looks up at me and her eyes look even more beautiful she looks down blushing again her glam team just left after I thanked them for their wonderful job. I look back at my wife shes really beautiful I cant even take my eyes off her.

Her: please stop staring at me.

She says still looking down blushing like no bodies business I chuckle.

Me: but you beautiful I don't know where else to look

She giggles my heart warms up as I get that tingling feeling in my stomach.

Her: you making me shy.

I was about to say something when we get disturbed.

.....: you going to know who I am wena.!

We turn and I see Nosipho marching with so much anger towards Lilly she looks dirty and smells disgusting I frown looking at her the moment she get close I grab her on the throat and have her dangling in the air wiggling in my hold.

Lilly: Max please put her down.

Me: you want me to put down the person who tries to disrespect wife in my presence? Really?

I say looking down at Lilly she blinks her cute eyes at me I just let Nosipho go she drops on the floor coughing and gasping for air. I need to talk to sis Busi about her daughter before Lilly kills her and I wont stop her. Truth is I actually miss her crazy self I was so excited when I saw her slap her today maybe I'll just let her stay I know she drives my wife crazy so I know I'm going go see more of her crazy. I look back at Nosipho.

Me: get the fuck out of my house you stink.

I say calmly she quickly gets up crying and leaves. Anyway we finally drive to the hotel well Lilly decided she is driving more like flying I'm seriously going to get a few speeding tickets because of her we driving in one of my sports cars and she looks excited and happy.

Me: can you please slow down.

Her: in this car? You must be joking

Me: are you trying to kill us?

Her: Max just enjoy the ride imagine being in a rollercoaster .

I look at her and she drives even faster if she wasn't such a good driver I would've stopped her a long time ago. We finally make it there and we find a convey of cars moving slowly to the red carpet.

Me: are you ready?

Her: yes I am.

Me: you do know that the moment we walk out this car you going to be very famous and people will want to be in your space all the time?

She sighs and looks at me. I know Lilly hates attention and her being famous will bring her too much attention.

Me: you know we can still turn this car around and go home we will Netflix and chill.

I say wiggling my eyebrows with a smirk and laughs out loud and hits my shoulder softly.

Her: stop it anyway we already here you know I'm not one to back out a plan.

Me: okay just know I'll always be beside you okay. I got you now let please let me show off my beautiful wife please

She nods her head giggling and I kiss her cheek. We finally make it at the red carpet and there are so many cameras and journalists she stops the car while looking outside the windows are tinted so no one can see us you can see some of them are

already facing us with their cameras ready to see who is next I hold her hand she turns to look at me.

Me: you ready?

She just looks at me.

Me: remember our first outing when we went for bungee jumping?

Her: yeah...

Me: remember how you trusted me?.

She smiles lightly.

Me: just like that day please put your trust in my hands again I wont let you fall alone I will not let you go I promise.

Her eyes get gloss.

Me: don't you dare cry you will ruin my doll face.

She giggles.

Her: doll face??

Me: yes doll face now let's do this.

I kiss her hand and open the door I step out the cameras start flashing immediately I fix my suit

jacket and close the door I walk around and open the door for Lilly I lend out my hand for her she takes it and steps out the car her yellow thick small cute foot steps out first and the other follows as she leans out the car by now all the attention is on us. She hand stands next to me looking down I kiss her chick as she hands the car keys to the concierge guy to go park it she then looks up at me and smiles softly while squeezing my hand. I band down to her ear and whisper.

Me: you good?

She nods her head I move my hand to her waist then we slowly walk down the red carpet posing for pictures I have my hand around her waist.

Me: I need to let you take pictures by yourself.

I whisper to her she looks up at me like I just curse her.

Me: don't worry I'll be next to you.

She nods her head again but I can see she is hesitant I take her hand we walk further I stop and let her hand go I fix her dress tail behind her and I

go stand a few feet from her she keeps moving gently while smiling I'm just standing here admiring how beautiful she looks every journalist wants a piece of her. Eventually we make it inside a few people keep turning their heads looking at us Lilly has been holding my hand tightly honestly it makes my heart warm up whenever she is this affectionate with me when we in public she is never ashamed of how people look at my face and right now people are in disbelief that I actually have the most beautiful woman in this room. We've been sitting here listening to speeches they are boring as fuck and I know that I'm next. I spoke too soon because the MC just called my name I kiss Lilly on her cheek and stand buttoning my blazer suddenly the room is too quiet I slowly walk to the stage I finally make it on the stand I clear my throat.

Me: goodevening ehh.. honestly I didn't know I will be standing here today giving a speech so im not prepared at all. I have not attended this gala for the past two years so I honestly have nothing to say to you either than please enjoy yourselves

enjoy the food the drinks the entertainment and mostly the company because truth is I just came here to enjoy this night with my lovely wife over there. Thank you.

I look at Lilly who looks like she is ready to bust out laughing I know its because of my speech and I don't care the moment I get to my seat I lean in to her.

Me: I know you want to laugh at me.

She busts out laughing people turn to look at us I keep my serious face looking at them and Lilly beside me she has the room filled with her loud sweet laughter I look at her until she is finished then she looks at me giggling.

Her: I'm sorry I couldn't hold myself what kind of speech is that?

She whispers to me I just look at her because I know if I answer her she will laugh out loud again. Eventually the food comes in there is a live band playing soft music conversation is nice and all we sitting on a round table of 10 people we sitting in

couples everyone is having a good conversation around the table Lilly is talking to the lady next to her I'm having a business conversation with the gentlemen.

Lilly: I need to use the toilet I'll be back okay.

She says brings my attention back to her.

Me: okay let's go.

I say standing up and she stops me.

Lilly: no it's okay I'll be back now now.

Me: okay then.

I kiss her cheek and watch her walk away.

.....: shes very beautiful.

I turn my attention back to Mr Willams.

Me: indeed she is.

Mr w: and why have you been hiding her you really caught us by surprise.

I chuckles.

Me: I was not hiding her she just doesn't like being in the spot light.

We carry on having a general conversation it's been about 20 minutes now and Lilly is not back I excuse myself and go look for her when I get to the ladies toilet I don't find her where could she be. I decide to walk down the corridor I keep passing conference rooms I get to the end of the corridor where I either go left or right so I just stand there for a moment I take out my phone I want to check her tracker I get disturbed when I hear a piano playing I bring my head up again and look both sides to figure out where is it coming from its playing softly I like it.

Stormy Sunday blues

Rolling around the room

You seem to hide your smile

With diamond colored Hughes

I hear Lilly's voice singing softly I feel my heart skip a beat as I get goosebumps all over my body. I follow her voice I see a white man standing at the

door looking inside with his hands in his pockets only to find him looking at Lilly who has her eyes closed playing the piano singing I stand next to him and immediately get suck in her calming presence and angelic voice. The lights are dim in here I watch her sing Sunday Blues by Langa Mavuso so beautifully as soon as shes done she opens her eyes and looks at us our eyes lock and she smiles sweetly I walk in and go sit next to her and look at her.

Me: I feel like I don't know my wife.

She giggles shrugging her shoulders.

Me: why was I never told about this?

She shrugs again.

Me: you play and sound beautiful.

She blushes looking down.

Her: thank you.

Me: how did you even end up in here I've been looking for you.

Her: I kinda got lost coming back but I saw this piano and I haven't played in a while so I decided to check it out.

Me: uhm... where did you learn how to play.

Her: Baba taught me he said my grandmother could play it too.

Me: tomorrow I'm going to buy us one.

Her: really?

She says with some excitement all over her face.

Me: definitely I just don't understand why you never told me that you play it.

Her: you never asked and it slipped my mind.

I look at her she smiles innocently till today this lady right here still has so many layers to her it's funny how I still find her intriguing shes the most weirdest and fascinating person I've ever met. I bring my face close to hers and kiss her deeply I hear her moan in my mouth and my dick jerks I pull out the kiss.

Me: I love you Lilly.

Her: I love you more Max.

We go back to dinner and everything is been going smoothly but you can tell some people want to ask about me and Lilly I don't know if its my face scaring them or Lilly's intimidating eyes.

Me: may I have this dance mrs Ngidi

I say with my hand out to her the band just started to play a slow jam.

Lilly: yes you may mr Ngidi.

She says blushing taking my hand I help her stand and we walk to the dance floor a few people are already there I feel people's eyes of us the moment we get to the floor I pull her to my chest with my hand around her waist and the other holding her hand she looks up at me I loose myself in her eyes I bring my face closer to hers and our foreheads touch I tighten my grip around her waist I hear her gasping and I feel her hot breath on my face we gently move together. I love how she feels in my arms I could stay like this forever I let go of her hand and my hand lands on her round ass she

wraps her hands around my neck and gently brush the back of my head she likes doing that and sometimes it makes me dizzy. All I can say is I'm a happy man my night with my wife was just beautiful I should take her to these kind of things since now I enjoy them with her beside me.

We made it back home last night and right now I'm looking at my beautiful wife who is snoring softly I made sure we switch off our phones because I don't want anyone calling us I want to spend the whole day with her. Anyway I get up and leave her sleeping I go to the kitchen and prepare breakfast for us it's the weekend so sis Busi is not coming as soon as I'm done I place it in the warmer and go check on my kids I get the my princess first and shes wide awake she smiles when she sees me I start having a conversation with her while I change her dipper she's keeps giggling and wiggling when I'm done with her I go to the boys room and they also awake I do the same I carry all three of them down I put them in their chairs and go get their milk it should be warm now. I'm grateful for our mothers they showed us how to

take care of them otherwise I was never going to survive and I think I'm lucky I got calm kids they don't give us problems that I always hear about. I watch them holding the bottles for dear life and sucking them they even breathing heavy they really eat a lot I look at them they all have their blue eyes on me honestly I find this whole thing they doing fascinating.

....morning

Lilly says walking in the kitchen I smile looking at her as she is wearing my shirt her legs really look yummy she comes to me she stands in front of me as I'm leaning on the counter I wrap my arms around her waist and pull her closer I drop my head and kiss her.

.....: hhhhaaaaaahhassa.

I pull out the kiss groaning as I look at these three small people looking and us screaming they not drinking their milk anymore.

Me: why are you three like this?

Lilly hits my chest.

Her: leave my babies alone I miss them.

She says trying to get out of my hold I tighten my grip and she looks at me I don't want to let her go.

Her: please let me go I want to greet my kids.

Me: just say hallo they can hear you.

Her: ouch...

She says hold her back as something falls I look behind her and see that Princess hit her with her bottle she giggles happily looking at us.

Her: you see they want attention now let me go.

Me: no

I hear the other bottles falling I look at the boys and they just blabbering their language. Princess just start screaming her lungs out I let go of Lilly and go to her the moment I pick her up she squeals I chuckle kissing her whole face she giggles. I spend the whole day playing with them and having sex with my wife everywhere.

LILLY

It's been about 3 months now and I've been working like hell my babies are now 9 months old and they so chubby I'm talking big cheeks and rolls they just fat babies cute fat babies I love them they are heavy though I was so worried about their weight thinking it will affect their health when I took them to the doctor she just told me that they are perfectly fine it's just baby fat it will fall off as they get older as long as they eat healthy they are good that was a relief I've been slowly introducing solid foods to them and they've been teething at first it was a nightmare but once we got the hang of it they are doing great but everything they get their hands on goes to their mouth and it doesn't help that they started crawling so its hectic right now. I'm officially famous and I hate every minute of it the only good thing about it is that Lexi Lace has been doing so well because it showed that I partly own it and my pregnancy modeling pictures went viral so she even opened two more branches she is very happy every journalist or magazine wants a piece of me and my life its annoying honestly Max is the one who has been doing

interviews even though those are for his businesses but somehow they end up asking about me and he always keeps it short I appreciate that I hardly go out in public I cant take it when people try to be in my business . I'm done with my business plan I'll deal with it later for now I've been focused on the mission we've been working day and night and now everything is finished next week we will be going into action I'm so excited but nervous because what we about to do will set us up for life I'm talking generational wealth here my great great great great grandkids will not need to even lift a finger basically I can retire at the age of 23. Then there is Nosipho my god this girl was created to just annoy me honestly till today she still does the most I've been too busy to attend to her I'm busy during the day im usually at the headquarters but when I am home she never misses to show me her attitude Sis Busi on the other hand is not aware of what her daughter is doing Max wanted to chase her out when we saw the security footage showing her in my room trying on my clothes I told him that I will deal with

her so now we keep my bedroom locked at all times we got those finger prints door handles so only me and Max access our bedroom and the two studies I've seen her look at me and Max with a frown on her face she honestly wants my life and she is not hiding it right now I have more important things to do, tomorrow Max is taking the kids to his parents house I asked him that they must stay there for a week or two since I'll be busy with the mission I'm happy that his been understanding and supportive about this whole thing especially since he doesn't even know what I'm busy with he thinks it's my Medusa work but honestly I want this mission to be done already so that I can go back to being a proper wife and a mother I don't want them to feel neglected so the sooner I'm done with this the better.

I'm laying on top of Max with both my legs on his sides his fingers keep moving up and down gently on my thighs my head is laying on his chest listening to his heart beat. The kids left last week and it's been very quiet I actually miss them his parents are so thrilled to have them there even his

sisters are having a blast since they always posting them, their Instagram is flooding with stories of my munchkins some of them are so cute I just went to fetch them at that moment but I'll see them next week tomorrow I'm going to headquarters since we will be doing this mission.

Me: Max...

Him: uhmmm..

His chest vibrates I smile I love it when it does this.

Me: I'll be leaving for a few days.

I feel his body tense up his fingers stop doing their job.

Him: where are you going? How many days are we talking about here.

Me: I cant tell you where exactly I'll be going but I know my tracker will obviously show were I'll be. I'll be gone for about 7 to 10 days.

He goes silent.

Him:who are you going with?

Me: khumalo babies.

Then he goes silent again.

Him: why am I feeling uneasy about this.

I sigh well I cant really tell him what's going now he will figure it out soon Max is a very calculated man I know he will soon know what's going on but for now I don't want to tell him yet because he might stop me from going so I'll deal with him later.

Me: maybe because we have something serious that we need to do which I can not tell you about right now.

He goes silent I hear him breath out heavy. I sit up straight still on top of him and look down at him.

Me: nothing is going to happen to me I'll be back in one piece.

He looks at me for a while I can see that he wants to refuse but he knows me better then anyone I will not listen to him not about this.

Him: okay if anything happens to you Lilly..

Me: nothing is going to happen to me I promise.

I drop my head and kiss him his hand move to my ass and he flips us over he start kissing me from my neck slowly moving to my boobs before I know it he tears my thong and buries his face in my minky I squeal when I feel his tongue doing the most I grab the sheets as I feel my body heat up he stops and comes up to my face honestly I feel like crying I just want to come he kisses me slowly and passionately I feel him poke me I can't take this any longer I move my hand to his dick and it's hard as a rock dripping precum I gently stroke him he groans in my mouth I feel myself orgasm a little he gets me so excited I push it my minky his big size still gets me but now I'm used to him I bit his lip as I feel myself getting even more wet he curses in my ear as he pushes himself deeper I dig my nails on his back and pull him closer to my skin my body shakes as he starts slowly thrusting I moan feeling my tears coming close as my orgasm he makes love to me like it's the last time. I keep having orgasms and squirting while we still in our missionary position honestly Max does the most in this position his arms always know when to

squeeze and where to touch one minute he will be on my boobs next on my ass or waist then on my clit he just drives me crazy. He always leaving me wanting more but my body and minky just complain when we go overboard.

It's now 6am and I just got to headquarters I find everyone waiting for me. I give them their individual bags which has their facial silicone mask they will put them on when they go to Naval Station Guantanamo Bay it's the military site where they will get the equipment. They all basically have everything they will need including their uniforms, access cards etc. Everyone is quiet today we all lost in our thoughts because this mission is really risky I keep praying in my heart that everything goes as planned. The jet will be taking off soon since Sbu and Ndu know how to fly a plane so they will be the pilots so they left to go get it ready we all sitting around the table looking at each other no one has said a word ever since we got here.

Me: are we ready?

The all look at me and nod their heads I see a little concern and doubt in their eyes.

Me: I know we are scared right now as we should be but we are the Khumalo babies and as far as I know regardless of all the fear we currently feeling we still going to do this and we going to do it perfectly as we planned. I know very well that we motivated by fear in this family so I know we will do well okay.

They nod their heads like kids honestly if only they knew that what they have to do is not that much they wouldn't be this scared because I on the other hand I'm shitting my pants scared as hell I feel like I bit more than I can chew I'm too ambitious for my own good.

Me: I will contact you on the phone I gave Siyanda as soon as you guys arrive there okay.

We go through last minute planning and all seems to be okay Siyanda says a prayer then they leave I go to the my computer room where I set up all I'm going to need is my three laptops and different screens which are about 10 hanging on two walls

one wall is where I'm going to keep track of the Khumalo babies and their mission. The other wall is for different missions I'll get to that later for now I switch everything on and call Lolo remember him his my go to guy as Madusa.

Lolo: hello.

Me: Lolo.

Lolo: Madusa.

Me: I hope all your man are ready.

He sighs

Lolo: yes they are.

Me: oh... cheer up Lolo before you get your blood pressure too high.

Lolo: well I would be more relaxed if only I knew why most of my men are all over the world.

Me: you worry too much.

He sighs again.

Me: wait for my call you will receive an email before you sleep the moment you open it you have only 30 seconds to read it then your system will

crash so I suggest you use a different device to open it. Whatever you read there make sure its tattooed in your brain because if you fuck up you dead.

He goes silent for a moment.

Lolo: okay.

I hang up and send Max a text that I'm still good I know his probably stressed about me at least his with Juicy since his wives are busy.

I just woke up and its 5am I just finished showering I'm alone here it's so weird sleeping here alone I send Max a morning text and I'm snacking I'll eat proper food later I'm too nervous I don't think I'll be able to eat anything. I walk into my computer room and start setting up I know my siblings are now ready I told them to go rest as soon as they arrive which was two days ago now I know its night time at their side and they preparing themselves I also told Lolo to tell his men to be ready. Their electronics show me that there are now connected they have contact lenses on to hide the color of their eyes and they allow me

to see whatever they see they also have earpieces so they can hear me right now I'm using Nonos eyes since she is all set up and ready before everyone else. She turns her face and I see my brothers looking different even their skin tones are different some are darker or caramel their jaw line, cheek bones, ears and lips make them look completely different I must give it to Nono and Zizi they did an amazing job.

Me: wow you guys look different.

Nono: well that was the whole point I also feel weird around them.

She also looks different. As soon as they done they leave everyone is still quiet too quiet for my liking but I let them be normally they would be teasing each other and being loud and playful but I guess they really taking this mission serious. They now travelling to the military site I check on Lolo and his guys and everything seems to be coming together nicely. Now I'm busy typing in codes in an hour everything will be shutting down except for me. After a while they arrive and luckily the guys

on our payroll have been waiting for them in the military base they don't waste time they immediately get going they actually look like they belong there the soldiers who I put in place lead them to their rightful places I can tell that they are nervous.

Me: okay guys everything is going well keep calm you will be out of there soon.

They don't say anything well they cant really respond at the moment because they amongst the soldiers. They get in the in equipment and go straight to control areas. They all settle in.

Siya: okay we good to go.

Wait..... what is that?? I bust out laughing immediately I can see they also trying to hold in their laughs but Ndu and Sbu join me. Thing is I gave them pills that will change their voices for a few hours and I didn't expect Siya to sound like the rabbit snap chat filter voice changer it's so squeaky.

Siya: okay that's enough guys.

He says trying to sound annoyed.

Kuhle: if I were you I would just stop talking.

He says giggling his sounds scratchy and a bit deeper. Siya groans but that comes out sounding like a mouse.

Ndu: what's that??

We laugh even worse Gosh this is really not the time for this even though I love how we have lighten up the mood but still.

Me: okay guys the count down has started as soon as everything shuts down I will put in coordinates that will show you where exactly you will be taking that equipment.

Nkosi: you never really told us where exactly you taking these things.

Me: and I still wont tell you just follow the coordinates. Just know there are people already waiting for you there they will assist you with everything once you get there.

I honestly cant get used to their voices and faces I miss seeing the real them anyway I call Lolo.

Me: Lolo

Him: Madusa.

Me: I hope you ready I'm about to give you the go ahead.

Him: I'm ready.

I'm now just looking at my count down patiently praying that we actually pull this mission successfully. 3....2.....1 I press my red button everything goes black my room turns green then my computers and screens come back to life I quickly enter my coordinates.

Me: we on...

Lu: let's go.

They immediately start moving. I get back to Lolo and tell him it's time. His men start moving they look like small ants on my screens they just everywhere dressed in black some are in disguise. I go back to my main mission which is the equipments I start installing in new systems which is going to take about two hours on the other hand I had to make sure that the rout they using will not

only give them problems but I made sure that they will be the only people flying and in the ocean I didn't want any disturbance or someone getting hurt unnecessarily. As I'm busy typing away I keep checking my monitors to ensure they still not aware what's really happening and shame man they look so lost and confused because they don't even know where to start or what to do. Their IT departments are trying everything but there is no signal or anything they can do since they cant even call anyone to check what's going on. After 3 hours of being on the computer typing endlessly my systems are half way through I stop for a minute and crack my knuckles fuck that was painful I look over my monitors and Lolos men are doing the most honestly I would never pick a better person for this job his boys are well trained and his always delivers on time. I look over some of the police stations and these people still think it's some electrical problem somewhere. The military have not even noticed that some of their equipments is gone.

It's been 6 hours now Lolos men are done now and they preparing to leave and come home so one less thing to worry about they did encounter problems here and there but nothing serious. Now I'm concentrated on my siblings my systems are now in place so it's time to bring back the electricity.

Me:okay guys now that you all half way to your destination bring back the electricity.

They all sigh out relieved I cant believe we half way through this even now we still nervous and scared we've been trying to communicate well they've been talking amongst themselves even though we still tense about everything I just couldn't even talk or joke around with them because keeping an eye on everything by myself is not child's play because I know if something goes wrong it will be my fault since I'm their eyes and ears so I cant even afford a slip up and the last thing I want is for something to trace back to us.

It's been a few hours since I brought back the power everyone is still confused and Lolos men are going to lend soon my siblings will be at the

Blue Caves Zakynthos in Greece its actually an island so it's where we will be keeping the equipment until we decide what we going to do with it and my siblings will spend two days there ensuring that everything that side stays as is because I know we cant have tourists visiting that place while I have those things there but Lusanda and Lu said I shouldn't worry about it they will take care of it since they all will be that side which is perfect for me as I will be busy with Lolo.

Well it's been two days now and I haven't slept a wink energy drinks have been keeping me up as soon Lolos men got back I had to give them a place where they will be delivering the things I wanted luckily I was able to get them into the country with no trouble then I've beeping an eye of the police and the military all I can tell you is that we are trending from every social media or every news channel well they don't know what exactly happened or who did what but they've kinda figured it out that it's one person responsible for all this but still struggling to put a face on us. Some governments have their weird theories at some

point they started saying its aliens that one cracked me up. Anyway now that everything is fine the Khumalo babies are on their way back well as for them they don't really know that we trending since they've been gone.

I'm woken up by noise the way I'm so tired I don't know what to do with myself I get out of my bed and go rinse my mouth and face I go to our lounge I find them chilling eating so much junk food.

Me: couldn't yall keep it down?

I ask them feeling a bit annoyed.

Nono: whoa!! What train hit you?

Ntando: you look like shit.

Ndu: what exactly have you been doing all this time?

Khuhle: you got eye bags little one.

Zizi: you just look horrible.

I just look at them telling me how ugly I look and shit I ignore them and start eating with Lu I didn't even realize I'm this hungry.

Lu: ai Nthombenhle you finished my food.

Me: I was hungry.

Sbu: I don't blame you, you look like a hobo.

I hit him with a cushion.

Me: stop it.

Nkosi: no like honestly Entle what have you been doing here because you finished your job three days ago?

Siya: yeah you could've gone to Max I'm sure his suffering from separation anxiety.

Me: leave my husband alone.

Kuhle: no like seriously you two are always together or did yall fight or something.

I roll my eyes they way I'm so tired and my stomach is now full I honestly don't even have the energy for them. I climb on top of Lu and get comfortable.

Lu: I'm not Max get off me.

He tries to get me off but I scream tightening my hold around his neck. I feel like such a baby.

Me: noooooo! No.

Lu: mxm

He let's me be I fall asleep again. Later I wake up between Nono and Zizi holding on me for dear life I wiggle myself out and go shower I feel much better that sleep was really what I needed as soon as I'm done I wear my Jean's and baggy shirt I miss my man now it's been 6 days since I left him all alone today I'm going home I don't even want to hear stories I even miss my babies. When I get to the lounge I find the boys playing video games I join them within an hour the girls also come down.

Me: guys I'm going home today I miss my husband and kids.

Ndu: we still don't understand why you still here.

I give him a look while everyone chuckles.

Ndu: I'm kidding little one you know we love you.

I really eyes.

Me: follow me please.

I say standing and walking away they follow me mumbling and saying things I cant hear since they all talking at the same time I keep walking we get to our underground basement the light automatically switch on since they are sensors. I keep walking to the back and open a hidden door.

Siya: since when do we have a hidden door here?

I just ignore him and walk through the passage.

Sbu: I feel like we in some horror movie.

Kuhle: Entle what are we doing here?

Nono: can yall stop complaining geeze.

They complain even worse honestly I don't know how I survived with these people all my life. I walk in a room and it's dark and they still complaining I feel like my head is going to pop.

Me: yeeeeeeeyyyy!

They all get quiet.

Me: fuck yall are annoying as shit.

They all exclaim I switch on the light they all go quiet and look at me confused.

Siya: why are we in a creepy room full of boxes and things covered in black cloth?

Me: open one and see.

I say smiling happily. Ndu walks to one covered in a cloth.

Me: please be careful when you open that.

I looks at me and gently removes the cloth. We looking at him he takes a step back and it's a painting.

Nkosi: is that a Leonardo de Vinci's Salvatore Mundi???

He asks with his eyes popped out oh... how can I forget Nkosi well Nkosi is the artist of the family loves painting and drawing and his very good at it.

I nod my head grinning at him.

Lu: okay so what's so special about this painting .

He says in a bored tone Nkosi quickly looks at him like he just insulted him his already in front of the painting.

Nkosi: this is an original Nthombenhle where do you find it?

Lusanda: I also don't get what's the big deal.

Nkosi: the big deal is that it's one of the most expensive paintings in the world the last time I checked it was bought for 450 million US Dollars.

They all freeze for a moment looking at me I just have my happy smile. Nthando walks to another black cloth and pulls it off.

Zizi: is ...is... that .that...that... a 1963 Ferrari 250 GTO....

She says stuttering and whispering loud enough for us to hear I nod my head again with a much bigger happy grin.

Zizi: hold me I think I'm going to fall.

She stumbling and Siya holds her she does look a bit dizzy I knew shes going to love this since she loves cars. The guys start opening everything and they keep getting shocked even more for the first time they all speechless.

Kuhle: Nthombenhle where do get all these expensive things?

They all look at me waiting for my answer. Truth is when I was busy with Lolo I asked him to place his men different specific places around the world where they will steal the most expensive items in the world at first he was hesitant but I asked him to trust me and his also getting a cut so he agreed so when the shut down was happening they were getting the items for me which was easy for them because security measures that were put in place couldn't be effective since I shut down everything when they were done me and Lolo made sure that they cross the border with no problems. From there the little kids who belong to the orphanage brought them here.

Me: well while you were crossing the ocean I was busy taking those things hence I looked like shit earlier on....

They blinking looking at me with their alien eyes.

Nthando: I don't understand.

Siya: what you trying to say is that you stole all this shit when you had the world shut down.

Me: yup.

Nthando: I still don't understand

Me: what don't you understand Nthando?

Nthando: everything.

Me: well I asked for a little help from my friend and he was happy to help.

They still looking at me like I'm loosing my mind while I explain what me and Lolo where up too when they were at the island.

Me: did you all really think I'm just going to steal only the military equipment when I had the world on shut down??

They keep blinking their long lashes.

Sbu: well...

Me: well the fuck not. There was no way I was going to let that happen when I had so much power in my finger tips.

Siya: that was not in the plan.

Me: but it was definitely in my plans.

Siya: what would've happened if you got caught or we get caught with all these things Nthombenhle?

Me: clearly you underestimate me Khumalo baby plus we not keeping these things.

Nono: keep talking.

Me: we are going to host a underworld auction event well Sbu,Ndu,Lu and Lusanda are going to organize it and they going to make sure that every piece in here is sold with double its value then we going to equally share the money amongst ourselves including Lolo since his the one who got all these things for us.

Sbu: I don't know if I should kiss your feet.

Ndu: or worship the ground you walk on.

Lu: or lick your ass.

Lusanda: or bring you the moon.

Zizi: or the stars.

Nono: or the sun.

Nthondo: or the rainbow.

I laugh.

Me: okay that's enough I get it I'm the best. Now what do yall think?

Siya: I think you too risky and I don't like it.

I roll my eyes.

Me: siya I'm not stupid I covered my tracks well plus this is the last mission I'll be doing we will be filthy rich I'm talking generational rich so after this auction I'm going to enjoy my life as a wife and a mother and a sister.

Nono: I get what you saying little one this will really set us up for life so I'm in.

Kuhle: all Siya is saying is his just worried about you Enhle and me too what you did was very risky especially doing it alone.

Me: I hear you but it's done now and I wont do something like this again. Now can we please get out here Im starting to feel suffocated.

I say starting to breath heavy I know it's my claustrophobic ass starting I quickly walk out as I feel my attract coming the moment I get to the

lounge I breath out sitting down Lu hands me a glass of water when I try to take it my hands are too shaky so he helps me drink.

Lu: you good?

I nod my head breathing slowly my heart rate is slowly getting normal.

Siya: you never going down there.

I just look at him.

Me: yes daddy now I'm okay can you stop fussing.

Eventually the guys go back to cover everything. Later I drive home a happy girl I'm so excited to see Max the moment I jump out the car I run into the house screaming his name but it seems like his not here I get upstairs when I get to my room the door is slightly open and I hear a woman moaning Max's name my heart starts to beat too fast I just stand by the door scared to open it I'm not ready to see my Max fucking another woman who is not me. I feel my tears drop and my body shake I slowly open the door with my eyes closed I open one eye as this girl gets louder. You must be

fucking with me I think someone is trying to prank me this must be some hidden camera shit. Stupid Nosipho is laying on my bed naked with her legs spread finger fucking herself clearly imagining Max how the fuck did she even get in here the last time I checked she and sis Busi are in KZN for two weeks since I knew that I wont be here and the kids are at the grandparents so I gave them time off now what is this. This is disgusting I gag trying to clear my throat she stops and looks at me.

Me: are you okay?

Honestly I just want to know how this girls brain works because clearly something is not right with her.

Nosipho: uhmm... where is Max?

Heeee..... this girl I just laugh at her shes not even ashamed or embarrassed I expected her to be shocked that I'm back or start apologizing but no she just wants Max. I close my door and lock it I walk to my bathroom and clean my face I cant believe she made doubt Max like that for a moment I thought my husband is cheating on me I

chuckle looking at myself in the mirror my eyes are red from the crying and now I feel angry I walk back I see her trying to open the door. I walk to her and grab her from behind with her hair she screams and starts kicking and throwing her hand which land on my face now that really pissed me off I start to throw in my punches she tries fighting back but unfortunately for her she cant even fight I kick her everywhere while I punch slap and throw her all over the room she is bleeding through her nose and mouth I pick her up and throw her to the wall she screams as her back hits it hard and fall on her side I hear something crack she probably broke a bone I leave her there and walk to the sliding door that leads to our balcony facing the front of the house I go back and find her trying to crawl to the door I grab her leg and pull her she screams trying to kick out of my hold shes a fighter I like that when we get to the balcony I slap her hard and she gets dizzy I pick her up and hold her one leg around the ankle with two hands over the balcony now her naked bruised self is dangling in the air crying and bagging me to bring

her back up I laugh at her I see my guards now looking at us well most are just frozen. I see cars driving through it's the Khumalo babies why are they here they jump out the cars and look up shocked.

Siya: Nthombenhle are you crazy?!

He screams at me I laugh at him now this stupid bitch is wiggling and screaming louder.

Me: yeeey shut up! Or I'll drop you!.

She calms down but still crying calling her mom and praying.

zizi: what happened?!

Me: she was fingering herself on my bed!.

Ndu: drop her!.

I giggle.

Siya: Voetsek Ndumiso!

Khuhle is talking on the phone I'm sure his speaking to Max since he looks like his panicking the rest are just looking at me with eyes popping

Sbu: drop her! Why was she in your room?!

Ndu: exactly.!

Siya: you two shut up.! Nthombenhle listen to me pl....

I know his going to talk nonsense so I start singing.

Me:lalalalalalalalalalalalalalalalalal lalalalalalalalalalal
lalalalalalalalalalal lalalalalalalalalalalalalal.....

I carry on singing swinging Nosipho left to right Sbu is laughing taking a video Ndu is singing with me Siya is annoyed as shit Nono and Zizi are also giggling the rest are just looking at me like I'm crazy.

.....: Lilly!... Lilly!

I hear a deep voice call me I stop singing and look down its Max I get so excited I start jumping I nearly drop Nosipho everyone screams including her.

Me: sorry sorry....

I look back at Max. Who is standing next to his frozen confused looking gang Juicy is being clinged on by Zizi and Nono.

Max: you back!

I smile happily this person is getting too heavy for me now.

Me: yes I just got back!

Max: okay do you want to explain why is Nosipho dangling in the air?

I frown.

Me: don't you miss me?!

Max: of course I miss you now tell me why does my beautiful wife have her beautiful hands holding another woman instead of me!?

I blush immediately I feel her slip she screams again I tighten my grip but it's hard my hands are tired.

Siya: Nthombi ka baba please don't do this!

I ignore him his starting to annoy me.

Me: she was fingering herself on my bed imagining you!

Ndu: I still say drop her!.

Siya: fuck off Ndumiso!

The gang chuckles they actually finding this amusing.

Max: okay Lilly so are you going to hold her there for long? I miss you and I want to hold you!

I smile I miss him too but now I need to do something about this stupid bitch.

Me: I miss you more!.... uhmmm okay since Siyanda is playing superman today how about we see if he can catch her.

She cries louder and everyone is exclaiming.

Me: do you believe you can fly Nosipho?!

She just cries I laugh a little.

Me: well I believe you can fly!.

Siya: Nthombenhle pl...

Me: do you believe she can fly?!

Nthando: I told you these people need anger management classes now look at what we dealing with.

I frown looking at him.

Me: let's see if anger management classes will catch her.!

Lu: ai Nthando you talk too much.

Ndu: drop her!

Max: I believe she can fly.!

Juicy: Jesus christ.

He says holding his head this one is another dramatic one.

Sbu: wait!... Enhle I want to get a proper angle.!

He says moving with his phone still taking a video.

Me: okay I need motivation.

I start to sing I believe I can fly by R Kelly.

Me: I Believe I can touch the sky...! Spread my wings and fly away...!

She cries even louder. Ndu is singing with me my sisters are giggling Siya and Nthando are now standing right under us ready to catch her I start swinging her left to right while she slowly slips

through my hands I notice Max is no longer down there then I hear my bedroom door open I know its him his probably going to try and stop me.

...: Lilly.

He says behind me I just let Nosipho go I hear everyone screaming downstairs I run into his arms and he picks me up I wrap my legs around him and smash my lips on his I kiss him deeply I missed him so much.

MAX

I'm woken up by a tingling sensation on my dick I try to touch it only to feel some hair I groan this feels warm and nice I open my eyes and look down only to find Lilly with my dick down her throat I groan as I feel her tongue flip she keeps moving up and down giving me a hand job whole softly squeezing my balls even though she can only take my dick half in her mouth I don't care because she is the bomb I feel my body tense up as my cum is building I pull up her hair and watch her she goes faster before I now it I loose it and just bust into her mouth and she swallows and cleans me with

her tongue while I catch my breath honestly my wife is the best. When shes done she comes up to me and start kissing my whole face I just lay there smiling like a fool taking in all her affection.

Lilly: happy birthday.

Shes says while kissing my lips I forgot it's my birthday actually anyway ever since the Nosipho accident which is now a joke she is okay well she did go to the hospital she had a fractured rib; broken arm and bruises all over her body Siya and Nthando did catch her luckily so she survived we told Sis Busi that she was mugged I didn't even know that she was back because we all thought she is in KZN but clearly she had other plans I looked at the footage which I found disgusting even bought a new bed but I did enjoy seeing Lilly beat her up that was really the highlight of it all I know is that she plays far from Lilly and I now she only comes to do her job and disappear I'm good with that. Well besides that I'm happy to have my wife back home shes now home more often with the kids and shes working on opening her

business. Word has it in the streets that there will be an auction taking place hosted by the KK table and that they are responsible for the shut down that happened honestly that was some hectic shit right there I don't know how they pulled off such a huge heist but demn they were so good at it that no one expected it and moved too silent no dramatic scenes or any suspicions the reason I think its them is because we all know that they don't pull heists that are small where ever there are you only know that they were there when things go missing big and expensive things missing and now a lot of expensive things around the world are missing and suddenly word in the street that they will be having an auction even though it's not confirmed a part of me thinks Lilly is involved how she was very busy before that shut happened and suddenly came back after it happened makes me think that maybe as Madusa she was helping them but I try not to over think it.

Lilly: let's go ride my babies.

Shes talking about her horses well she did teach me how to ride honestly I like it now it gets my mind off things and it's fun.

Me: okay let's go then.

We go take a not so innocent shower which probably took two hours when we done we go ride them as we done it's around 11am.

Lilly: Max we have to go soon please go get ready

Me: where are we going?

Lilly: Cape Town

Me: why?

Lilly: we going to have dinner there.

What? I'm not even going to ask 21 questions because I know we are going regardless of what I say I'm not even in the mood for traveling I just want to be home with my wife and kids.

Me: okay

I go showered quickly when I'm done I get dressed shes not even in the room I go downstairs and find

Juicy and her sisters they showering my kids with attention my Princess is at her happiest.

Me: hey guys.

Nono&Zizi: hey

Juice: sho.

This one has been acting funny these past few days always moody and snapping at everyone or just in his feelings I honestly don't know what is going on with him.

Me: you good?

Juice: what do you think?

Eh... we all look at him you see what I'm talking about?

Lilly: yho... Max let's go they are here to babysit for us.

I don't ask questions I just stand I know Lilly is taking me out today its birthday so shes going to spoil me rotten wherever we going I'm actually excited.

Right now we just walked into a hotel that we will staying at I actually thought we going to her parents house but clearly she has other plans anyway I'm standing a few feet from her with our bags she is checking in at the reception I notice a white man who looks familiar looking at Lilly more like staring at her his not even blinking I'm trying to remember where I saw his face but I cant figure it out. Eventually Lilly turns to look at him too I think she felt his eyes on her they stare at each other for a while then the receptionist speaks to the man his attention turns to her he takes his keys and looks at Lilly once more before walking away Lilly still looks at him walking away. I don't know how to feel about that not that I'm insecure I just get a weird vibe from him his aura is just as dark he looks a bit older than me probably in his 40s there is just something about him even how he looks at Lilly.

Lilly: Max let's go.

Lilly pulls me back from my thoughts I follow her the concierge guy comes to assist us with the bags

as I have to carry her we will be using the elevator. I pick her up she wraps her legs around my waist tightly with her face buried in my neck the concierge guy looks at us weirdly I just ignore him and listen to Lilly who is humming a song softly. We get to our floor and looks like she booked presidential it looks classy and very spacious I like it the guy leaves the luggage on the living room I quickly tip him before he leaves Lilly disappeared somewhere in here the moment she got off me she started running around like a kid I find her by the balcony looking over a breath taking view of the ocean the sun is about to set it's just peaceful and refreshing.

Lilly: we need to go do you want to shower or anything before we leave?

She says softly still looking at the ocean I'm standing behind her with my hands locked with hers.

Me: I'm hungry

Her: there is plenty of food where we going.

Me: okay let's go.

We stand there in silence for a moment then eventually we go we find a car waiting for us we hop in the back well I can see we going to the beach we have our silly conversation I don't bother asking where we are going because I know she will not tell me eventually we make it to some deck I see her brother there don't ask me which one is it I dont know they all look the same to me I don't even bother trying to differentiate them anymore I failed dismally. She hugs him then he comes to me.

Him: Max.

Me: Khumalo baby.

Lilly: I'm sure you don't even know how you talking too.

She says with a smile.

Me: no I don't know.

Him: wow Max I thought you loved me?

He says dramatically Lilly laughs.

Me: okay it's either Ndumiso or Sbusiso.

Him: I'm the handsome one.

Me: ai... I don't know what handsome you talking about.

Lilly: Max that's Ndumiso let's go you wasting my time here.

She says rolling her eyes I knew it's either Ndu or Sbu those two think they are Gods gift for women plus their personalities are loud and too playful compared to the others. Anyway we make it on the boat and I must say it's nice I've never been one interested in being on a boat or the beach most of our activities are done on land even Lilly shes not a fan of water even though she grew up close to the ocean she hardly ever goes there. We walk to the top deck and it looks beautiful with a romantic setting for two its coved with white Rose's and lamps it's just beautiful I look down at her and she has a proud grin on her face.

Me: its beautiful.

Lilly: anything for my husband come let's go eat.

I follow her as she pulls me by hand the boat has already started moving we settle down she opens the wine and we have our dinner over light conversation.

Lilly: I forgot to tell you that when we get back we going for the girls trip.

Me: where are you going?

Lilly: the states we want to see the big apple and go to their famous clubs and Vegas.

Me: why do I have a feeling that my sisters are the ones who suggested this.

She giggles she looks so beautiful.

Lilly: well yeah I obviously wanted a much more relaxed place but they convinced us that we need something different plus I think it will be my first time clubbing.

Me: but you have club Lilly why don't party there?

Lilly: no I don't like clubs too many people in there.

I seriously want to roll my eyes.

Me: do you think the clubs in the state have less people partying there?

She shrugs her shoulders while chewing

Me: you do realize that what you saying doesn't make sense right.

Lilly: it doesn't have to make sense.

I just look at her I know I wont change her mind plus I think she needs this shes only 21 and shes already a wife and a mother so she does need to let her hair down once in a while and enjoying being a young adult it's just that I dont trust my sisters those two party like they get paid for it I don't know if lilly and her sisters will be able to keep up with them but I'm definitely sending a few people to keep an eye on them. When we done eating we slow dancing she has her head on my chest I love it whenever we have our silent moments we never need to vocalize our feelings towards each other our intimacy level is amazing I know she loves me deeply just as much as I love her she doesn't need to say it out loud her eyes and actions continuously show me the raw love she has for me,

never in my life did I ever think that I would find myself wrapped around a womans finger and actually enjoy every minute of it. She moves her head and looks up at me.

Me: you beautiful Lilly.

She smiles at me.

Lilly: not as beautiful as my husband.

Me: your husband is handsome. Handsome Lilly a man is not beautiful I keep telling you that.

She giggles.

Lilly: but my husband is beautiful.

Me: cant you let me be handsome today it's my birthday.

Lilly: okay fine you a very handsome man Max.

I grin like a fool and she laughs at me.

Lilly: you ready to see your gift?

Me: gift?

Lilly: yes gift.

Me: you got me a gift on my birthday?

Lilly: yea come see it.

She pulls me to the edge of the deck and now we looking at the ocean its really dark here the only reflection on the water is the moon which looks very big and beautiful and a lot of stars I don't remember when was the last time I saw so many stars.

Me: you bought me the ocean?

Well we have staring at the ocean for about 5 minutes now.

Lilly: no silly if I could buy you the ocean I would.

Shes says turning to face me I look down st her I get lost in her eyes they are reflecting the stars I just don't understand how Lilly is so perfect everything about her is just perfect even her imperfections that suit her well. She moves her hand behind my head and pulls me down to kiss her she gently bits my bottom lip I pull her closer to me and deepen the kiss while I add my tongue in the mix she moans in my mouth and my dick jerks. I feel the boat move and water making some

sounds she pulls out the kiss and we catch our breath god I love how this woman makes me feel.

Lilly: I think your gift is here.

She whispers as her forehead is still on mine. I still hear the water moving around our boat rocking softly side to side. I pull away and still keep my eyes on her she moves her eyes to the ocean and smile I also move mine and look at the ocean the water is still moving I can tell that something big is coming.

Me: you got me a shark??

I say with my eyes popping looking at her but she just giggles.

Lilly: no what will you do with a shark?

Me: I don't know but I think it would be a nice pet to have.

Lilly: you not getting a shark as a pet Max.

I look back in the water I see this huge black thing coming up the surface okay now I'm confused.

Me: you got me a wale?

I ask looking at it what would I do with a wale? At least a shark I can have a small aquarium at home for it maybe add some seals but that would be a bad idea Lilly might end up throwing people in there. Wait is that a Submarine??

Me: Lilly???

I say looking at her and back at the ocean than at her again then at the ocean. She keeps giggling and clapping her hands like a baby wait I don't understand

Me: Lilly.....?

I whisper her name again I think I'm about to lose my mind my wife got me a Submarine.

Me: Lilly.....

I whisper again my heart rate is moving too fast. I look back at it again and I see the top opening someone comes up I look carefully at the person.

.....: happy mother fucken birthday!!

He screams its Lilly's bother. Another head comes up next to him.

.....: he looks like he is going to faint.

I look at Lilly and she blinks her long lashes at me.

Me: you got me a Submarine....

I whisper at her and she nods her head at me.

Me: how....

Lilly: do you like it?

Me: do I like it? I fucken love it Lilly.

I say pulling her tightly into my arms.

Lilly: I cant breath....

She says on my chest I push her away from me and look at her I just don't know what to do with myself Im way too excited and happy I pull her back in to my chest and squeeze her again.

Lilly: Max...

She says on my chest I push her and look at her now red face I shower her with so many kiss all over face she giggles like Hlehle.

Me: my wife got me a Submarine.

I say on her lips while kissing she giggles I carry on kissing her I move to her neck and bury my face I feel overwhelmed and emotional I think she is trying to make me cry. I feel a lump on my throat I try to clear it but my nose get a tingling sensation then I feel my eyes getting wet even though I try to squeeze them tightly together but that doesn't stop them as I feel them escape my eyes I squeeze her.

Lilly: I cant breath Max...

She says softly I losen my grip and sniff.

Lilly: are you cry?.

I don't answer her but I snuggle my face deeper in her neck which feels wet now. Her hands brush my back and shoulders gently. I honestly don't know what I've done to deserve Lilly I've experienced so much rejection from so many people including my family that I started believing that I'm not worth having love or someone by my side but Lilly changed that and not once has she made me question her love for me. I pull out of the hug when I'm done crying she looks at me and wipes my

tears then cup my face and kiss me passionately it's like she is telling me how much she loves me I groan in her mouth as I feel my dick jerk she pulls out the kiss and takes my hand she leads me to where we were having our dinner it was actually a picnic. She slowly strips me off my clothes without moving her eyes off mine when she is done she also strips and now we standing naked on the deck looking at each other my dick is already standing firm for her. She takes my hand and leads me to the pillows she makes me lay on my back she gets on top of me my hand automatically move to her thick thighs she comes down to me and slowly start to kiss me I return the kiss and she slowly moves to my neck she nibbles on it I feel dizzy I squeeze her ass as groan she lifts her hips up I feel her soft hand stroke my dick and rub it on her minky lips she then push it in and slowly sit down on it she moans on my ear since her tongue is playing there I feel high, she starts to move her hips in circles that drives me crazy as I feel her soft warm walls moving around my dick she starts kissing me passionately still moving her waist in

different directions she has a rhythm to it she is taking her time with every move she sends me to the next dimension especially since she is also working on my neck with her tongue I don't know what to do whenever she does this all I do is squeeze her extra meat and groan like a cow she starts to move a bit faster I feel my toes curl up and her walls tighten inside my body tense we both orgasm moaning out loud she drips on top of me well this is how my Lilly makes love to me I don't know about others but my Lilly knows how to make love to me and sometimes fuck me like a bitch but normally she let's me be in control but sometimes her dominant side shows and I let her do as she pleases.

We spend two days on the boat honestly it was relaxing I think we should make it my birthday tradition to go to the boat maybe tag the kids along anyway we back at our hotel and now we having breakfast at one of their restaurants before we leave since Lilly has been complaining saying she misses her babies as we sitting I see that white man walk in Lilly is busy blabbing I enjoy hearing

her blab it's cute the white man moves his eyes and they land on me we stare at each other for a while he eventually moves to his table opposite us Lilly moves her eyes to him and they stare at each other again I take my phone and text Biggy to look into this guy I need to know why he keeps looking at Lilly like this even though I can see it's not a look of lust or anything like that but I don't get his vibe rather be safe than sorry. Later we leave for joburg we cuddling in the jet.

Me: stop pulling my beard it hurts.

Shes busy pulling it with her nails.

Lilly: sorry.

Me: do you know that white man?

She sighs first.

Lilly: no but he feels familiar it's like I've known him for a long time it's like someone from my past but I have no memory of him whatsoever even though I feel connected to him.

Me: I asked Biggy to look into him maybe we can figure out why he looks at you that way.

Lilly: okay you will tell me what you find.

I move my hand up under her slit she immediately squeeze her legs together and yank my hand off her.

Lilly: no Max you not getting any.

I kiss her neck fuck I'm so horny she cant do this to me.

Me: come on Lilly

Lilly: no Max I'm in pain because of you we had too much sex the past few days.

It was birthday sex.

Me: just one round I promise I will be quick

Lilly: no my minky is in ICU recovering

I chuckle

Me: okay I promise I'll be gentle and slow.

I say moving my hand up again she smacks it and pushes it away.

Lilly: no.

Me: okay can I just put the tip in.

I'm busy kissing her neck and whispering I'm really horny she makes me horny.

Lilly: you know very well that your tip is as big as a apple so no.

I try to kiss her she moves her face the other direction.

Me: please Lilly I will be very gentle.

I'm busy fighting her to kiss her and shes really not having it my kisses land everywhere on her face but her lips and I really want to kiss them.

Lilly: No Max you want to finish me you want to fuck me until I'm dry like a biltong.

What?? I bust out laughing.

Me: but biltong is very nice and tasty.

Lilly: the answer is still no.

Me: you killing me Lilly.

I say softly looking at her since now I'm on top of her.

Lilly: still no.

Me: come on feel this.

I say pushing my hand on her thighs instead she giggles.

Me: its painful Lilly I'll just rub my tip on your pussy lips.

Lilly: no they are still swollen.

Me: I'll massage them.

Lilly: no.

God why is she doing this to me I sigh and bury my face on her neck and she is giggling this is not nice I sulk till I end up sleeping on top of her. She woke me up when we arrived and now we walking in the front door Lilly sees the kids and immediately goes to shower them with kisses there goes my attention I turn and look at juice who is laying on my couch with a blanket looking sick as ever I greet the sisters.

Me: what's up with him?

They roll their eyes first.

Nono: he has a cold and refuses to go to the doctor

Zizi: now his our stage four cancer patient.

We hear him moaning we all look at him he then coughs a little and whisper remote that is literally a few meters away from him all he has to do is reach for it. Nono rolls her eyes and gives it to him he turns on the cartoons and moans again Nono is waiting for him to say what he wants he whispers hot chocolate and marshmallows.

Me: take your husband and leave my house.

I say to Zizi Juice looks at me with his teary eyes.

Me: there are babies in this house I don't want them to catch whatever he has take him to the doctor.

I say taking Hlehle from Lilly who immediately opens her opens her mouth to eat my nose I pull away and kiss her chubby cheeks she giggles with her hands on my face.

Nono: I agree with Max we taking you to the doctor now.

She says taking away the blanket and his tears are already coming out what's wrong with Juice.

Zizi: Nono you hurting him

She says while running to Juice to help him up me and Lilly are just confused as to what is happening here. Eventually they leave I play with my babies on top of our bed while Lilly is unpacking the boys are actually crawling on the floor following Lilly around while Hlehle is busy trying to eat my face with her drool ever since she started teething well she is actually a late bloomer this one because her brothers already have about 8 teeth and now learning to stand on their own but she just started teething and now all she sees is me as a snack. My boys just love their mom mamas boys I tell you they never even acknowledge me when I walk in unless I have food with me but the moment they see Lilly they ditch me but I have my loyal Hlehle my Princess cant wait for her to start talking all she says is mama and dada but soon I'll be able to gossip with her. I get disturbed by my phone ringing which is now in Hlehle tiny hand she jumps frightened by the vibration I kiss her and quickly take it before she cries. I answer it.

Me: Biggie.

Biggie: sho I got what you asked for I don't think you going to like it.

Me: talk to me

Biggie: well that man is Balenciaga I don't know if you've heard of him.

Well I know Balenciaga he is a drug lord just like me but he runs the US and he has his hands in almost everything prostitutions, illegal weapons, Bank robberies etc. Me and him have never cross paths before that's why I don't know him I only know what I've heard about him maybe because I'm not interested in running anything international I make enough money with what I currently have and I'm okay with it. Now what I want to know is what he wants from Lilly.

Me: yea I know him what else did you find?

Biggie: well I didn't know this but he was born and raised here in joburg his real name is Chris Van Staddon his a pure Afrikaner he is the last born of three boys but he moved to the states to study I

guess he got mixed up in things since his now a gang lord that side. So far that's all I was able to find

Me: dig deeper Biggy I need more.

Biggie: okay that will take me a little longer though.

Me: how long is long?

Biggie: probably two weeks.

Me: okay I'll hear from you.

Biggie: sho

He hangs up Lilly is now on the bed with the boys who are just having their own conversation even Hlehle joined them shes not about me anymore.

Mee: that was Biggy he says....

I explain to her what he said all she did is nod her head about it I can see that this is kinda bothering her. I pray that we will not have any kind of war or anything like that I've been making sure that no one get anywhere close to my family ever since my kidnapping and Lilly's kidnapping I cant go

through that pain of losing Lilly I can never survive that or put my kids in such danger and so far I've been doing well keeping them safe while they able to live a normal life. I decide to change the topic.

Me: so are you going to tell me how you got me my birthday gift.

She stops bothering Spha who is very annoyed by her his now crawling to me Lilly has a habit of doing things that annoy my kids like playing with their food when they hungry and right now she kept pulling his shirt and his been whining about it I think she enjoys seeing them annoyed but Hlehle is always quick to throw slaps when she is annoyed that child is violent I don't know how many times she hits her brothers and her slaps are so painful anyway Lilly looks at me making a face.

Lilly: I know you have already figured it out.

Me: figure out what?

She tilts her head looking at me .

Lilly: come on Max I know in that little big head of yours you have already put the dots together and now I just gave you the final piece.

Me: my heard is not little big.

She rolls her eyes and starts annoy Nhlaka who has been snuggled to her she keeps pulling his chin and now his kicking and whining making a face I don't think this is what parents do to their kids. I'm looking at her Spha is now snoring on my chest Hlehle is concentrating on opening a vaseline container and I can see she is running out of patience for it since it's big and keeps rolling all over her tiny hands cant even carry it. My eyes move back to Lilly who is having the time of her life bothering my son.

Wait a minute when the shut down happened some millitary equipment was one of the things that disappeared that night it was all over the news I look at her again so I was right that she helped the KK table with this mission now everything makes sense.

Me: so you assisted the Kk table with the mission that had you so busy?

She looks at me and smiles kissing a now very annoyed Nhlaka who is ready to cry. She picks him up and shower him with kisses his sulking it's cute.

Lilly: Baby please tell your daddy that the table consists of 11 members.

She says in her baby talk kissing Nhlaka. Okay now I'm confused I just look at her.

Lilly: your daddy is very slow today maybe because I didn't give him ass he doesn't function well without ass.

I chuckle.

Me: stop telling my son nonsense.

She turns and looks at me.

Lilly: then stop being slow use your thinking brain .

We look at each other for a while then it clicks my eyes pop.

Lilly: ding ding ding now the lights are on.

I just bust out laughing which wakes up Spha he starts crying immediately I shush him still in disbelief why did it take so long to figure it out they've been in joburg for the past few months and I know that they all based in Cape town but I never questioned why they are here I guess it made sense for them to work this side because of Lilly and her sisters even juice was complaining about how his wives are hardly home and always busy now it all makes sense fuck Khumalo babies are really something else hey.

Me: you Khumalo babies are uunbelievable.

She smiles at me and carry on playing with Nhlaka and Hlehle who ditched her vaseline.

LILLY

It's been three days and we in the states for our girls trip ever since we landed here all we've been doing is shopping and drinking I don't remember the last time I drank water Max video calls everyday sometimes I don't see my babies because our time difference clashes with their bed time I miss them so much but I'm really enjoying myself.

Let me tell you Amahle and Esihle know how to party we've been clubbing like crazy when we left home we didn't pack anything Nono and Zizi came with the idea that we will buy everything here which is cool but demn these girls are wild as shit even my body is complaining I don't know how people live this drinking everyday life but demn this shit is hard Mbali is like a kid put in a candy store she is just going wild and trying everything Amhle and Esihle enjoy corrupting her. Today we will be going to Vegas we spending the last three days there today I have to pack my room is a mess well we decided to book a house and its beautiful but we never have time to clean up it's either we too drunk or hung over to do anything I decide to get up god my head is so heavy I brush my teeth and shower a part of me still feels drunk and I'm super hungry as soon as I'm done I go to the kitchen I find Amahle and Nono there cooking Amahle looks great Nono looks like a mess her big hair is just a mess. I sit on the high chair and look at them making greesy food I cant wait to eat it my stomach keeps grumbling.

Me: Morning.

Amhle laughs and Nono just looks at me and goes back to doing whatever.

Amahle: its 4pm .

Me: oh...

I thought it's around 8 or 9am honestly ever since we got here I lost sense of time.

Aamahle: after you done eating you need to get ready we leaving for Vegas at 6:30

I groan I just want to sleep. She then gives me a cup to drink.

Me: what's this?

Amahle: drink it will help with the hang over. Just gulp it down don't even think about it.

I do as she says but end up coughing like I'm dying it burns my throat down to my chest. Nono rushes to me with water and helps me drink.

Me: are you crazy??!

I scream at Amahle she giggles shrugging her shoulders demn my chest is burning.

Me: what the fuck is that?

Nono: Brandy, Vodka, tequila, some lemon juice and some syrup.

I look at her like shes crazy who the fuck drinks such for hang over fucking shit is still burning I keep rubbing my chest.

Me: you just trying to kill me.

Nono: that's how I felt but now I'm better give it a few minutes you will be okay.

Eventually the others join us they look like shit just like me Mbali is even worse she has her shades on ever since she woke up we ate in silence with some cocktails I didn't taste any alcohol but Esihle is good in making cocktails we hardly taste the alcohol in them until you drunk. I just finished packing and heading to Vegas now we already tipsy and rowdy. I feel my phone vibrate its Max I answer immediately with a huge smile on my face.

Me: Maxie...

He chuckles

Max: if you dont stop drinking I'm going to fly down there

I giggle

Me: you look pretty I miss you where are my babies?

He turns the camera and they sleeping on my bed looking all cute with their chubbiness I want to eat them.

Me: I miss you so much.

I say teary I really miss them.

Max: come back my wife we miss you too.

Zizi snatches my phone and they all scream at him saying I'm not coming back they even falling on top of each other I take my phone back.

Me: My husband.

Max: what exactly are yall drinking?

He asks looking concerned.

Me: juice I have to go now bye bye.

I hang up before he starts asking too many things. We finally make it to Vegas guys the lights the people here its just amazing its like walking into a fantasy anyway Mbali checks us in Nono keeps touching and smelling flowers the concierge guy comes and takes our bags he walks to the elevator okay this is going to be as problem.

Zizi: come I'll give you a piggyback ride.

I jump on her back and hold her tightly shutting my eyes I sing I feel her moving before I know it we in a penthouse it's so beautiful and spacious and spotless Amahle shows the guy where to put the bags she tips him and he walks out happy I'm sure it's a big tip.

Eishle: okay ladies we going to a casino go shower and look classy and rich today we making it rain.

I immediately get so excited I'll be gambling something I know nothing about but I'm going to do it. I'm going to use Max's platinum card there is no way I'll be spending my money tonight . The other day he was flexing on me telling how money is not a problem he doesn't remember the last time

he looked at a price tag when shopping which is actually true ever since I met Max whenever I want something or we shopping he just buys things without checking the price or slip even when we eat out he normally tips a ridiculous amount I'm not complaining he can afford it but tonight I'm going to make his bank balance shake. Anyway I just finished getting dressed. I'm wearing a glittering white stripless dress it's just below my knees it hugs my body perfectly and has a long slit its sexy and clean and simple and obviously classy Esihle will be doing my make up shes really good at it I know I'm going to walk out looking like a very expensive slay queen. Amahle some how convinced me to get a long straight weave the texture is soft an silky and it's very long it cuts off just after my bums it touches my thighs it's like those Nicki Minaj long weaves. We finally make it to the casino Esihle managed to get us in a VIP section Nono and I decided to walk in a Poker room since the other girls went wherever they went we just made a deal that we staying in this VIP floor we don't even know anything about

Poker but since it sounds familiar and I've seen it in movies and it looks cool so why not try it. The room its quiet and full of men rich men the lights are dim everyone is looking at us there are five men around the table and a one lady she looks like a Brazilian woman woman shes pretty my eyes lend on the man next to her it's the white man I saw back in Cape town he stares at me I stare right back at him there is something about him his blue eyes it's like I've seen them somewhere.

.....: I think you in the wrong room girls.

She says with a fake smile me and Nono look at each other and back at her we walk to the table the men are drooling its disgusting because two of them aree as old as Baba but the rest look like my dads age. The white man has not moved his eyes from me Nono and I go sit on the two empty chairs I'm between two men facing Mr white guy and the Mis Brazilian Nono sits next to the white guy.

There is one guy in a black and white suit sitting on the other side there are cards in front of him the table is green and full of chips with different colors

why didn't I just Google this game honestly this is not on I look at Nono she has the same confused face as me we look at each other I really want to laugh because this is stupid what where we thinking but we will fake it till we make it.

.....: ladies buy in is 1 million dollars.

The white guy on the other side says his nametag is George.

Miss Brazilian: like I said girls you in the wrong room actually wrong floor.

She says with a smirk I look over at Nono and she is looking at her with a frown I know she wants to jump at her.

Me: how about we start with 5 million.

The black man next to me chokes on his drink. Mr white smiles slightly I see a dimple on his cheek I swear this man really looks like someone I know and I don't understand why I feel drawn to him there is something about him. I keep my serious face I'm not about to get played one thing I've learned from Max is how to have a game face on

I've seen him multiple times make deals with greedy men and he never let's his guard down his aura stays consistent from the moment he walks into a room until he gets out. I see Miss Brazilian looking a bit pissed Nono has a smirk now.

George: Balenciaga?

He says looking at Mr White. Wait his Balenciaga??? I've heard about him his one ruthless motherfucker and filthy rich I look over at Nono and I know she is thinking the same thing Balenciaga nods his head.

George: okay we will start at 5 million ladies and gentlemen.

The Chinese man next to me says his in the other one who was choking pulls out with two others same as Miss Brazilian which I've concluded is Mr Whites woman since shes been very flirty with him she must chill her titts no one wants her man. I see men walk in with suitcases filled with money this is going to be a problem. Then they look at me and Nono we don't have suitcases filled with

money who walks around with so much money anyway.

Me: do you swipe?

The men chuckle Nono is also giggling I don't know at what because she is just a snob like me.

Balenciaga: put them on my tab.

Oh hell no Balenciaga is one man you don't want to owe there is no fuckin way I'm putting anything on his tab never ever. Mis Brazilian doesn't like this at all.

Mis Brazilian: Babe....

He gives her a look that has me shivering. This man does look very intimidating and scary sexy but scary.

Nono: this is a casino I'm sure they can make a plan and get us cash.

I'm glad we on the same page with this.

Balenciaga: I insist.

Me: no thank you Mr Balenciaga but I think it's best for everyone we get our own cash.

He looks at me for a moment.

Balenciaga: okay fine George help the ladies.

Nono: what does a lady have to do here to get a drink.

Well everyone has a drink except us a waitress comes to take our order. Nono gets their most expensive red wine since I'm feel like Max today so I decided on their expensive whiskey and cigar.

.....: out of ciouristy where do you girls get so much money or are you playing for someone?

Asks the man next to miss Brazilian.

Nono: ciouristy killed the cat Sir.

Our drinks arrive the waiter comes with a box filled with cigars she opens it and Balenciaga takes out one she comes to me I see different kinds I run my fingers on them as I remember Max teaching me how to smoke it on our balcony I pick one I run in on my nose just like Max does he looks sexy when he does it though the earthy smell hits my nose it actually smells nice I like it when I open my

eyes I find everyone looking at me Nono is sipping her wine with a smile looking like a proud mother.

Me: can I have the cutter and lighter.

I say at the waitress she nods and gives me and also puts an ashtray next to my drink with the cutter and lighter neatly. George has already left through some back door to get the cash anyway I take the cutter and slowly cut the end of my cigar then put it in my mouth I take the lighter and switch it on I inhale the cigar three times while blowing it out to make sure it's on properly I blow out the smoke it clears and I find Balenciaga layed back on his chair with a smirk looking at me Nono looks like she wants to clap her hands shes too excited but I don't blame her even Max would be proud.

.....: please marry me.

Says the black American man next to Nono his hot looks like your Michael Jordan very hot and cute.

Me: too late I'm already taken.

Let's call him mr hot.

Mr hot: so?

He says throwing in his cute smile if it was another life I would've fallen for him.

Me: so I'm happy with my husband.

Mr hot: that's what they all say until I give them a taste of the good life.

I chuckle sipping my drink which is burning my throat and chest I don't know how people do this.

Miss Brazilian: so you a typical housewife spending husbands money. So sad.

Me: typical housewife I don't know but spending husbands money definitely.

Miss Brazilian: pssshhh... I knew it his probably old and ready to kick the bucket.

She actually has a nice voice more like your Rihanna voice I could listen to her speaking all day it's kinda sweet but ruff on the edge would make a nice radio presenter it's weird that I don't find her annoying but I don't like her.

Nono: let me guess you either a ride or die chick or basic hoe.

Mr hot: shes a ride or die chick.

I shake my head while smoking Balenciaga is still looking at me with his smirk its getting weird now. George comes back pushing a table full of money perfect I was getting tired of this topic.

George: 10 million for the two ladies.

I smile and thank him then he sits on his seat opposite us he removes the chips and starts to give us gold plates each written 1 mmillions we all got 5 each they look cute he starts shuffling the cards the way he does it its fascinating my eyes keep moving with his hands as he is handing out cards people start revealing their cards and cursing Nono and I are just lost we do what they do this is just funny we don't know if we wining or losing.

Mr hot: you two don't know how to play this game right.

We giggle okay now I feel a bit buzzed I don't know if its the whiskey or the cigar but this game needs

to end now. His actually out the only people playing is me Nono and Balenciaga. The door busts open we all turn and Amahle, Esihle, zizi and Mbali walk in well I can see they also just as buzzed because they giggling and being funny.

Amahle: ahhh... yall are playing poker?

Zizi: I can take a good guess that yall have no clue what you doing.

We just look at them and we busts out laughing.

Eishle: hai you two it's time to go.

Nono: but we not done.

amahle: it's not like going to win you don't know what you doing.

Me: Nono let's go please.

Nono: now my 5 million will be gone.

Mbali: haaaaaaaaaaaa....! 5 million!

She says it so loud we all looking at her with her eyes popped and mouth open.

Zizi: hai Mbali close your mouth your heart is getting cold.

What?? We laugh again the men are chuckling I see Ms Brazilian rolling her eyes annoyed.

Mbali: hai hai you two finish this game and you better win 5 million is too much money! Is it in dollars? Obviously its dollars. Lilly move over we will sit together I will help you win and we share the money.

She says already pushing me off my chair I look at her.

Me: do you know how to play?

Mbali: no but we are winning.

Mr hot: ladies come sit on Papi.

He says to Amahle and Esihle who are just annoyed Zizi goes to squeeze herself next to Nono just like Mbali did.

Zizi: okay where are the dice?

Mis Brazilian: this is not a place for bitches and you two are not play unless you have 5 million.

Mbali: do you have 5 million?

She just looks at Mbali pissed.

Mbali: thought as much now shut up and let us money people play.

I can see Balenciaga wants to laugh but his holding it in the rest of the men find this entertaining.

George: okay let me continue.

He deals the cards again. Balenciaga opens his and I see his eyes change his out.

Zizi: Bingo!!.

I bust out laughing.

Me: zizi this is not bingo baby.

Zizi: makes no difference we win for kings baby.

She say waving the cards.

George: that's not a win Miss.

Zizi: its mrs Juice thank you very much.

She says flipping her hair.

Mbali: okay we have four Ace and a Jocker. It's any card who is next and take 8.

Me: this is not crazy 8 there are no any card or take two.

Mbali: ahh mxm boring.

George: Mam did you say you have four Ace and a jocker?

We look at him the men I just looking at me weirdly even Balenciaga is smiling now his weird .

Me: yes two red Ace and two black Ace and a jocker.

Mr hot: well I guess you just won 25 million dollars.

He says looking at me weirdly and I'm in ddisbelief.

Mbali: I thought you playing for 5 million.

Nono: it was 5 million each and there where 5 players.

Me: George give me my money we going to party!
I scream out loud and the girls join me.

Me: Zizi go call our guards please

she runs out and comes back with about 20 men
some I know their faces I tell them to take all the
bags with money.

Nono: it was nice playing with you gentlemen and miss ride or die we are now wild n out.

She says with a peace sign wearing shades. We all walk out and literally run out the casino people are looking at us like mad people we don't care we go to the first club and it's a strip club Amahle keeps ordering shots and we keep drinking them. Next thing we at some other club even Balenciaga and his ride or die are here Esihle keeps making us drink those drinks that they light with fire and you have to down it quickly this is probably my third glass of that and everything is just spinning there is too many lights here.

I try to open my eyes but they are heavy I try again and they open first thing I see is the ceiling I feel something heavy on top of me I turn my head on the side and I see feet my head is just pounding I feel like it's going to explode I turn on my other side and I see Mbali snoring with her drool I try to move my body but everything just hurts I see someone is sleeping on top of me and she is heavy I need to pee I groan trying to push her off is Nono

but she just moans and reposition on top of me I'm seriously dying today I feel like this bed is spinning I take all the little strength I have and push Nono off while kicking her she rolls over to Mbali and they both fall on the floor they groan cussing. I get off the bed and my body is seriously in pain my joints muscles my fingers everything hurts I feel like crying I go to the bathroom I can't even walk straight I bump my small toe on the door frame I cuss jumping up and down I even fall why is this happening to me I feel like crying, eventually I crawl myself to the toilet and pee but my vagina is also in some sort of pain if it was sex I would know but it feels like I got one of those big painful pimples on my vagina I just sit there on the toilet I don't understand why I'm feeling like this honestly I feel like shit I suddenly feel like I'm going to vomit I quickly get off the toilet and go on my knees I vomit so much I feel like my intestines will come out with my lungs as soon as I'm done I take off the gown I'm wearing I don't even now when I wore this all I remember is being in a club with the lights spinning anyway I just stand in the shower

and let the water hit me my back which feels like it's on fire so I turn the water cold that feels better but I seriously need to go to a spa I cant do this. As soon as I'm done I walk out and dry myself I walk out the toilet by the way we at the penthouse don't ask me how we got here and why everyone is sleeping in my bed and the whole room covered in money I don't know I swear there are dollar notes everywhere I walk to the mirror and my cheeks and nose look pink I have eye bags and my eyes look red I look sick and dying my eyes move to my vagina and I scream everyone jumps of the bed they even fell. What the fuck is this??

Zizi:geeez.... Enhle what is your problem?

I'm just staring at my vagina now it makes sense why it's in pain. Amahle walks in holding a tray with cups she looks fresh and clean how does she do it? Drink and look fine few hours later?

Me: why do I have a ring on my clit?

I ask Amahle giggles.

Amahle: those are the least of your worries here drink this. Remember gulp it down.

I take it and do as she says it immediately burns my throat I cough out like a dying dog why the fuck did I take her glass again?? It's that stupid alcohol mixture that supposedly makes hangovers disappear, but right now I'm trying to understand why and how the hell is my clit pierced.

Me: Max is going to kill me.

Zizi comes to me and bends down to look at my vagina she pokes the ring and I jump back as it sends a shooting pain.

Me: what the fuck is wrong with you?!

Zizi: sorry I just wanted to see if its real and it is real Max is definitely going to kill you.

My hangover is even gone.

Amahle: would you relax everyone got a piercing.

Zizi: I didn't.

Amahle: oh... really?? How about you open your gown and check your nipples?

Zizi pops her eyes and peeps under her gown she immediately closes it.

Zizi: jesus christ.

Me: let me see.

She takes off the gown and there they are her perky nipples with rings on them.

Amahle: Mabli why you quiet let's see inside your mouth.

We look at her she just looks at us.

Amahle: come on baby show us your teeth.

Zizi: you pierced your teeth??

She asks shocked.

Amahle: no she pierced under her upper lip.

Mbali shows us by smiling widely she actually looks very cute it suits her why didn't I get that.

Zizi: why didn't I get that? How the hell will I explain nipple piercing?

Amahle: don't worry you have your sister wife there who has the same problem now let's move to the tattoos we got.

Why is the universe punishing me like this? What did I do to deserve this?

Me: what tattoos are you talking about?

Mbali: check your right wrist.

I look at it and I see a small cute infinity tattoo written sisters forever.

Me: okay these are cute I like it.

Amahle: yea we all got that one but I'm not talking about that tattoo.

We all looking at her and I'm also worried about how Nono is so quiet.

Eishe: lilly check your back.

I take a step towards the mirror and turn I choke on my spit and cough I start to cry Zizi comes to hug me.

Me: I'm a dead woman walking.

I say sobbing on her chest.

Zizi: it's not that bad come on.

Esihle: oh... its bad very bad.

I cry louder. Why didn't they stop me from doing this.

Amahle: look Lilly it's not like Max will be mad at least its him.

Me: Amahle my back is covered by Max I have a ring on my clit do you think Max is going to be okay with that? Really?

I go back to the mirror again I look at my back well there is this picture of Max I like he is topless and her body is covered by his tattoos I can even see my face tattoo on his chest honestly this tattoo is beautiful I love the detail on it the tattoo shows his face shoulders until his torso it's really beautiful this picture is even my background wallpaper on my phone I really love it they even got his grey eye right I want to run my fingers on it but I cant reach it but its really big it covers my whole back his head starts just under my neck and his arms and

torso cut on my waist. The only way to hide it is to wear shirts that cover everything.

Zizi: it's beautiful.

Esihle: yeah its really beautiful I don't think Max will be mad about it probably shocked but not mad.

Amahle: I agree with Esihle Max loves you too much to be mad at you plus you not the only one Zizi tattooed "Juice" on her vigina and Nono tattooed "Juice" on her butt cheeck.

I bust out laughing Zizi is already looking at her clean shaven vigina written with bold italic red colour "juice" I look over at Nono and she looks sick.

Me: Nono what's wrong?

I say walking to her she is laying in a fetal position moaning.

Nono: period pains.

Zizi: that's impossible we always go at the same time and I feel fine.

She says looking at her with concern. Then her eyes pop.

Me: what is it Ulwazi?

Zizi: what's the date?

Amahle: um...somewhere in the first week of November.

Then she start counting with her fingers we just looking at her confused. Then she squeals.

Zizi: we need to get her to the doctor asap.

She says quickly pulling her blankets off I help carry her we all run out the guards help us and we go to some hospital they immediately take her. I keep pacing up and down Zizi is staring into space Eishle and Mbali went to get us some coffee and Amahle is sitting next to Zizi. The doctor walks to us and struggles pronouncing Nolwazi we just stand in front of him.

Doctor: she is 6 weeks pregnant and she consumed too much alcohol we draining it out of her system I don't know how her pregnancy is still

holding on because she was this close to miscarrying.

Me: so she and the baby are going to be okay?

Doctor: yes but I strongly advice that she stays away from alcohol. Please.

I nod my head feeling relieved clearly she doesn't know that she is pregnant.

Zizi: doctor can I also get tested.

I look at her well there is a possibility that these two might be pregnant at the same time it would be weird but I wont be shocked actually. The doctor agrees and leaves with her as we about to go to see Nono one of my guards comes and gives me the phone.

Me: hello

Max: the private jet leaves at 5pm you all better be in that plane.

Then he hangs up. I'm dead really dead I don't even know where is my phone he sounded very mad too mad my body is even shaking with fear.

Eishle: what's wrong?

Me: by 5pm we have to go back home your brother is going to have my head in the silver platter.

Amahle: okay you and Mbali go make sure Nono and Zizi are okay me and Esihle will go pack up the last thing I need is Max flying down here to fetch us.

We do as she says and turns out both my sisters are 6 weeks pregnant well Zizi is actually 8 weeks and now that I look at them carefully they have gained some weight their boobs kinda look bigger and their stomach are not as flat as before but honestly I'm just happy and excited I'm going to be an aunt I cant wait to have play dates and spoil them rotten anyway we all in the private jet Nono is now better well they both sober I'm trying to detox I've been drinking water I'm sure my body is rejoicing.

Me: I think I now understand why Juicy has been moody and sick its because of you two.

Zizi: yeah that's why we didnt even notice we pregnant.

Nono: I'm just happy our kids are okay I don't think I would've survived a miscarriage.

Mbali: I'm just excited that I'm go to be an aunt.

Me: you and I both. I think you two are lucky that Juicy is experiencing the symptoms and not you two pregnancy symptoms are a bitch.

Nono: yeah you were crying all the time and always annoyed.

Amahle: lilly is always annoyed that's just her trade.

Me: no I'm not always annoyed.

Zizi: oh... Nthombi ka Baba you always annoyed believe me.

Me: no I'm not.

Mbali: yes you are whenever you in public your face always shows when you don't like something or someone.

I roll my eyes we continue arguing until we fall asleep. I'm woken up by the flight attendant that we about to land that sleep is exactly what I needed we slept for a very long time hours actually and right now it sinks in that I'm deep shit so I sit there saying my little prayer. The moment we get to the airport my phone start buzzing with so many notifications which I will look at later not now. I'm wearing baggy sweatpants and a baggy long sleeve shirt I couldn't wear leggings because of my clit piercing well I tried removing it and Amahle stopped me and said I will bleed a lot so I have to let it heal first that means hiding my entire body from Max till then I don't know how that is going to work since we like bathing together and he is always horny and I cant even resist him. We walking to the parking the guards are pulling our bags you should've seen us going through those metal things when it started ringing Amahle and Esihle laughed the boarder security was running the metal scanner on my body until it started ringing louder on my vagina I felt like dying he kept moving it up and down my vagina then I had to

show the lady from security that I have a clit piercing even Zizi and Nono went through the same thing you should've seen their faces I've never been so embarrassed in my life anyway I see Max and Juicy leaning on the car looking at us good thing I'm wear sunglasses because his stare is really making me uncomfortable I just want to run into his arms but I'm scared all I want is to see my babies before I die. Nono and Zizi are already in Juicy's arms mxm, I stand right in front of Max who still has his eyes on me I remove my glasses and look down playing with my fingers I'm waiting for him to shout at me.

Max: are you not going to greet your husband?

I look up at him and step closer he pulls me into a hug I moan silently biting my lip as my tattoo is still fresh and painful he holds me tight and I just want him to let me go or I'm going start crying. After what feels like forever he let's me go and cops my face with his big hands he looks into my eyes.

Max: what's wrong Lilly? Why are you crying.

I'm crying because I'm pain and you going to kill me.

Me: I just really miss you.

He smiles and kisses me deeply I missed his lips so much I missed everything about him even his hug hurt me but I missed being in his arms I miss his scent and I missed his voice I missed his presence I just miss everything. We finally pull out the kiss he takes my hand and go around to open the door for me I jump in he walks around and jumps in he drives us home in silence I think something is bothering him I want to ask but I already have my own stress of dying maybe he will kill me in my sleep I look at him neah he loves me he wouldn't do that to me right. His lost in his own thoughts I wonder what's wrong I put my hand on his thigh he looks at me I smile he returns the smile but it doesn't reach his eyes he takes my hand and intertwine it with his something is going on with my husband I'll just wait for him to tell me.

MAX

I missed my wife so much I'm happy that she is home I had to get her back home when I saw pictures of her and Balenciaga playing poker and at the club I felt like snapping his neck his literally everywhere Lilly goes and now it's been two days since Lilly is back but she is a bit distant I don't know why everytime I try to touch her she gets tense she avoids being in the same room as me a part of me thinks she might have cheated on me when she was gone but that thought on it's own makes my blood boil so I push it away and last night Biggy was able to send me a detailed file about Balenciaga and now it makes sense why he is following Lilly around even now his back in south Africa with his girlfriend if it wasn't for this file I would've killed him a long time ago today I'm meeting with Baba her grandfather I'm sure he would know what to do with him before I include Lilly in this plus I think he has the full story at least I will know how to handle this situation. I walk into the kitchen and find her dishing scrambled eggs on small plastic plates it has mashed butternut on the side Lilly makes my kids eat

nonsense and these eggs makes their fart and poo smell really bad. She is wearing her baggy clothes that's all she wears these past two days I miss seeing her body I walk to her and wrap my arms around her waist from behind her body tenses then she continues plating the food.

Me: when I come back you better have a solid story of why my wife is uncomfortable in my hands.

I whisper in her ear and she freezes

Lilly: I'm not uncomfortable.

Me: uhm... We will see I'm going out I'll be back later.

I kiss her neck and walk out more like sneaking out so that my kids don't see me they concentrating on their cartoon tv show whenever they see me or Lilly walk out the door they cry their lungs out. I drive to his house this man has houses everywhere anyway his security let's me in with no problems I park my car and go ring the door bell he opens for me and his shirtless walking barefoot with sweatpants on I swear this man

doesn't age he has muscles and his hair and beard are trimmed nicely when I grow up I want to be like him.

Baba: follow me when you done drooling.

I blink and chuckle I follow him we pass the kitchen I see a girl in his shirt in the kitchen she looks like Lilly's age when we pass the lounge I see two more girls also in his shirts and look just as young they seductively wave at me I wave back.

Baba: don't even think about it my Princess will definitely cut off your balls and I will be sitting with my popcorn enjoying

Me: I actually believe you.

He laughs as we walk into his study I sit on the couch he pours us some whiskey and sits across me.

Baba: what was so important for you to disturb my leisure time I know it's not a social call.

I open the file and show him pictures of Lilly playing poker with Balenciaga and her sister.

Baba: okay I know they were on that trip but what's this have to do with me? I'm sure she milked you dry.

I huff.

Me: your Princess was on a mission to make me a millionaire I'm this close to being broke.

He chuckles.

Baba: then we have done a good job raising her.

Me: anyway that's not a problem my problem is this man Balenciaga

I say pointing at his face he picks up the picture and looks at it closely.

Me: his been following Lilly around since the gala dinner he keeps popping up wherever she is so I looked into him and this is what I found.

I throw him the file and he opens it and looks into it I see his face slowly change now he looks like Godfather his face screams murder and some pain but mostly its deadly now I'm really interested on what's really the story here. He puts the file down and sighs burying his head in his hands we stay

silent for a while I guess there is more to this story than what I thought. He looks up at me and his eyes are bloodshot red his forehead is popping with veins.

Baba: Max I don't know what to do with this Balenciaga will not stop following Lilly until he finds out the truth about who she really is. This is opening old wounds a chapter I closed a long time ago and promised myself to never open and now this.

He says sounding defeated I've seen how ruthless Godfather is and I've seen how much of a father he is to his sons and grandchildren but never have I seen him like this.

Me: I can see this is something very personal to you and it may open old wounds but what if revisiting this chapter will get you the closure you need? I would rather have you talk to everyone and have the upper hand in this situation because I know soon Lilly is going to start her digging and that may not end well for anyone.

He looks at me for a while than gulps his drink.

Baba: I'll keep in touch just give me a few days
I nod my head standing up as I'm about to leave.

Baba: Max...

I turn to look at him now he looks like he has aged
10 years older.

Baba: thank you.

Me: anytime.

I than walk out I go straight to my office it's weird
that years later everyone in this building goes
silent whenever they see me walk in even those
who have worked years for me it's just awkward
for me even though I'm used to it. I leave some files
on my desk which needed my signature my PA will
send them to those who needed them I text Lilly
to not cook dinner since I'll be buying take outs. I
quickly go buy at a Italian restaurant then go back
home I'm welcomed by loud music and a dancing
Lilly with my boys and my Princess clapping her
hands happily I stand there for a while Hlehle sees
me and start screaming she stands up holding on
to Lilly I can see she wants to come to me Lilly also

stands still looking at her the boys start walking towards me since they now know how to walk but I want to see my baby girl take her first step she keeps moving away from Lilly but still holding her sweatpants tightly her brothers get to me I pick them up and kiss them Hlehle screams I look at her.

Me: come to daddy baby.

She immediately let's go of Lilly and takes four steps towards me I smile like a fool she stops and tries walking again but falls on her bums I try to go to her but Lilly stops me.

Lilly: wait for her.

I wait Hlehle has her big eyes on me she then tries to stand up I feel like she is going to fall but she doesn't then she starts walking slowly to me God I'm so blessed I'm at my happiest right now she finally makes it to me and grabs my Jean's tightly I put her brothers down and pick her up she smiles widely she has two teeth now I don't know when they came out but they are there I shower her with kisses she giggles so much my heart warms I look

at Lilly she looks teary she comes to me I bend down and kiss her until Hlehle decides to slap her Lilly slaps her hand and my baby cries.

Me: lilly why would you do that?

Lilly: why did she hit me?

Me: shes a baby.

Lilly: then it's time for her to learn to keep her hands to herself.

I frown looking at her as she walks to the kitchen I shush my baby as I go to the lounge she calms down and lays on my chest shame my baby. Her brothers are playing together not minding what's going on. My dad called me yesterday telling me that my sisters have started a reality show apparently the house has camera men all over my mom is enjoying herself honestly a part of me is not surprised and for some reason people are interested in how they live their lives which I don't understand my sisters do absolutely nothing but spend money and party till they drop as for my mom she likes attention and being in the spot light.

Later we have dinner then I help Lilly put the kids to bed when I'm done go to my bedroom and wait for her while I go through my phone she walks in and I look at her she stands there for a moment and walks to the toilet today I'm finding out what is going with Lilly we cant continue living like this I miss my wife. After a while she walks out and stands in the middle of the room playing with her fingers I put my phone aside.

Me: Lilly what is going on with you? Ever since you came back from your girls trip you've been distant. Did I do something to upset you?

I ask her speaking softly.

Lilly: promise me you wont be mad at me.

She says still looking down at her feet she is wearing my baggy shirt all my shirts always disappear then suddenly she is wearing them but whenever I look for them I cant find them.

Me: Lilly....

Lilly: please just promise.

She says looking at me with glossy eyes fuck those tears.

Me: okay I promise I wont be mad.

She slowly takes off the shirt and she is wearing a white thong my dick jerks getting excited I bit my lip looking her she has her eyes closed then she turns around I choke on my spit when I see my whole face and my upper body on her back. What the fuck??

Me: Lilly...

Lilly: you promised Max.

I roughly run my hand over my face taking a deep breath truth is I never expected this yea I saw her wrist tattoo which I find cute but this is big blow. I walk to her looking at the tattoo and truth is its beautiful whoever did this is really a good artist he got all my tattoos right my features and muscles correctly I know this picture Lilly loves it I run fingers on it I really don't know what to feel about this maybe I should be happy since I also have her face on my chest but this is a lot.

Me: its beautiful.

She sighs out relieved.

Me: so all along you have been hiding this from me?

I say with my arms wrapped around her from behind we actually standing in front of the mirror. She stays quiet with her eyes closed.

Me: Lilly?

She opens her eyes and looks at me through the mirror.

Me: what else are you hiding?

Lilly: remember you promised not to be mad.

Me: I'm running out of patience.

Lilly: if I die I die.

She says to herself what could be worse than this huge handsome tattoo of myself? She removes my hands and takes off her underwear I'm looking at her fat ass she is bending I miss being inside her I hold her hips biting my lip she comes back up and her hand is covering her minky she is looking at

me with begging eyes okay now I'm super confused. She removes her hand my eyes moves down to her minky and I see a shiny silver thing I quickly turn her to face me I look at it again I go on my knees and look at her clit. I slowly feel myself boil with anger I stand up looking at her.

Me: who did this to you?

Lilly: you pro.....

Me: fuck Nthombenhle I asked you a question!

I shout at her and she jumps in fear with her eyes closed I see tears on her cheeks.

Me: you better wipe off those tears before you make me angry!

She jumps frightened again and quickly wipes them I try to calm myself down but I can't get the picture of someone touching my minky out of my mind If I don't get out of here I will kill her I just walk out the room banging the door on my way out I drive home fast this has Amahle and Esihle written all over it. I talk in and I see some people I

don't know with cameras I walk past them and find my mom and dad in the lounge.

Me: where are your daughters?

Dad: you don't greet anymore?

I don't have time for this I walk upstairs shouting for them they come out of their rooms Amahle tries to run back into her room I grab her arm and push them both inside the bedroom I shut the door as I see a camera man who has been following me.

Me: Take off the wires.

Amahle: Buti I'm sorry.

Me: amahle do you want me to repeat myself?

She shakes her head they take them off I throw them into the sink and open water. I walk back and find them crying on the bed.

Me: who pierced Lilly?

Esihle: the lady who did our tattoos.

Me: who came up with this nonsense?

Amahle: we agreed to get the sisters forever tattoo but the girls started asking for more.

Esihle: Buti we were all drunk Lilly and the twins don't remember getting the tattoos or the piercings.

Me: I'm cutting off the allowance you both get from me so you understand.

They quickly nod their heads I walk out and drive back to my house now I'm going to fuck Lilly until her senses come back since when does she drink to get drunk to a point of not remembering anything tonight she will remember. I walk in and lock up I go to my room and find her sitting on the bed with her phone she immediately looks up at me I walk past her and go to my closet I take out three ties and go back and sit on the edge of the bed.

Me: come stand here.

I say pointing between my legs she is hesitant but my face doesn't give her a chance to refuse she gets off the bed and she is naked perfect I miss her skin I turn her around and take both her hands and tie them at the back tightly this tattoo really looks nice I like it and it suites her.

Lilly: Max...

Me: shhhhh...

I take the other tie and over her eyes I don't want to see her tears I know she is going to cry. When I'm done I pick her up and put her on her knees on the bed I take a pillow and put it under her abdomen I look at her as her ass is up in the air and her back is arched perfectly with her hands tied back her breathing has changed I look behind her and see her minky already glistening shes wet and I haven even started I quickly take off my clothes my dick is already hard as a rock I stroke it looking at her my wife is really a goddess shes perfect. I start to rub my tip on her wet lips she moans softly I just slam into her roughly she screams good thing she is wet or that would really hurt I close my eyes as I feel her walls adjust to accommodate me I start to thrust her slowly shes so tight and warm I can hear from her moans that she is crying I start to move faster she tries wiggling out my hold but I my hands are tight around her waist I give her two hard spanks for her to be still I keep moving until

I feel her build up I pull out and lay her on her side I slam into her again fuck she tastes so good I groan out loud I take her one leg and put it on my shoulder I see her clit piercing I start to play with her clit using my thumb the ring keeps moving around I give her hard thrusts by now she is just screaming I feel my build up and go faster I spank her hard a few times until we both orgasm I catch my breath and slowly pull out my cum starts to drip from her whole and my dick gets hard again I don't waist time I immediately go back for another round and now I'm just pinning her tightly on the bed she cant move from my hold I fuck her hard she has her face buried into the pillow screaming when I'm done I go get a warm towel and wipe her gently I see her wince in pain I see a few drops of blood on the towel if it was not for them I would go in again. I slowly get off the blindfold her eyes are bloodshot red I kiss them both and untie her hands she immediately hugs me and sobbed into my chest apologizing.

Me: shhhhh.... Stop crying.

I say softly rubbing her back we now sleeping on our sides she falls asleep holding me tightly I was actually hoping go all night but I don't want to lend her at a hospital I fall asleep eventually. I'm woken up by her wiggling in my hold I tighten my grip.

Lilly: I need to pee.

I get up and pick her up I take her to the toilet and watching her pee she is in pain when she is done I carry her back to bed and put her on top of me I gently run my fingers on her back.

Me: I missed you.

She sighs.

Me: never let anyone touch what's mine Lilly I will kill them and their families and anything related to them.

Lilly: I'm sorry.

Me: I forgive you. Is it not painful I mean the piercing?

Lilly: not as much as before. I will remove it when its fully healed.

Me: you don't have to remove it if you don't want to just don't let anyone touch what's mine.

Lilly: I promise it will never happen again.

Me: now tell me what exactly where you drinking during your trip?

She giggles and starts blabbering about her trip I can tell she enjoyed herself she even tells me that her sisters are pregnant and juice is the one who is experiencing the symptoms which now makes perfect sense the last time he was here he was eating nonsense I guess it's his cravings. We spent our morning catching up it feels like I haven't seen her in months I really missed her presence.

It's been a week now and I'm suddenly very famous because of the reality show when I went to see Amahle and Esihle stupid stories were written that I'm abusive and that I hit my sisters and Lilly but Amahle and Esihle cleared that issue and now their fans want to see me and Lilly in their show that will not happen. Right now I'm in my office at home I just finished a conference call whenever Lilly is home I always want to spend my time here

I hate it whenever I have to go to work or leaving the house without them. I hear a soft knock and the door opens I look up and Lilly walks in wearing shorts her tights look yummy and my shirt she comes and sits on my lap my arms immediately go around her I kiss her neck.

Me: you smell nice.

She giggles blushing shes beautiful.

Lilly: thank you you have a visitor.

I groan burying my head on her boobs why cant people let me enjoy my time with my wife and kids.

Me: who is it?

Lilly: come let's go.

She says standing up and pulling me up with my hand I follow her as we go to the lounge I find sis Busi and my kids playing on the floor then I see my brother Michael sitting there looking at my kids he looks good better than before way better I guess he got his nose fixed he turns and finds me and Lilly looking at him he stands up and greet we

greet him back and I go sit Hlehle goes to him as he is sitting opposite us we silently looking at her she just stands there with her hands on his knees staring at him.

Hlehle: dadaddadadadada...

She screams I see my brother smile a little.

Me: sis Busi can you please take them with you.

She nods and stands up she helps them stand they follow her as they walks out the lounge.I turn my attention back to my brother who is now looking down.

Me: Michael...

He looks at me and his eyes are red his tears drop I feel my heart race Lilly puts her hand on my thigh and squeeze it.

Michael: I'm sorry.

He says softly looking at me I get emotional I've waited years to hear him say this I kept waiting and eventually gave up but now his here and I don't know what to say. I've forgiven him a long time ago I love him his my brother my little

brother I would do anything for him and out of everyone who has betrayed me his the one who broke my heart. I look at Lilly and her eyes are glossy.

Me: I forgive you Michael.

A sob escapes his mouth I stand and go to him I hug him and he cries painfully I also fail to hold mine I just hug him tightly until he cries himself to sleep I carry him to the guest bedroom I lay him there and cover him with a blanket. I need my Lilly she just disappeared from the lounge I go to my bedroom and find her laying on her back looking up I look at her for a moment I don't know what I did to deserve her she turns to look at me when she finally feels my presence.

Lilly: come.

She says softly with her arms open I immediately go bury my head between her boobs and cry I don't know how long I've been holding it in but I cry like a little boy remembering from the day my dad dragged me out the gate and Michael standing there with smirk and mum and my sisters

nowhere at site. I feel Lilly tighten her grip around my shoulders she keeps brushing my back after a while I she pulls my face and kisses me I try to pull out but she just deepens the kiss I can taste my tears my hands go under her shirt to her boobs I squeeze it she moans in my mouth before I know it we both naked I look at her and still don't understand what I did to deserve her I feel her soft hand push my dick inside herself I feel her walls pull me in I push the rest in I bury my head in her neck while my arms go around her and hold her tightly I honestly don't know what I would do without her I start to move slowly deepening my thrust her moans are soft and her nails keep digging deeper into my back I feel her body tense up she orgasm and shakes under me I continue making love to her through her orgasms eventually I come and fall asleep in top of her .

I'm woken up by Lilly busy kissing me she sucks my bottom lip I wrap my arms around her and flip us over she screams giggling and now I'm on top of her. I look at her and she has that beautiful smile with her dimples looking all cute.

Me: why cant you let me sleep?

Lilly: its dinner time already you've been sleeping we miss you.

She says pouting I kiss her again I feel my dick jerk she quickly pushes me off I chuckle.

Lilly: go wash your face and come eat.

Me: you know I'm going to get you right

She runs out the room giggling I sometimes forget how playful she gets I get up and go wash my face get dressed and go down I find Michael and my babies already in their chairs Lilly puts a plate in front of him mine is already there she comes back with three small plastic plates that have drumsticks and puts them in front of the babies who immediately take them and start munching away Michael and I chuckle looking at them they not even looking at us and those drumsticks look as big as their chubby faces but they already chewing Nhlaka wants to swallow the whole demn thing but his small mouth is not having it Lilly comes back and sits next to me we start eating.

Lilly: do you have nipples?

Lilly asks him frowning looking cute Michael laughs throwing his head back.

Michael: you killed my self esteem now all the girls I fuck keep asking me why I don't have nipples

Lilly giggles and mumbles sorry in between her laughs.

Me: so what do you tell them?

Michael: that I had breast cancer.

He says shrugging me and Lilly look at each other and bust out laughing I don't think men get breast cancer.

Me: and they believe you?

Michael: yeah they even sympathize with me being a cancer survivor.

Lilly: you fucking bimbos.

Me: where is Tumi

Michael: yohh.... That one I divorced her I even found out that she aborted two pregnancies that belonged to John imagine John.

He says unbothered John is a old white man married to one of my mom's friend they have this rich housewife group going on. That man is a pervert loves young girls his disgusting.

Lilly: good riddance to bad rubbish.

Michael: hai...

Me: so you going back home?

Michael: no not with Amahle and Esihle and their nonsense tv show. I've been staying in a hotel.

Lilly: you can come stay with us.

Michael: oh... no I cant intrude.

Me: you not intruding plus my babies need to get to know their uncle you will move out when you find your own place.

Lilly: please I'm asking nicely.

Michael: fine I'll move in tomorrow before you chop off my organs again.

Me: just don't bring your bimbos and dodgy people here we have babies we don't want dirty energy in our home.

We have our dinner over a nice conversation I'm happy to have my brother back now we can work on building our relationship. My babies ended falling asleep with their drumsticks whenever we tried taking them they should cry so they just ended up sleeping sucking them now Lilly has been cleaning them up and putting them to bed . Michael left he went back to his hotel to pack and check out tomorrow. I'm following Lilly around like a lost puppy now we in the kitchen as she is cleaning it I'm sitting on a high chair looking at her moving around.

Me: how far are you with your business.

Lilly: well I did buy that building I showed you they now renovating it I've hired a few people and a HR lady who is busy hiring people who we going to need all the businesses I handle as Madusa are moving to High Consultations since I'm trying to make them look legit the merge between Numbers

and High Consultation has been made already they also have renovations happening there and a few shuffles some are going to move to the new building and I'm going to hire new employees that side Amu is going to continue running it that side his been doing a good job so I'm keeping him as CEO that side and I'm only going to work as CEO for a year then hire someone to run the whole thing for me I want to be a housewife.

I want to jump of my chair and twerk when I heard housewife.

Lilly: stop smiling like that I'll change my mind about being a house wife.

Me: please don't kill my dream.

Lilly: yeah so anyway in two months time we will be officially opening the offices for now everyone is working from home until then the renovations will be done in 6 weeks my PR guy is already working on the opening event so everything is falling into place beautifully.

Me: sounds like you have everything planned out.

She nods her head pouring herself a glass of wine she already gave me my whiskey we go sit in the lounge watching a movie my phone vibrates I take it and see Baba send me a text it's just a address and date and time which is Sunday I wonder what's going to happen.

I'm woken up by Lilly busy fiddling in my face with her fingers I groan and turn the opposite side I feel her get on top of me I'm laying on my back I don't understand what is her problem.

Lilly: wake up I'm bored and you said we have to go somewhere.

Its Sunday today and we have to go to that address Baba has sent.

Lilly: Max.

She says poking my throat I cough a little and look at her.

Me: geeez.... Are you trying to kill me in my sleep?

She giggles

Lilly: wake up you've been sleeping for a long time.

Me: can I just sleep for a few minutes please.

Lilly: no I'm bored.

Me: you want us to have sex?

I say grabbing her ass tightly and pull her closer.

Lilly: no I....

I just flip her over and kiss her neck all she is doing is giggling so I stop and look at her.

Me: why are you laughing?

Lilly: I don't want to have sex.

Me: then why did you wake me up.

Lilly: I miss you.

Me: well now I'm horny.

Lilly: let's go shower you stink.

Me: okay let's go have shower sex.

Lilly: I never said shower sex, why do you always want sex?

Me: why are you always sexy? And your pussy is tight I love it.

Lilly: I'm tired of having sex with you.

Me: if you trying to hurt my feelings it's not working let's go.

She starts pushing me off her I put her over my shoulder and spank her she squeals I go to the bathroom we eventually shower I manage to get two rounds there and now I just finished dressing up Lilly is fixing the bed she is wearing a floral dress she looks pretty I pick her up and spin her in the air she squeals holding my arms tightly I put her down and she starts throwing her tiny fists at me screaming I just pull her to my chest and kiss her.

Me: I love you.

Lilly: leave me alone I'm mad.

I chuckle she really looks cute with her pouted lips I quickly kiss her and leave her before she starts punching me again. I find my brother dressed in shorts and my kids also dressed in shorts looking cute I kiss them and look at my brother packing food in a basket.

Me: where are you going?

Michael: morning I slept well thank you.

Me: where are you taking my kids?

Michael: we going to a park for a picnic.

I look at him and his serious.

Michael: don't worry I'm taking sis Busi with me plus you wont be around maybe you will find us here when you come back.

Me; okay fine send me pictures.

Lilly comes down with her hand bag I grab the keys and we leave I drive slowly I keep glancing at Lilly honestly I don't know what we going to find there I'm a bit worried the last thing I want is my wife being upset or crying I pull over on the side she stops singing and looks at me I turn off the engine and turn my body facing her.

Lilly: what's wrong?

I sigh

Me: remember when I told you that I'm doing some background check on Balenciaga?

Lilly: yeah.

Me: well it turns out that you actually related from your grandmother's side of the family so I spoke to Baba about it first and days later he send me a text where we should meet him today. I don't know what we going to find there.

She just looks at me.

Lilly: okay.

Okay?? What is okay??

Me: the reason I'm going with you is to support you so if anything happens there that makes you feel overwhelmed tell me then I will get you out of there okay?

I say softly I really don't know how to handle this all she does is nod her head.

Me: I love you okay?

She leans in and perks my lips I go back on the road the radio is playing and she is no longer singing I hold her hand and continue driving we make it so some suburb neighborhood I see a couple of white people we make it to the street I see some cars parked I guess everyone is here only

Khumalo babies like sports cars anyway we park we sit in the car for a moment until Lilly says we should go in. This house is really beautiful and big actually all the houses here are beautiful Lilly greets the garden guy something is off with this place I cant put a finger on it but something is not right. We get to the door and ring the bell I feel like we in some horror movie.

Lilly: Max?

I look down at her.

Lilly: do you have your gun with you?

I raise my eyebrow.

Me: yeah.

She knows I normally carry my two guns.

Lilly: okay.

The door opens a blond white lady opens she smiles and let's us in we follow her to the lounge Lilly is holding my hand tightly. We find her family there from her brothers, parents, uncles, cousins even Juice is here with his wives Baba sees us and stands to hug Lilly we sit and we I see a old couple

probably in their 80s or 90s but they look strong for their age next to them it's two white men who look like they are Babas age so I would say 60s even though Baba looks 40 anyway next to them are two white women including the blond lady then we see Balenciaga his eyes have been on Lilly including the old couple and two men ever since we walked in they have been staring at her I can see the old lady kind of looks like Lilly I guess they are her grand grandparents.

Old man: Anna....

He says in a shaking voice the wife is already crying. Baba clears his throat we all look at him.

Baba: boys these are your grandparents they are your mothers parents and your uncles which are her brothers.

He says looking at Terminator and his brothers. He turns back to the white couple.

Baba: Van Stodden this is my family my family with Anna we have four boys and 18 grandchildren and 3 grand grandchildren.

White guy: where is Anna?

Balenciaga: I told that she is dead I don't know why you don't believe me.

White guy: don't tell me about your feelings Christian just because you don't feel her doesn't mean she is dead.

Balenciaga gives him a death stare.

White guy 2: and if it happens that she is dead I can bet my life that the black animal killed her.

Whoa! All the Khumalo kids are now looking at him ready to chop off his head he gets shocked when he finds us looking at him even the white women now look red and scared

All that time they have been speaking Afrikaans deep Afrikaans not your coloured Afrikaans that most people can hear I guess they thought we don't know that kind of Afrikaans. I'm lucky my dad taught me and my siblings that Afrikaans we used to hate it but now it comes in handy.

Old woman: Patrick that is no way to speak.

She says softly.

Terminator: baba what really happened to ma?
Why are we only meeting her family now?

Baba looks at him and his eyes are bloodshot red
he turns and looks at the old couple that is crying.

Baba: I remember the first time I saw her she was wearing her brown and white school uniform carrying books big books she had her dark hair tied into a high ponytail her cheeks looked pink and her lips pouted she was so beautiful next thing she tripped and fell all her books were all over the floor I ran to her forgetting that I was not supposed to be on that side of the road since it was the apartheid era, anyway I quickly helped her up and picked up her books but a white man came from nowhere started to hit me swearing at me but Anna defended me and explained I was just helping her the man let me go and told me to never step on that side but since that day I could never forget her bright ocean blue eyes I knew she was 15 years younger than me and she was white so I never stood a chance with her but that didn't stop me walking past her house everyday hoping to see

her. One day I was walking from worked I used to work at the mine in gold reef we had a hostel we lived in close by but I always took the long route just to see her anyway that day she saw me but I didn't she was in disguise and the sun was setting so I didn't see her until I recognized her voice. I was so scared she took me at some place I guess it was her hiding place we spoke the whole night I got to know the most wonderful person ever I fell for her even deeper as time went on we would always meet up there one time she asked to see where I live well I lived in a hostel full of men women were not allowed there but guys always managed to find a way to sneak them in but now it was going to be hard to sneak in a whit girl who was 15 years but I managed to sneak her in little did I know that she wanted me to make love to her sleeping with her was never something I thought about because she was young and I didn't mind waiting but things took a different turn that night I fell inlove with her even more. Our relationship continued I even wrote letters to my mom about her as time went on weeks later Anna meet with

me and she was crying when I asked her what's wrong she said she missed her periods and she is pregnant I was happy but I was more worried about her and her school her parents she was very young for that she asked me that we should run away I refused and told her she must tell her mother running away would bring us more trouble I really wished I had listened to her. One night she decided to come clean to her parents for some reason I decided to hide behind a huge tree opposite their house praying that she will be okay but I started to hear noise coming from her house then I saw her father dragging her on the gravel and throw her out the gate she laid there in her own pool of blood I wanted to run to her but I knew that would mean I will get killed and she will be alone so I waited for hours until it was midnight I went to her she had lost so much blood I thought she was dead I carried her to hostel and I still had to sneak her in then I went to call our traditional healer he was so mad at me that I'm going to get everyone in hostel killed but he helped me. He help me clean her up and dress her in my clothes

then gave me some medicine he told me that she has lost the baby and he called his friend who will be able to hid us in his bakkie he was travelling to KZN the next day . By Gods grace no one stopped us on the road until we made it to KZN the moment I got home my mom was so happy until she saw Anna but she knew how much I loved her she managed to convince my dad to let her stay luckily we lived in a old village and we never saw any white people there so I was able to hide Anna there . My mom nursed her back to life bit she became depressed and keeping her in doors during the day didn't help we couldn't risk people seeing her village people are very noisy so I only took her out at night eventually her mental and emotional state improved thanks to my mom who would pray with her soon she was back to her natural self all bubbly and beautiful we always went for night walks my mom hated them because we didn't have electricity so the moon give us light she loved living in the village even though we would lock her up during the day but she never had a problem. One day my mom noticed that she is pregnant and

spoke to me I knew at that I had to get a job to provide for my family that's when I got into smuggling illegal weapons for comrades it brought in good money but that meant I was never home and that didn't sit well with me. Then Nkosi was born I married Anna she always pushed me to work harder and I would complain that I want to be home with her and my son but she was not having it she told me that in future everything will be worth it so I listened to her and she was right the apartheid era came to an end by then she was pregnant with my last born and from there we were able to live a free life. She still didn't want to leave the village and she loved my mom and dad they were her bestfriends I didn't have a problem with that so I bought her a plot and she designed her dream house we were happy I travelled less but my work was dangerous years later Khumkani went missing. That hit her hard it dragged her back to depression the kids moved in with my parents even Anna because I was out there looking for my son until I got a call that Anna is not doing well I went back home the moment I got there she

got a heart attack I rushed her to the hospital but I was too late her heart was too broken she couldn't take losing another child hell I was barely coping but I had to be strong for her not only did she lose a child but she lost her family a family that killed my first born your grandchild. Do you know how many nights she woke because of nightmares and sometimes missed you how many tears I had to wipe because you refused to see beyond my skin color?

He says softly with tears in his eyes I can feel Lilly shaking the tension in this room is too high everyone is in their emotions. The grandparents are crying.

Grandpa: I'm so sorry.

Before I know it Nono flew across the room and is on top of the old man throwing fists Baba just stands up and walks out Lilly follows him juice is trying to pull off Nono just when we thought he got her Zizi follows the brothers pull her off his sons help him up and his face already looks purple with a busted lip and bruised eye.

Patrick: then you complain when I call you animals!

Wrong words because within a second every khumalo baby have their guns pointed at him.

Ndu: I dare you to say that shit again.

Patrick is already shaking even the white women.

Me: can we all calm down. Guys please we still in your grandparents house.

They pull back their guns we all sit in silence in our thoughts until I hear Balenciaga sob out loud I just pull him into my arms clearly his brothers have no intentions of confronting him and it clearly shows this has affected him more than anyone as soon as he calms down he leaves Lilly walks back in and asks me to take her home.

CHRISTIAN VAN STODDEN (BALENCIAGA)

I don't know where to begin well I'm Chis known as Balenciaga we will get to how I got that name I'm Anna's twin brother well as you all can see I come from a racist family well my dad was the biggest racist but after Anna's disappearance he

started to change but unfortunately my brothers Petrick and Peter still have that recist in them. When my dad realized that Anna is not coming back and years kept going he was remorseful about how he handled the situation and always wished that she could one day come home so he can apologize and make things right, well me and Anna always had an emotional connection when one of us was not okay it would affect the other hence I knew when she died I suddenly had very painful chest pains and when they stopped I couldn't feel her anymore I kept telling them that she is no more because I couldn't feel anymore but they never believed me whenever she was sad I would always sleep with a broken heart same as when she was happy I would be over the moon I always missed her we did everything together I knew about her secret relationship but I never knew who he was .

I can never forget the day my dad was throwing punches at her and my mom trying to stop him but he was too strong there was so much blood I had nightmares about it throughout my teenage years

I realised that I live in a toxic home when my brothers saw nothing wrong with what my dad did so after high school I applied for Harvard and moved there and avoided coming home at all costs I only come because of my mom. Harvard that's where I met Brain his a black amacian his the one who came up with this Balenciaga name because I love good fashion clothes quality is what I go for plus I came from a rich family so I could afford it Balenciaga is a Fashion house I've always loved so I had most of their designs that's when Brain started calling me Balenciaga so the name stuck. Brain is the guy who introduced me to selling drugs I was doing it to support him he was doing it to pay for his school fees and such most people never understood our friendship because of our skin color but we didn't care as time went on I started having a street cred I opened clubs which lead me into prostitution and drugs just became easy before I knew it I was smuggling illegal firearms my name and empire continue to grow with Brain by my side his more of a silent partner then there is Monica who is Mexican American we

met while I was still studying and hustling she was very young at that time somehow she got entangled into my hustle then she became my ride or die. Do I love her? Absolutely not shes hot and the sex is great and shes always there but that's all she can offer shes not a lifetime partner material shes knows what I let her know she can never know the real ins and out of my business never trust a person especially one with a pussy. She loves living on the edge, loves money and the status of being my girl well I don't mind free good pussy and she comes in handy for some business deals.

Now let's go to Lilly first time I saw her I thought I was seeing a ghost but the moment I heard her sing I knew shes not Anna. Anna couldn't sing to save her life plus Lilly has a banging thick body definitely has my sisters thick legs but those hips and ass my sister never had those I did a little research on her and started to follow her around I can never understand how she is married to Max its literally like beauty and the beast that guy is scary as shit the only time I saw him smile was

when he was with Lilly at the gala but either than that his scary as shit and his presence is very heavy I always have to wear my brave face around him. His the only man in this world who intimidates me hence I found it difficult to approach Lilly I was planning to play my cards right with her so that I don't piss off Max heard his not one to be fucked with but after that meeting I don't know how to feel. I knew that somehow I'm related to her but I couldn't figure it out how but now it turns out she is my grandchild it's weird I know I'm 52 years old but I look 30 and she looks 21 I just want to build a relationship with all of them I hope I don't get punished for my fathers sins they look like a big and very close family something I've always wanted but me and my brothers don't get along and I just don't care about them.

We now on the first week of December my sons are here with me well I have two sons Taylor is 23 he studied law and his doing his articles his mother is white. Then I have Troy who is 19 his doing his second year is architecture his mother is

black so his mix race, both baby mamas are amazing women never had baby mama problems they know Monica and they cool with her shes more of a big sister to them than a step mom. Brain is also here normally I spend my Christmas in the States but with finding out about the Khumalos I now have a reason to be here in South Africa besides my sons but they normally come to the States so they were shocked when I told them that we will be spending it here and I did fill them in with what's happening with khumlos. Anyway we having breakfast I'm actually eating with my boys.

Taylor: dad I'm serious these people look rich.

Troy: I'm just happy that we finally have a family that we will enjoy hanging out with.

My sons hate my brothers kids they are spoilt and rude and they don't like Troy that much because he is mix race.

Taylor: dad your grandkids look so cool.

Ever since I told them about the Khumalos they have been stalking them on social media they just

want to meet them already we get interrupted when I hear that someone is at the gate I go check it out and its Max I wonder how he knows where I live, I open for him and watch him drive in I open the door and watch him walk towards me I cant believe I'm being intimidated by this guy it's weird.

Max: Balenciaga

Me:Max

I say shaking his hand he has a firm shake and eye contact.

Me: come in

I say moving aside I wonder why his here.

MAX

I see two boys having breakfast they look exactly like Balenciaga I greet them they also greet back.

Balenciaga: follow me

He says walking past me I follow him he has a really nice house too much glass but looks expensive and nice I follow him and we somehow

end up in a gym we sit at the benches I see his girlfriend fighting some guy she looks at us and smile I keep my face serious.

Balenciaga: what brings you here Max?

He says looking at his girlfriend well we both looking at her well she can fight but I would never put her in a ring with Lilly. She fights like shes on WWE shes smirks and walks around with too much pride like she has defeated her opponent which is the number one rule in fighting never underestimate your opponent now Lilly fights like MMA, Boxer, kickboxer mixed all in one she would break every bone this girl has. Thing is Lilly is really good with her fits and knives yes shes good with guns as well but not as much as fighting and it doesn't help that she fights those robots, I remember one day actually it was still early days in our relationship I decided to challenge her in the ring she whooped my ass and knocked me out I was in disbelief I never told anyone about this it still hurts my ego, Lilly doesn't fight using her strength shes more of a smart fighter at first I

thought I was really going to hurt her because shes really tinny but instead of her using her strength and power she only targeted my weak spots I remember she kicked me on my ribs but it left like my vein had popped they way it was so painful before I know it she punched my throat do you know how painful it is trying to gasp for air while in pain?? It literally felt like my windpipe was closing up I honestly thought I'm about to die then she had my neck between her legs while twisting my arm I thought she was going to rip it off I found myself tapping out but she just squeezed those thick thighs I passed out I woke up in the gym floor covered by a blanket ever since then I started using her robots to fight and I now understand why she fights like shes about to kill you she doesn't even give you a chance to breath or think about it those robots do the same you have to be fast and make sure you don't get hit. All I'm saying is that Lilly doesn't have time to be walking around and smirking at you like John Cena she will whip your ass real quick before you can even blink shes too fast and her punches are hard and painful but

I don't blame her those robots are designed to fight to kill which why Lilly fights like that.

Me: Lilly send me to invite you and your family for Christmas lunch.

I see his face beam in excitement.

Balenciaga: really?

Me: yes I will send you our address please tell your brothers to behave when they come I don't like it when my Lilly is upset.

Balenciaga: your Lilly?

Me: yes my Lilly.

I say looking at him I just cant believe his Lilly's grandfather he doesn't look 50 don't white people age quickly?

...: hey I'm Monica

I turn and his girl friend is standing in front of me with her hand out to shake mine shes all sweaty and has a seductive smile I just look at her hand and back at her shes pretty hot but the last time a women was close to me I got stabbed so I'm not

playing that game anymore I just stood up and looked at Balenciaga who is now on his feet.

Me: I'll see you on the 25th.

Then I walked out.

LILLY

I've been running around all morning trying to make sure everything is ready for this Christmas lunch it's a good thing I hired a catering company they even set up in the garden its beautiful. I'm so excited that for the first time I'll be hosting Christmas lunch and my family from my grandmother's side at first we were all mad at them and wanted nothing to do with them but Baba set us all down and spoke some sense so I thought it's best we invite them for this lunch even Max's Family is here luckily Amahle and Esihle listened when we said no cameras even though they were disappointed a part of me is a bit excited to get to know the Van Stodden family this lunch is really going to be big my brothers have been here the whole week and it's been loud and chaotic but I'm loving every minute of it I don't know my kids

anymore they always with them. Nono and Zini are now three months pregnant and enjoying themselves Juices parents are also here with Mbali they've been staying with them they've been fussing over Nono and Zizi it's cute how they excited to be grandparents. Khuhle and Mbali are just a cute couple whenever I see them together I always find them blushing locked into their own bubble they such a calm relaxed couple.

I just finished getting dressed I'm wearing dark blue high waisted jeans with a white long sleeved tight crop top I have a few gold chains around my neck I'm wearing my bright pink Nike kicks I dressed my babies the same even Max but his wearing his black Timberlands with Spa and Nhlaka we look so cute I took a few pictures for Instagram. I go down and find my siblings arguing about something the parents are all chilling outside by the pool we waiting for the Van Staddon to arrive then we can have lunch. My cousins are here too well we not close like before I think we just grew apart when I moved to joburg they hardly ever spoke to me and I didn't bother but the

guys are still cool but the girls seem to be giving me and my sisters a weird vibe.

Nthombi: all I'm saying is that getting married at a young age and having kids before 25 is just putting yourself in a situation that's shitty.

Nthombi, Snethemba and Hloniphile are our female cousins the boys are Mqobi, Sbonelo and njabulo they are actually sextuplets.

Sbu: obviously you going to say that because no one is asking you out.

Everyone busts out laughing if someone said that to me I would cry especially when they laugh at me like this. I see them roll their eyes.

Ndu: no one wants you baby girl.

They continue laughing.

Me: ahhhhhh..... guys that's enough.

I feel Max wrap his arms around me and kiss my neck.

Sne: you can laugh all you like but what Nthombi is saying is true I mean look at Zizi and Nono sharing a dick they look desperate.

Hloni: and others think they better than others because they are married.

What the fuck is wrong with my cousins.

Mqobi: hai Snethemba what nonsense is that now?

Nkosi: you see it's the miserable ones who think nonsense.

Lu: its because no one wants them.

Everyone laughs again I feel Max chuckle on my neck

Hloni: mxm yall are boring. I'm going to the bar.

She says standing and her two sisters follow.

Sbu: even the bartender will not want you!

They bust out laughing again. We have a open bar set up by the pool.

Lusanda: dude what's up with your sisters?

He asks the brothers.

Sbonelo: I really don't know I've been telling Mqobi that they have changed they not the same anymore even dad noticed.

Njabulo: well I didn't notice till today.

We all stay silent for a moment.

Zizi: if they continue with this newly found attitude this house will become small for everyone.

Siya: I was just waiting for your anger to shine.

They laugh Zizi throws a pillow at him.

Khuhle looks at me and indicates that I should follow him he walks out the room I quickly escape Max's hold who is now sulking I get in the guest bedroom and find Kuhle sitting on the bed I sit next to him.

Me: what's up? You miss me?

I say grinning at him he chuckles shaking his head.

Kuhle: not really I just wanted to show you something.

He digs in pocket and takes out a small box he opens it and I see as huge diamond ruby ring my eyes pop.

Me: is that what I think it is?

He nods.

Khuhle: shes the one Nthombi ka Baba I want to spend all my days with her she really makes me happy I love her.

He says sounding so serious my eyes get glossy I jump on him we fall on the bed together I'm happy I'm getting a sister in law. I keep asking him 21 questions until Max comes get us the Van Staddon have arrived. We get to the lounge and see white faces I quickly greet.

Me: let's go have lunch outside by the garden

I don't know how to act around them I feel weird we finally settle down the setting is white and lime its beautiful and the weather is also beautiful my grandmother(owamis mother) says a long prayer this woman is a prayer warrior of the family we never visit her on Saturday or Sunday she will drag

you to church and honestly Owami and dad are not church people so we never went but she did teach us how to pray as soon as she says amen the waiters come through with the food conversation is going around nicely Balenciaga keeps glancing at sis Busi who is lost in whatever Owami is telling her. Some of my stuff is here spending Christmas with us hence sis busi is here too.

Max: I miss you.

He whispers in my ear I turn to look at him and his face is inches away from me I quickly kiss him I feel something hit me on my cheek I pull out and I've been hit by a chicken bone.

Lu: stop sucking face with each other we trying to eat.

I find my cousins looking at me with disgust.

Me: why are you hitting me with food?

Nkosi: stop licking each other.

Me: Baba!.

I scream for him.

Baba: Nthombi ka Baba!

Lu: hai Nthombenhle why you snitching!

Me: lu is hitting me with his food.

Owami: Luyanda stop it!

Lu: but Owami shes lying.

Daddy: why are you behaving like kids.

I pout Owami just laughs at me.

Siya: for a married person you such a baby.

Sbu: have you seen how Max treats her?

Max: hai hai hai leave me out of your problems.

Michael: well his right you treat her like a egg I don't mean that in a bad way though.

Max: when are you finding your own place?

Michael: never this is my home now.

Ndu: you made her worse Max.

Me: why are you discussing me?

Zizi: because you childish.

Me: Baba!

I call him pouting

Baba: would you leave my Princess alone!

Sbu: hai Baba the only princess here is Nobuhle not Enhle she is old now.

Baba: Nobuhle is Max's princess and my princess is Nthombenhle.

I smile sweetly at him.

Baba: come sit with me.

He says petting his lap I quickly stand and Max pulls me back down.

Max: hai Baba when are getting your own wife?

He says with a frown and Everyone laughs.

BALENCIAGA

To say im happy it's an understatement I'm sitting around this table looking at everyone arguing the love and closeness is evident and its beautiful even my brothers are behaving my sons are having a time of their lives they already blending in with my grandsons then there is this lady called sis Busi shes beautiful shes in tight Jean's and a tank top

everything looks beautiful with her she has caramel skin bright smile my eyes keep finding hers and shes shy has an innocent look I want her. Don't ask me about Monica I told her she cant come it's a family thing Brain went back to the state to spend time with his family and keep running things while I'm this side. We just finished having dessert when I see one of my grandson go on his knee with a huge the girl is not even paying attention until everyone is cheering and screaming by the time she sees what's happening she is crying the poor guy didn't even get to ask his question and already everyone is screaming yes on her behalf.

Man: Khumalo I hope you remember when my son came to ask for your daughter's hand in marriage.

I guess that's the girls father.

Terminator: don't annoy me your son took both my daughters.

He says sulking.

Man: uhmmm...just know I'm charging twice the amount.

Terminator: money has never been a problem.

The man whistled dancing with his wife everyone laughs I see the guy called juice pull out a stack of money and make it rain on them my sons go join before I know it everyone is dancing even my parents Gosh they don't even have a rhythm this is funny my eyes move and I find Lilly sitting on max these two are inseparable Lilly indicates I follow her. We walk around the house this place is beautiful and peaceful I really like it.

Lilly: Baba tells me you can ride a horse.

I smile I don't remember when was the last time I was on one but I know it was when my sister was still around because we always rode together.

Me: I was the best but I haven't been on one in a while.

She smiles looking at me she has my sisters smiles even the dimples are hers she reminds me so much of her. We walk until I see a barn I get excited I feel

like a kid. She smiles opening it I hear horses we walk in and I see a black stallion and a brown one they look so beautiful.

Lilly: meet Thunder and Star.

Me: they look nice..

I say brushing the black one which is Thunder. Lilly comes with saddles, headgear and rains she goes back and comes with breastplate. I'm excited we walk them out and put their gear on we get on top and we slowly walk out with them I see my parents look at us with tears it really feels like I'm riding with Anna she has so many qualities like her even her personality I see a few trades that remind me of Anna. We finally make it to the track how big is this yard?

Me: how big is your yard?

Lilly: I don't know but its really big we have three gardeners and one guy who takes care of these two I think you should ask Max.

I smile seeing how happy she is Max is really doing amazing with her.

Lilly: you ready?

Me: yeah I am I hope you ready.

She chuckles.

Lilly: look they watching I know for sure that they betting on who is going to win.

I look over and you can tell that they arguing. I laugh.

Me: are they always like this?

She laughs.

Lilly: oh you've seen nothing yet.

She starts to count down for us before I know it we flying down the track. I see her house at the corner of my eye demn shes really fast I whip thunder harder and he goes faster we get to a curve I don't know how but shes suddenly in front of me but shes very fast too fast man I miss the adrenaline rush that comes with this. We finally come at the end which is where we started and she obviously won we get to the others.

Taylor: dad can you borrow me 10 million.

he says looking down brushing his head. Everyone laughs.

Me: why did you gamble with 10 million when you know you poor?

Taylor: but dad you were supposed to win.

Max: he can never win when it come to...

Everyone: MY LILLY!

They scream and bust out laughing Lilly is blushing looking all sorts of red while Max helps her down the horse.

Dad: she rides just like Anna.

Pater: that's why he lost, but thank you I'm 10 million richer.

Me: wow yall don't have faith in me.

Sbu: don't take it personal we all know here that there are certain things that Lilly is really good at and she gets very competitive and always wins.

Ndu: and that my dear Balenciaga is one of the things she always wins but thank you for making us richer.

Sne: yeah yeah yeah we know she is all that and good at everything blah blah blah all hail to the queen.

She with so much attitude rolling her eyes all the brothers look at her ready to snap her neck I hear Nono chuckle shaking her head it's the im crazy and I'm trying to keep calm type of chuckle.

Siya: that's why you single!

Everyone busts out laughing. These boys laugh so much I even feel sorry for her we get interrupted when I hear a loud wail we turn and see my mom on her knees and my dad laying on the floor my heart starts to race fast I jump off the horse.

Terminator: he has a pulse but he needs to get to the hospital now. Help me carry him bring the car this side.

Lilly runs out and all her brothers actually everyone I see her Mom take the kids into the house we help dad in the car one of my grandsons is driving we all flying on the high way. I'm scared I know I'm old but I'm not ready to lose my dad I

still want him around. We make it to the hospital Terminator is already shouting at everyone he disappears with the other doctors we all sit in the waiting room there is about 30 of us Nono and Zizi walk in with food energy drinks and coffee and some juice we all have been here for hours I keep looking at the door hoping to see Terminator. We all grab something to eat I take the red bull I hear Lilly speaking with her mom on the phone she was checking on her kids and updating her. It's now 3am I see Terminator walk in with scrubs on we all stand up and his colleague steps back frightened.

Peter: and how is he??

He sighs first.

Lilly: dad....

Terminator: his alive but it's not looking good he needs a new heart as in yesterday.

Mom: we've been on the waiting list.

Patrick: Ma you never told us dad is sick.

Mom: he didn't want me to tell you I'm sorry.

I sit down defeated I could've got him a new heart a long time ago. I notice the looks shared amongst my grandkids then Nono asks Juice to go home she is tired. I walk out and call Brain he tell me about blue twins well I've heard of them in passing but I don't know how to even contact them instead he tells me that they will contact me okay that's just confusing. A few hours later I go home thinking how our day was beautiful and now it's just a mess I try to rest for a few hours before I go to the hospital. I don't know how I fell asleep but I'm woken up by Troy I quickly get ready it's already lunch time I go to the hospital I park my car I get out a small kid looks very cute hands me a small envelope I look at it when I look up to ask her what is going on but she just disappeared I look around but nothing I open the envelope I find a letter.

Tell your family that you made arrangements for your father to get treatment in Australia. We will stay in contact.

Blue twins.

Demn that was fast I call Brain he laughs when I tell him how freaked out I am the only thing I have is just this letter I know my family is going to ask me 21 questions and I have no answer to even one. I walk in and find my brothers looking angry.

Pater: why would you move dad without telling us?!

He looks so red I think I see some smoke coming out of his ears.

Me: calm down before you explode.

All my grandchildren are here Godfather and Terminator are looking at me weirdly. I see Nono and Zizi walking towards us with scrubs on I didn't know they doctors and work here but it makes sense since it's their fathers hospital.

Mom: where did you take him?

Me: to Australia to one of the best doctors I promis he will be okay.

My mom just nods wiping her tears it breaks my heart to say this. I walk out to get a smoke since my dad is not here so there is no point in me

staying here I'll just take my mom so she can stay with me and my sons she cant go back home and stay alone.

.....: Blue Twins?

I turn and its Terminator and Godfather. I nod my head blowing out smoke I feel a bit calmer now.

Godfather: don't worry his going to come back well and healthy I know a few people who have used their services and they were happy with their results.

Me: I don't like them they sneaky I don't like sneaky.

Terminator: unfortunately that's how they do their business don't even try looking for them many have tried and failed I even don't know how your signature is all over those transfer papers and how his body disappeared he doesn't appear on any security camera.

Godfather: I really don't like the secrecy that's been happening in the underworld. Khumkani we need to find who are these people.

Me: I agree with you I say suggest we bring our resources together and find the KK table mostly then we will move to the rest.

Terminator: I'll talk to Owami she also wants to know all these people who are hiding in the shadows.

I sigh I'm more worried about the KK members they just pulled a huge heist in the history of books what's next?? The last thing I want is to answer to someone else I've worked too hard to get where I am today I see two kids look at us while passing they look like street kids I feel like I've been seeing too many kids today. Eventually everyone comes out I drive my mom to get her things then go home the moment we walk in we find Monica walking around naked in the kitchen sometimes I think there is something wrong with her I have sons in this house not just sons but horny boys. I even forgot that she is here my mom knows her shes not really a fan of her but she has not said it directly my mom doesn't talk much she is very reserved and keeps to herself.

Me: can you go get dressed.

She turns and looks at us then walk away shaking her big ass Monica has your Cardi b kind of look even her body my mom shakes her head disapproving.

Mom: when are you getting yourself a wife? A proper wife.

Busi comes to my mind immediately I smile I need to go to Max's house to see her.

Mom: I guess that smile tells me that soon I'll meeting her.

I chuckle and help her settle in I order us food and go check on my boys I find them in their game room I decide to join them before I go fuck Monica I really need to release some stress.

LILLY

I'm driving to the mall Nono and Zizi invited us to come see them operating on our great grandfather they just said we must drive to the mall I get there and park someone knocks on my window immediately it's a kid she smiles indicating I

should follow her she doesn't even have two front teeth. I quickly jump out and lock my car I follow her shes so fast and she keeps disappearing between cars we at to the end of the building and we go through a maintenance door the room is full of cleaning materials we walk to the back she lifts up a tile on the floor then scan her hand on it I see a shelf by the wall open she tells me to go in its stairs that go down it's dark but the stairs have red lights the moment I walk in the door closes this is some creepy horror shit that I didn't sign up for this the moment I get down I push the door and it looks like I just walked into a whole hospital I see a lot of kids mostly teenagers who are in scrubs and white coats like doctors I see Lu fighting the vending machine I roll my eyes until a cute small baby girl hits it once on the side and the food start to fall off. I laugh looking at his facial expression as the little girl walks away looking like a mini boss shaking her tiny ass I go to him and pull out to packets of chips, sweets and a chocolate.

Lu: a thank you would be nice.

I laugh.

Me: you just got schooled by a kid so if I were you I would just shut up.

I say walking away as if I know where I'm going.

Lu: where are you going?

Me: I don't know.

Lu: that's because you forward we going this side.

I just follow him as he walks fast.

Me: why are you taking such big steps?

He stops and turns to look at me the moment I get to him he grabs my hand and pull me now I'm jogging while his walking. We walk in a gallery and down there through the big glass I can see my sisters and their spy kids preparing. My brothers are all here and laughing at whatever.

Me: Khumalo babies!

They all greet back I settle in next to Nkosi who is eating a burger my stomach grumbles I watch him put it down on his lap I silently take it and start eating it's so juicy and delicious I moan with my

eyes closed when I open them I find him looking at me I chew slowly and swallow hard.

Me: hi

Nkosi: why are you stealing my food?

Me: well... I... I thought you full and done eating.

He squints his eyes at me I quickly kiss his cheek.

Me: I love you.

I say sweetly blinking my long lashes at him. He just smiles and hangs his hand over my shoulders pulling me closer and kiss my forehead.

Nkosi: last borns are a curse.

Me: you love me.

Nkosi: let's just say you lucky that was my second burger.

Me: its really delicious.

I say with my mouth full still chewing.

Nkosi: if you don't slow down you going to choke.

as soon as I'm done eating I see my grandfather being pushed in suddenly we all go quiet and look

at them move around Nono goes to some mini speakers and start to play her music they put stairs next to the bed on both sides and they standing on them Zizi pulls the big light above them closer to his chest there's two boys next to them sitting close to the table that has knives and scissors. This feels like a movie we sitting quietly watching them operate it's been over 5 hours already and they still busy they work so flawlessly together they not even talking but it's like they in sync watching them work together is really fascinating and beautiful for some reason we cant take our eyes off them. They really going to make amazing doctors one day dad is going to be so proud of them next year they graduating I want to throw them a party they deserve it but they will be very pregnant so I will see what I can do. A few hours later they take out a heart from a cooler box this is really cool we watch Zizi put it in gently then Nono goes back with her scissors and a needle I think I cant really see it from here. They carry on being busy for a few hours then stop and tell some kid to reduce something we now all standing

looking and waiting to see the heart beating on it's own.

Kid: why is it not moving?

Zizi: give it a moment.

We wait patiently looking at the heart then suddenly there is a beeping sound and the heart is moving we all cheer.

Nono: see it just needed some time.

She says sweetly to the kid who has been so fascinated with what's been happening. She shows the kid how to close him up then they leave when they done some girls come in to clean him up and take him to the recovery room. I need to back home I've been here for hours I miss my kids now.

MAX

It's now the end of January we just come back from the hospital to see Balenciaga's dad who miraculously appeared and looks healthy as ever he will be discharged tomorrow everyone is happy. I'm currently driving back home with Balenciaga who says he wants to see my kids but I

know he just wants to see sis Busi who is forever running away from him its actually funny every time she sees him she would freeze then walk the opposite direction sometimes I see her sneaking around and Balenciaga just enjoys bothering her. Juice is driving with his wives and Lilly they going for their spa thing and I honestly didn't want her to go I just feel uneasy about it. A phone rings and its Balenciaga he answers.

Balenciaga: yes.

He says in his scary voice he is actually scary but he cleans nice always dressed to kill his hair and beard is always trimmed nice and he smells good his really a clean man with expensive taste I think that's where Lilly got her expensive taste in clothes, jewelry, bags, shoes etc.

Balenciaga: you touch my family Charlie I will skin you alive.

Okay now that got my attention I look at him and his eyes look deadly and his whole face is red. He hangs up cussing I get to the robots and it just closed me in when suddenly I feel chest pains I feel

a bit dizzy I think I hear Lilly call me but Balenciaga shakes me roughly

Balenciaga: you okay? I think I should drive.

I shake my head a bit and take my phone to call her but a call comes through I answer before I can say anything the person starts talking.

....: Boss it's bad!

I hear gun shots and cars crashing my heart skips a beat.

Max: where is Lilly?!

I scream through the phone.

...: they too...

Then I hear a huge explosion the phone goes dead I feel my blood boil and start to hit my phone on the steering wheel until it breaks.

Me: fuck fuck fuck!

I take Balenciaga phone and call Biggy to track Juices car I drive and he tell me where to go I drive there quickly when I get there it's a mess I jump out of my car and walk past the police and

paramedics I see them taking juice out of the car his been shot on his chest I keep looking but I don't see the girls.

Balenciaga: how is he?

I hear him talking to the paramedics.

Paramedic: his alive but we rushing him to the hospital.

I look inside the car and I see Lilly's phone and bag inside. I walk back to Balenciaga.

Me: let's go

He follows me I'll check juice later right now I need to find the Khumalo girls or Terminator and Godfather will go crazy and I need my Lilly here. I get in my car and call Biggy to meet me in my house I get my guys to go to juice and makes sure he is okay. I get home with Balenciaga and Biggy is already there I walk in with them on tail I go to my study and pour myself whiskey and down it my chest burns I pour again and turn to look at them Biggy looks at me scared Balenciaga is on his

phone shouting when he hangs up he sits opposite me.

Me: who took them Biggy?

Balenciaga: Charlie took them.

Me: who the fuck is Charlie?

Balenciaga: an old enemy who is into human trafficking him and I have been fighting for my territory but obviously I'm still standing and running them he hates my guts. He has tried to kill me a few times and I've let it slide now his gone to far.

Me: you trying to tell me that my Lilly is with a man who traffic woman and children?

He nods I close my eyes I need to be calm.

Me: what do I need to know about him?

Balenciaga: he has no soul woman and children mean nothing to him he killed his own parents so we basically facing a monster here.

I nod my head and take my laptop I check their trackers I can see they moving judging by the

speed and direction they flying to somewhere up in Africa I guess we will wait till they stop. I close it and find them looking at me.

Me: we wait. In the mean time I need men to be ready to fly and get them Biggy and the Khumalos can never find out about this.

Balenciaga: I'll get some of my men to come assist. We will find them I know Charlie is doing this to get to me I can give up my territory if it comes to it.

Me: I don't care if he is after you or your territory he took the wrong girls and for that he will know why people fear us.

I close my eyes and relax on my chair I know Khumalo babies are fighters but that is my wife and her sisters and they pregnant if anything happens to them it would kill me and juice I want them back here before juice wakes up. I decide to go see how he is at the hospital.

LILLY

I'm trying to open my eyes but I'm struggling my body feels restrained I finally manage to open them everything looks blurry I blink a couple of times and finally I can see I'm tied on a chair facing a table by the wall this room is empty on my side I see Nono the Zizi they both passed out.

Me: Nolwazi...

I see her move and moan God I hope whatever they gave us doesn't harm their babies we cant even fight ourselves out of this because they pregnant and Nobuhle is not even around to help so we have to stay calm and pray Max finds us Juice had better be alive he cant die before meeting his kids.

Me: you okay?

I can see shes a bit dizzy but she nods shaking her head slightly.

Me: come on Nolwazi...

Nono: I'm okay where are we?

She says scanning the room.

Me: I don't know.

Zizi: what's the plan of getting out of here.

Me: non we wait for Max to come for us.

Nono: we cant do that juice is shot we need get out of here.

Me: Nolwazi don't be stupid you both pregnant the last thing we need is you loosing those kids so we wait.

They both go silent.

Zizi: okay you making sense but Max better hurry up.

Me: he will.

We sit in silence God knows bow I domt want anything to happen to my sisters I hope we make it out of here in one piece. We sit for hours my bums are even painful I'm hungry I cant even tell what time is it. Eventually we hear the door open two men walk in one is smirking at us the other is just looking at us with a serious face. They stand there looking at us.

....: Balenciaga has beautiful girls.

We still look at him.

.....: well I'm Charlie and this is my friend we call him Q.

He walks to Zizi and touch her boob she roughly shakes him off then he laughs.

Charlie: feisty uhmmm...

Then goes to Nono he does the same she shakes him off too then he comes to me he puts his hand under my shirt he smiles looking at me this man is a pervert I tilt my head looking at him I don't know what his trying to archive but it's not going to happen today.

Charlie: ...uhmm

He pulls his hand out and they both walk out I hear Zizi and Nono breath out. We stay for a while then he comes back with a a couple of guys they looking at us with lust I don't like this at all.

Charlie: let's start with that one.

He says pointing at Zizi I really hope she doesn't fight them they untie her and pull her towards the table.

Charlie: we all know I have to go in first right.

They nod with their eyes glued to at Zizi. One guy spanks her I jump on my chair Chairlie pulls her closer to him and sniff her Zizi already has tears running down her cheeks I can see she is trying hard not to punch this idiot shes even shaking he licks her face and push her back to the table he rips her pants off. Another guy is already stroking his hard dick.

Me: whoa!stop! Please stop! Charlie!

They all stop and look at me.

Charlie: what?

Me: take me please not them.

Charlie: uhmmm...

Me: please I promise I will behave I will not fight you just don't touch them please.

Nono: Nthombenhle....

She saya shaky voice I ignore her.

Charlie: well I was planning to save the best for last but you just gave me the best gift ever.

I just look at him and he tells the guy to tie Zizi up who is now crying historically they close her mouth.

Nono: Nthombenhle please don't do this.

Me: Nolwazi just shut up.

.....: ya boss this one is the one.

He says licking his lips I'm already standing in front of Charlie he smells like nicotine he runs his fingers on my chicks I feel myself cringe.

Charlie: I think I'm going have you to myself.

He says softly but I'm just disgusted by him.

Charlie: take off your clothes.

I do as he says and now I'm standing in front of him in white lingerie. He turns me around and takes off my bra then cups my boobs which are leaking milk. He groans and turns me around and pick me up he puts me on the table and take off my underwear he spreads my legs he touches my piecing and play with my clit my eyes find Nonos eye filled with tears.

Me: close your eyes.

She immediately does I look at Zizi she also shut her eyes without warning I feel him slam into me I'm dry as a desert he pulls out and spit on his dick then push back in he curses with his eyes closed I'm not even concentrating on the pain and I will not cry I'm doing this for my sisters I know they would do it for me if I was in their position I don't want them to loose those babies no one deserves to lose a baby. Before I know it he orgasms then flip me over he spanks me now I'm looking these idiots who are horny and waiting for their turn he slams into again all I hear is his body slapping mine and his groans I just want this to end I have not made a sound or share a tear I just keep reminding myself what I'm doing this for my sisters. I look over my sisters and Zizi has her eyes open.

Me: close your eyes Zizi.

I say and feel him grab my hair tightly I wince in pain and he moves fast the busts into me he stays there for a while breathing heavy.

Charlie: no one touches her shes mine alone understand.

He says to the men who nod disappointed I quickly get dressed and go sit on my chair quietly they tie me up and walk out I breath out relieved that my sister were not touched. I know for sure that I'm not okay but I gave him my consent so I cant be mad about it right I'm the one who bagged to be fuck so I have no right to cry about it we sit I'm silence while I listen to them crying silently. Hours pass then I hear the door open we look up and it's those men and Charlie is not with them. One walks to me.

.....: you really thought Charlie would have you alone.

.....: we also want to taste plus you look yummy.

.....: so choose we have you willingly or we have all three of you.

Zizi: Nthombenhle please don't do it please

Shes says already cry. I bod my head to the guy no one is touching my sister not when I'm alive they

all smile excited. Nono just sobs out loud. The other guy puts his shirt into her mouth but she just cries painfully. I've already taken off my clothes I didn't bother wearing that lingerie so now I'm naked surrounded by 5 men. One guy lays on the floor and they tell me to get on top I do as he says and he immediately pushes himself inside I still have Charlie's sperms so it doesn't feel dry the guy curses with his eyes closed I feel another one behind me his on his knees between this one who is laying on the floor I feel him spread my bum checks and push himself forcefully I feel my anus tear the other guy brings his dick to my face and tells me to eat. I look over at my sisters and their eyes are closed but they still crying. I turn my attention to this one and he shoves his dick into my mouth after a few seconds I'm being fucked in every hole I have my anus is the one with so much pain but I ignore it they carry on with me switching positions as soon as they done my body feels numb I have blood running down my thighs I just take my Jean's and wear them I put on my shirt and go sit which is the most painful thing ever I

wince in pain again I suck it up and feel the pain as soon as his done tying me I hear a lot of gun shots they all run out I breath out knowing that Max is finally here .

MAX

We don't find Charlie in this place we in DRC in some building filled with girls who are prostitutes I follow this tracker passing all these dead bodies Balenciaga's men really came through for us Biggy is on my tail I finally get to the room they in I open the door and find three of them tied on their chairs Nono and Zizi are just crying silently Lilly looks different we untie them and I carry Lilly out while Biggie follows with Nono and Zizi. I get in the car Balenciaga jumps in too I look at Lilly who has her head on my chest it's like shes here but not here I feel her in my arms but I don't feel her presence and my chest feels different like I want to cry but I cant. We drive out today it's the third day since they were kidnapped.

Lilly: please borrow me your phone.

I give it to her she starts typing in her code then dials a number.

Lilly: Lolo

.....

Lilly: get me Charlie and everyone who is related him I want every family member from his kids to his ancestors. Get me the people who helped him with the accident they caused in Sandton same applies to then I want everyone related to them.

.....

Lilly: as soon as possible.

.....

Lilly: thanks you.

She hangs up and types her codes again then give it back I find Balenciaga looking at her weirdly. We make it to the hotel and she goes to the bathroom and locks the door I sigh and go buy her and her sisters clothes and food I pass by their room and them sleeping in gowns their faces look swollen I find Biggie sitting watching them sleep.

Biggie: I got them food and drugged it with something that is going to help them sleep. They've been crying ever since we left that place I'm scared they'll be sick.

Me: okay these are clothes for them to wear when they wake up we leaving.

I walk out something is wrong here something happened there why are they like this? Lilly has been kidnapped before and she came back fine. I walk in and find Lilly sleeping in a fetal position in her gown that she is holding tightly I want to wake her up so she can eat but I decide against it shes probably tired. I watch her sleep until I see tears coming out of her eyes I look closer thinking shes awake but shes fast asleep my chest closes when I see those tears coming out I shake her lightly she shoots her eyes open.

Me: why are you crying?

I ask softly she touches her face and eyes confused she wipes them.

Lilly: can we please go home.

She says softly something is hurting my wife I can feel it and I don't like it.

Me: let's eat first.

She nods I take the food and start to feed her slowly while studying her face she looks different the twinkle in her eyes is not there it's like someone snatched her soul eventually we finish and go to the airport I look at Nono and Zizi and they look like they carrying the whole world on their shoulders they keep staring into space and wiping their tears. Lilly has been clinging on me and holding on tightly. We fly home and finally get to our house the girls asked to see juice first and we did his recovering well he should wake up any time now. When we got home Lilly has been in our bedroom playing with the kids they've missed their mother especially Nobuhle shes has been crying historically she didn't even want me I had to play a few videos of Lilly for her to calm down and right now she has been clinging on Lilly for dear life. Later they all fall asleep I take them one by one to their beds and then go back to Lilly I get

ready for bed and I find Lilly crying in her sleep again I cant say she is having a nightmare because she looks like she is sleeping peacefully but shes in that fetal position again I shake her softly she opens her eyes I wipe her tears and kiss her forehead I pull her to my chest and she holds on tightly. My heart to heavy and sore I really feel like crying.

It's been a week and Lilly is still the same she cries in her sleep clings on me like I'm going to run away she doesn't talk only answer whatever you ask and she spends all her time with the kids. Juice is up now and healing his still at the hospital but he will be at home soon. Nono and Zizi don't look okay at all their doctor was complaining about their blood pressure I accompanied them for their check up since juice cant when I ask them what's wrong they just cry painfully they had to sleep at the hospital so that they can keep an eye on them they really straining the babies.

I get home and find Lilly dressed up she is wearing a white dress that has her back bare my tattoo is

all out and she looks sexy I watch her put on her nude heels she has her make up done and her hair is a neat bun. She looks beautiful but her eyes look dark even her aura is too dark

Me: where are you going?

Lilly: warehouse.

She says and walks out.

Me: let me quickly change then we can go.

She nods and goes down I quickly go change into my all black outfit I go down and find Balenciaga looking at Lilly weirdly.

Me: let's go.

Balenciaga: date night?

Me: warehouse.

He raises his eyebrow I don't have time to explain I just walk out with Lilly and he follows we get to my warehouse and Balenciaga followed us. I just let him be when we walk in I find my gang looking tense the moment they see us they stand and greet Lilly just walks down the passage to the slaughter

room she created. I look at my gang they all shrug we follow Lilly and I walk into a room full of families on one side and men on the other I see Charilie and his gang I recognize their faces when I was looking into him they sitting in a line facing their families who are tied on the floor. The moment he sees Lilly his face changes Lilly smirks at him Balenciaga has been looking for him his so angry I can see he wants to pounce on him but I held him back he did something to my wife and her sisters and if whatever she does today help get back my Lilly then so be it.

Balenciaga: what is happening? Why is Lilly here?

Me: shhhhh and watch.

He has a scared face on I guess today he is going to be in the presence of Medusa. I watch her as she slowly walk to the table full of knives she picks up one and start playing with it in her fingers the men and Charlie are looking at their families crying since they tied on their chairs with their mouths coved and the women and child and some men they probably uncles and cousins they tied in

groups also facing Charlie and his gang. Lilly walks to one family and looks at the men who is looking at her with pleading eyes.

Balenciaga: Max..

Me: shhhhh

I hear Lilly hum ndikhokhele by Jub Jub my gang look like they are about to faint. She holds the head of one grandmother still humming but now smiling it's a evil smile I didn't know she had that this is really a side I've never seen. She runs the knife on the grandmother neck her eyes have not moved from the guy who is sitting on the opposite side I watch the guy cry she moves to a child and does the same with no hesitation she kills his whole family now he looks broken and tired of crying my gang look like they about to fall and Balenciaga looks flushed we watch her move from one family to another Charlie looks beyond broken Lilly killed his golden boys and daughter by the time she is done she has blood stains on her dress the floor is coved in blood and dead bodies I watch her pull a table.

Lilly: are the doctors here?

Some guy who I assume is one of hers nods his head I see 4 doctors come .

Doctor: their rooms are ready.

Lilly: okay bring him first.

She says pointing at Charlie he is already kicking and wiggling.

Lilly: hai hai behave why cant you behave like I did?

What's that supposed to mean? We watch them tie him on the table with his hands and legs spread. She takes a chainsaw and pulls the starter it starts to run loudly she goes to Charlie and cuts off his limbs the blood starts to splash everywhere she is wearing goggles when shes done she takes her knife and cuts off his tongue then the doctor takes him quickly this is what Blackeye does now they will live their lives unable to talk or take care of themselves they wont even commit suicide as they wont be able to do anything themselves basically they literally useless they will depend on other

people to take care of them. She moves to the rest of them when shes done she breaths out and walks out the room I follow her and she goes to my bedroom she immediately strips and goes to the shower I follow her I find her just standing there I watch as the water hits her body washing off the blood she turns and her eyes look glossy I pull her to my chest and she sobs painfully I fail to hold my tears in as I feel my heart break what did they do to my Lilly to hurt this much?

Lilly: I had sex with them.... All of them.

She says after a while of her crying I feel everything in me freeze my heart starts to pump fast.

Me: Lilly.....

I say softly looking at her. Her tears drop again.

Lilly: they didn't force me I bagged them to have sex with me they didn't rape me right....

She says looking into my eyes waiting for an answer I don't know if she is trying to convince me

but it sounds like she is trying to convince herself more. I wipe her tears and kiss her softly.

Me: let's go home.

I say on her lips and she nods her head. I get us out the shower and I quickly dry her and myself I dress her in my clothes warmly I quickly dress up and pick her up I walk out with her holding me around my neck tightly I pass my gang and they all sitting in silence with Balenciaga I know they will clean up. I pass by Macdonald's and get us food when I get home I carry her up to our room and change her into my shirt and go warm up our food I drop two sleeping pills in her drink I go back up and we eat in silence I'm trying to keep my cool for her I don't know how long I can hold it in. As soon as we done eating we get into bed and I cuddle her until I feel her breathing has changed and she is snoring softly. I keep holding her I'm trying to understand how I failed to protect the woman I love, how could I let her get raped, how can I even help her get through this? Watching her break everyday hurts me the most. I feel her moan trying to move

in my arms but I've been squeezing her I didn't even realize I let her go gently and decide to go to the gym and work out my frustrations on the punching bag I look at the clock and it's around 4am. The moment I get to the gym I go straight to the punching bag and keep throwing my punches on it I feel my anger rising with every punch I hate myself for failing my wife I hate that I have to see her tears I hate Balenciaga for bringing his enemies near my family I hate Charlie I hate his gang I hate that his still breathing I hate the universe for letting this happen to my Lilly I hate that I can not carry her pain and make her forget I hate how she thinks she was not raped simply because she said yes I hate how she is continuously trying to prove herself that she was not raped I hate the chest pains I keep having because of her pain hate everything. My rampage goes on until I realize that I have trashed my gym the mirrors are broken everything is everywhere it's a mess. I drop on my knees and cry it out I just want to make her pain go away I want to make it better I want to make everything in her world

perfect again. Eventually I pull myself together I've been in here for a while now I see the sun is already out I walk out the gym before I get to the stairs Balenciaga walks in looking all angry and ready to kill he comes to me and punch me on my jaw honestly I'm too tired to even react and I just look at him.

Balenciaga: you've turned her into a monster! What kind of husband are you?! Huh?! What the fuck was that?! You made my granddaughter kill children! Fucken children Max! Are you fucken crazy!? ...

When he realizes that I'm not about him he starts breathing heavily looking red.

Me: in your entire existence you must never walk into my house and talk to me in that tone or even think of putting your hands on me again I will forget that you Lilly grandfather and snap your neck. You know your way out.

I say calmly and softly then walk away I get to my room and Lilly is still sleeping I go take a shower and go check my kids. I find them awake I quickly

clean them up and feed them I take them to our room now I understand why Lilly wanted to be around them all the time their presence is soothing when I walk in the bed is already made and I hear the shower I chill with them on the bed and watch them blab in their language after a while Lilly walks out looking fresh dressed in my clothes boys get excited the moment they see her she smiles sweetly doing her baby talk walking towards them they giggle screaming she showers them with kisses the giggle happily she then moves to hlehle and my princess is just a happy cheerful girl. When she's done she looks at me I smile at her.

Lilly: you look tired.

Me: I hardly slept last night.

Lilly: let me take them so you can sleep.

Me: no I want to sleep with all of you here.

She just nods her head I can see that she still needs some more sleep she has eye bags and she is far from being okay. We finally manage to fall asleep

and I'm woken up by Spha crying only to realize Lilly is holding him in her fetal position crying in her sleep she is actually squeezing him I quickly shake her and forcefully remove her hands around Spha who is crying his lungs out I try to shoosh him and Lilly looks broken I think she has figured out what just happened she goes to the bathroom eventually Spha stops crying but now the other two are up I decide to take them to sis Busi so I can attend to Lilly after she takes them Juice and his wives walk in looking like zombies the last time I checked they all supposed to be at the hospital.

Zizi/Nono: hey Max

They both say softly hugging me.

Me: hey how are you feeling today?

They just shrug their shoulders looking teary I look over at Juice and he looks like his carrying the whole world on his shoulders.

Zizi: is Entle around?

Me: yeah you can go up she's in our room.

They immediately went up I go sit in the lounge with Juice I sigh out loudly this is emotionally draining.

Juice: Max what happened? Why are my wives like this?

I look at him I don't even know what or where to start.

Me: shouldn't you be in the hospital? You not fully healed.

Juice: how the hell will I stay in that bed while my wives keep breaking apart?? They've been crying ever since I woke up.

Me: let me order them food.

I take my phone I order pizza, McDonald's, Nandos and some wings Lilly hasn't had anything to eat and I know those two are probably not eating right and I need those babies to come out healthy.

Juice: Max what's going on? I can't stand seeing them like this...

He says with a shaking voice honestly I don't know what to say to him all he remembers is being shot

and waking up in a hospital bed now how do I explain the kidnapping and the rape? I just stay silent and look at him eventually the food arrives I plate for juice and I then make a big platter for the girls I go upstairs before I open the door I hear them talking.

Lilly: you two need to stop crying like this you draining the babies.

Nono: I just feel like a failure.

She says crying.

Lilly: you not a failure and you know it stop doing this to yourself please.

Zizi: Nthombientle you don't understand we are your big sisters we are ment to protect you not the other way around.

Nono: you were not supposed to sacrifice yourself like that Nthomi ka Baba I can never forgive myself for letting you take all that for us.

They all crying

Lilly: don't say that Nolwazi I know exactly what I was doing when I chose to have sex with them

instead of you. You two seem to forget that you pregnant what would have happened had you two were raped? Do you really think those babies would have made it? Don't let my sacrifice go to waste please I'm the one who had sex with them willingly to be sure that not only those babies are fine but also you two are okay and emotionally stable to bring them in this world so stop this nonsense that you two are doing you hurting them.!

She says firmly now everything makes sense she really gave herself for her sisters. I've been standing here long enough I walk in and they cuddled in my bed with Lilly in the middle their faces are red honestly I hate this. They look at me and fake smiles.

Me: I brought goodies I hope you hungry.

I say putting the food in front of them.

Lilly: so much food Max.

She says astonished.

Zizi: I'm starving I haven't had proper food in a while.

She says already shoving the pizza down her throat we look at her and she moans with her eyes close.

Me: okay I'm leaving yall.

Lilly: before you go can you please give me my laptop so we can watch movies.

Me: okay.

I go get her laptop and set it up they already stuffing their faces silently looking at me. Unfortunately we don't have a TV in our room Lilly's orders she says when we in here I must look at her and give her all my attention since we in the bedroom so she will be my tv honestly I like that concept the bedroom is the only place we able to give each other quality time and solve our problems without any distractions so a tv would definitely be a distraction we already have three of those people who run this house so I appreciate

our bedroom time. As soon as I'm done walk out and go join Juice we eat in silence watching tv.

Me: wait for them to open up to you a lot happened while you were in the hospital.

Juice: okay.

Me: don't worry I'm sure after today they will be better they just needed each other.

He nods his head I later decide to get my kids from sis Busi I take them to their mother for a while then fetch them for their nap time luckily I find all of them sleeping it's a good thing that my bed is really big enough to accommodate about 6 people I gently take my kids I know they might wake up and bother them and I don't want that my wife needs her sleep I know she had nightmares so whenever she gets time to sleep peacefully I don't want her disturbed, when I'm done I go back to juice who is now passed out on the couch I cover him with a blanket I'm sure his medication knocked him out I go to my office and try to catch up on work at least this will keep my mind off things.

LILLY

I look at myself in the mirror and I look beautiful sexy even I'm wearing a red jumpsuit it hugs my body nicely it has a open back so my tattoo is on full display I'm wearing nude heels my hair is in a neat bun I actually need to go to the salon. Today we going to some lunch get together that Amahle and Esihle are hosting all the Khumalo babies will be there actually it's just us the young one no parents we haven't been together since the kidnapping it's been weeks and I'm so thankful for Max he really stepped up for me and my sisters he made sure that we eat well and rest he was even taking care of Juice Michael also assisted him even though he doesn't know what actually happened but he could see that we not okay and I'm glad he was there for Max because he was also affected but he was too busy taking care of us to even acknowledge his pain but one night he just broke down and I knew at that moment I need to get my shit together for him when I found the gym trashed I was beyond shocked but now we all past that what helped the most is he signed me up for a

sword fighting class and got me two long swords as a gift now I feel like that guy from deadpool. We now in the month of May next month is the opening of my company I'm so excited my sisters graduated last month I made sure to throw them a baby shower/graduation party it was amazing they looked like living gods Amahle and Esihle came with their tv show which is doing so well people had so much to say about sisters married to one man but that blew over eventually but all in all everyone was just so proud of them especially my dad he can't stop bragging about his doctor girls the social media is going crazy over my brothers I don't blame them they really are a catch they were able to host the auction all I did is create accounts for the money we got which is a lot Max and my parents and most under world gangsters you name them they were all there it was one big event that made us a whole lot of money Max gave me the heads up about my parents looking into the kk table they trying to find us and they also trying to find us as individuals so I need to talk my brothers about it.

I feels Max wrap his arms around me and kiss my neck I shiver a little.

Max: you look beautiful.

Me: thank you.

I say turning around my hands go around his neck I look up at him as he licks his lips this man is beautiful.

Me: let's go.

He just kisses me I moan in his mouth.

Max: quicky?

He says on my lips making me feel his hard dick on my stomach my clit twitches I quickly pull out the kiss.

Me: we late let's go.

He ggroans I giggle he takes my hand and we walk out more like sneaking out while sis Busi is distracting the kids. We drive out to go to the estate that is booked for this lunch. When we get there a hostess leads us to where everyone is we already have a camera guy following us I honestly

don't know how Amahle and Esihle live this life of someone on your face 24/7. We finally make it to the table it's a big square table that's decorated nicely it looks elegant some of my brothers are already there we greet each other Zizi and Nono look beautiful but their bellies are really big funny story they both carrying twins and they don't get along like they always fighting over anything and everything in some occasions they even wanted to get physical with each other juicy and I are always playing referee between them they only get along for two minutes they frustrate Juicy and it's funny to watch. I settle next to Nono Max sits next to me my eyes move to Michael who is sitting next to Palesa and Lerato remember them? Lerato the slay queen who lived next door at my apartment and Palesa Amus baby mama? They both looking at me like they seeing ghosts I roll my eyes and take some snacks that's on table. I wonder where Michael gets them they having their own conversation with Ndu included I can see he is already charming Palesa my eyes find Nosipho remember her? Sis Busis daughter she's sitting

next to Nkosi and Lu she looks down when she finds my eyes on her she's so scared of me it's not funny anymore I think she and Nkosi have a thing going on which I honestly have no problem with they both adults so its whatever I see Mbali busy taking pictures and Kuhle glued on his phone Mbali has changed but we will get to that later. I'm busy looking at everyone wondering how far we have come not so long ago I was trying to convince my mom that I'm moving to job and now here we are all grown up living our lives it's so weird. Max brings me back by kissing my cheek I smile.

Max: come back to us you've been lost in your head since we got here.

Me: yeah I'm sorry about that.

Max: you okay?

He asks looking at me more like analyzing my face.

Me: im perfect just getting hungry.

Max: yes we just waiting for Siya I think his late.

Me: I wonder why his never late.

Thando: Enhle where are your 10kg kids?

My month hangs immediately.

Sbu: don't act surprised we all know here that your fat kids weigh 10kg each.

I gasp holding my chest. Why are they coming for my kids?

Lu: 10kg of maize meal.

They laugh.

Nkosi: one lucky star.

Luyanda: one Ace.

Ndu: one Mabele

They bust out laughing. The way I'm so hurt right now.

Me: why are you body shaming my babies?

Zizi: oh...Nthombi ka baba we not body shaming them they are cute chubby babies.

Amahle: honestly I blame Max it's his fault that they are like this.

She's actually right Max and Michael were fat babies too that's why when i was freaking out he

was relaxed until his mom showed me his pictures of when he was a baby it was so funny.

Max: I will kick your ass wena.

Sbu: amahle tell me why do you say that.

Max: hai voetsek you don't need to know that.

Esihle: let me show you.

She says pressing her phone.

Max: Esihle...

he says in a warning tone. I know my brothers will always laugh at him if they see a picture of Max when he was a baby which I suspect it's on Esihles phone.

Sbu: Don't worry Esihle he won't do anything to you let me see.

She passes the phones hesitantly the moment Sbu sees it he busts out laughing and passes the phone I giggle I really can't help myself his laugh is loud and contagious Max smacks my thigh.

Me: ahhhhhh.....what??

I say looking at him he looks so serious which makes everything even more funny. He keeps looking at me I just laugh by now everyone is laughing and passing the phone.

Max: tonight I want you to show me what exactly are you laughing at.

He whispered in my ear I stopped laughing immediately I look at him he has a stupid smirk on his face. We haven't been intimate since the whole kidnapping incident so I don't know if I'm excited or nervous but we will see. I get distracted when I see Siya walk in with another guy, everyone is still laughing and talking about whatever I look at them again Siya is in Jean's and black tshirt his muscles are flexing as he walks he is hold the other guys hand his cute guy suddenly its quiet and we all looking at them, they finally make it to the table he pulls out the chair opposite me the guy thanks him and sits he sits next to him opposite Max. My eyes are stuck on this cute guy well he is dressed in shorts and a shirt that has two buttons open I see a chain on his chest and some tattoos he is

caramel skin toned no facial hair nice clean face with a killer jawline,he has long black thick dreadlocks they look so beautiful and clean and rich he has them braided they really look nice his really cute. He keeps glancing at everyone and looking down shyly he looks like a soccer player a cute soccer player.

Someone clears their throat we all snap out of it I blink again the guy looks at me I try to smile because he now looks uncomfortable.

Nono: hey Siya you late and I'm hungry.

She breaks the ice.

Siya:so why don't you eat?

Siya reminds me so much of my dad he even sounds like him.

Zizi: don't bore us Siya you know we have to wait for everyone before we eat.

I can tell she is already annoyed. Siya just shrugs his shoulders.

Siya: anyway this is Lifa my boyfriend.

He says concentrating on his phone typing whatever like he didn't just drop a bomb on us poor Lifa nudges him with his elbow Siya looks at him and smiles sweetly.

Siya: Babe this is my family I don't know those two though.

He says pointing at Palesa and Lerato who look like wet chickens. I'm just looking at and Siya and Lifa trying to figure out when did this happen.

Kuhle: why don't we know that you gay Siyanda?

He doesn't sound pleased.

Siya: you never asked.

Luyanda: that is not the point Siyanda!

Lu: you know out of all the Khumalo babies I expected more from you.

Okay this is not the reaction I expected from my siblings.

Zizi: come on guys Siya being gay shouldn't be problem.

Nkosi: that is not the point Zizi.

Nono: then why are you all mad?

Kuhle: we mad because he never told us from day one. Why didn't he tell us when he realized that his gay?

Zizi: it still doesn't make a difference.

Sbu: it does man!

He says banging the table.

Ndu: Siyanda are you trying to tell us that all this time you've been living a double life?

Siya looks down ashamed.

Kuhle: Siyanda have we ever given you the impression that we will judge you or disown you just because you gay?

He asks looking hurt okay now I see what's the problem.

Ndu: Siyanda Kuhle asked you a question.

Siya: no you've never.

Lu: then why did you hide you who you are from us Siyanda? Are we bad brothers?

I hear Zizi sniffing next to me everyone is now emotional.

Siya: I'm sorry it was never my intentions to hurt you I was just scared.

He says still looking down.

Luyanda: Siya we have seen you play big brother for all of us you always there whenever we need you you always protect us but most importantly you've taught us the importance of closeness amongst us Khumalo babies and transparency we always support each other no matter what. Why didn't you let be there for you? You can not be strong alone honestly we don't care that you gay I'm happy that you finally getting asswait or are you giving ass?? You know what don't answer that (we giggle) I don't need to know that all we saying is you should have told us about your sexuality a long time ago it would've been nice travelling that journey with you.

We all remain silent for a moment we all know that Siya is like our second dad so I think his so used to being the strongest that he doesn't realize that we

all here for him he doesn't need to play hero all the time. Eventually we finally eat over a nice conversation well Lifa is a lawyer graduated last year he doesn't look or sound like your typical gay guys if you didn't know him you would think his a straight guy that's more in touch with his feminine side you can tell that his really clean and organized his personality is more chilled but he has this heavy demeanor I think it's a lawyer thing him and Siya look like a power couple Siya studied logistics and he opened his own company which is growing nicely so they really suite each other even their personalities Lifa is a relaxed guy but very funny especially when his feminine side shows.

Right now I'm chilling with Kuhle we ditched everyone and we found this other couch it's a cute lounge actually we lying together im on his chest and he has his arms around me we chilling in silence I miss this. The door opens I turn and its Max.

Max: when can I have my wife back?

Kuhle: when I'm done with her.

Max: um...hurry I feel lonely without her.

I giggle he walks out closing the door.

Kuhle: he can't function without you.

Me: I can't breathe without him.

I sighs and stay silent something is bothering him.

Me: talk to me.

Kuhle: where do I even start Nthombi ka Baba?

Me: from the beginning.

Kuhle;I don't know where that is.

Me: is it Mbali?

Kuhle: is it that obvious?

I sigh.

Me: she has changed.

Kuhle: so much Nthombi ka Baba I don't know what or how it happened.

Well Mbali is now a full blown slay queen she has new friends, always vacating somewhere her Instagram used to filled with the things she loves and her job and hobbies but now its location clubs

clothes what's in what's not its just a lot, her attitude is the worst ever since we came back from the girls trip she is different even during the baby shower she kept making nasty comments which we chose to ignore because we just wanted to celebrate my sisters she even left early you could tell that she didn't want to be there. Juicy told me that she had a fall out with Zizi and Nono they already in bad terms as she has been giving me a weird vibe but I've been ignoring her.

Me: but you love her Kuhle.

Kuhle: yes I do but that's not enough I'm no longer happy everything is about her I keep giving and she keeps taking I moved my life to KZN for her I buy her everything and anything she wants which I don't mind but she never makes time for me if she's not going to a vacation with her new friends she's clubbing I tried talking to her but she just disregards my feelings I'm tired Nthombenhle.

I feel my heart beat changing I'm going to strangle that girl I swear I don't care if she changed and shit but she will not make my brother a fool.

Kuhle: the worst part is that she is the one who wanted to get married in the first place I went with the idea because I really do love her but I don't think we ready for marriage she keeps competing with you in everything its annoying.

I look up at him.

Me: what do you mean?

Kuhle: she wants what you have and I can't give her that. Now she complains that I give you more attention than her she knows how close I am to you but that seems to be a problem now so I've decided to call of the engagement one thing I know is that I will always choose you over and over again.

I feel a lump on my throat not once has Max made me feel the need to choose between him and my family and I would never expect him to do the same for me too. Ever since I got married Kuhle and Baba started to give me space we don't talk over the phone everyday or go out regularly like before because they understand I'm now a wife and a mother but I try to make time for them Max

also understands he never complains so what is Mbali trying to do. We hear the door open we look over and its Mbali I immediately feel myself boil I try to get off Kuhle but he tightens his grip around me.

Mbali: I've been looking for you.

Kuhle: im busy right now.

Mbali: I don't see you doing anything.

I raise my eyebrow.

Kuhle: can you please close the door on your way out.

Mbali: mxm.

She bangs the door walking out I swear im going to wipe the floor with this girl. I chill with Kuhle for a few minutes then we go join others we find them playing games Palesa, Lerato and Mbali are sitting together taking pictures and doing whatever I see Nono and Zizi sitting opposite each other with their arms folded on their chests and pouted lips I nudge Nthando since I'm standing next to him.

Me: and those two?

Nthando: Juice put them on time out they where at it again.

I giggle I look over everyone is busy running around Amahle and Ndu aare carrying big balls those gym balls there is too much shouting and running its confusing.

Me: what are they playing?

Nthando: I don't know they made that game up and it has stupid rules.

I decide to go join them the moment they see me Ndu comes running towards me with his mouth full of something he spits it out and grabs me everything is happening fast.

Ndu: Nthombenhle is in my team!

He shouts with me over his shoulder.

Luyanda: you crazy I picked her first so she's in my team!

They all start screaming at each other about which team I'm in and Ndu refuses to let me down.

Eventually they allow me to be in Ndus team it's not like they had a choice. Well Nthando was right this is a stupid game honestly. Well one person in the team has to carry the big ball and try to run across trying to get through the opposite team well two people in the team are blind folded two have to have water in their mouth they can not swallow or spit it out the other two have to have to tie their ankles together so we literally attached together and one person has to piggyback one person so in your team yall choose who does what the rule is you can not use your hands to stop the one with the ball to get to the other side and you can not use your hands to fight off the opposite team The one who has to carry the big ball has to be blind folded with water in their mouth and their ankles tied together so they basically have to hop to the other side and relay on the team members to help them to the other side and you only allowed to tell them which direction to take after we have spin them around so that they dizzy. This is the most stupidest game I've ever played. Well my ankle is tied with Ndu that was a bad idea

because he literally dragged me everywhere because his long legs are too fast for me but anyway it was funny and loud I loved every minute of it . The slay queens disappeared and we didn't care the grumpy pregnant twins joined they were the funniest them trying to run with water filled in their mouths was epic all in all this lunch which turned into dinner was really nice Lifa and Nosipho also enjoyed themselves.

FEW MONTHS LATER

SOMEWHERE

Person 1...: come on I've been looking for someone to help me with this you my best option.

Person 2...: do you know or understand what you asking me?

Person 1...: look I know what I'm asking is dangerous if I could do this alone I would but I can't.

Person 2.....: what you asking for is not dangerous its death itself. Look I do not understand why you want Max so much but I strongly suggest you run

far away from him you really don't want to mess with him.

Person 3.....: why is everyone so afraid of him??
What's the worst he can do?

Person 2.....: if you've meet people who are scared of him it should tell you to play far from Max. Quick question what is it that you both benefit from killing his kids?

Person 1: well I benefit Max and be his queen and he gets the stupid wife.

Person 3:.... She's not stupid!

Person 2 laughs loudly.

Person 2....: you two really don't know what you up against do you? You two are so stupid for fuck sakes Max probably knows about your plan already.

Person 3...: well if he did know he would've killed us already or something so jokes on him.

Person 2 laughs again.

Person2...: Max doesn't just kill people well he does kill but his not stupid and impulsive he probably has bigger plans for you.

Person 1....: I've dealt with much more dangerous men Max doesn't scare me at all.

Person 2.....: okay I heard you both now please leave my place.

Person1.....: so you not going help us?

Person 2.....: are you crazy? Do I look crazy to you? Did you not hear me warning you or you just plain stupid?

Person 3...: you know wwhat keep your help we will not bag you fucking coward scared of Max like his a god.

Person 2...: get the fuck out of my house.

MAX

Well its official Lilly is a house wife and I'm loving every minute of it her launch went well it was actually beautiful better than I expected her stupid ex didn't take it well that Lilly owns Numbers and his been working for her all along so he quit luckily

she was able to get someone to fill his place and she did work for a few months once everything was settled she left it under a lady who runs it and sends her reports. The kids turned 1 I thought lilly was going to throw a party for them but she said she will do that when they turn 5 so we only got them cake and took pictures it was nice we even went to a family vacation all in all I've been enjoying myself yes me and Lilly fight here and there nothing major just small arguments nothing a good conversation and make up sex can't fix. Well the twins finally gave birth in the same week Nono birth two girls and Zizi birth two boys they so cute with curly hair and blue eyes but they look like juice. Juice decided that its smart to buy his nextdoor neighbors houses and build one big house when he told me that his wives want a bigger house since now they have 4 extra people which is reasonable I thought he was going to buy them a house somewhere but he said he is not leaving soweto so as I speak they now staying in one of Owamis properties while he broke down 6 houses and rebuilding one big house it should be

done in 6 months the wives were annoyed at first but now they happy since they both very involved in the design of the house I guess they've now accepted that their lives are in Soweto. Mbali and khuhle are officially over Mabli is living her life with her new friends Juice said he will deal with her later his still concentrating on his babies and wives right now Kuhle is living his single life as a player his a big heartbreaker right now Nthando and Nosipho are a couple and are happy Nosipho apologized to me and Lilly and we all cool now Michael moved to my old bachelor pad but his always here eating here I honestly see no difference it's like he still lives here, he took over dads companies since he retired he bought my sister a house and they still have their Show going on finally they both decided to open a modeling agency and since they famous they're slowly making they way up honestly I'm more relived than anything but also proud that they doing something with their lives than just wasting money. After that get together lunch people had so

much to say about Lilly's tattoo of me and I don't care she loves showing it off and I love it.

I just finished packing up I'm going back home after a long day from meeting after meeting right now I just want to drown in my Lilly's affection. Drive back home the traffic is annoying as hell the moment I get home I park in the garage and walk in as usual I expect to be welcomed by the aroma of cooked food and my princess's screams but not today. When I get to the lounge I find Lilly walking around carrying Hlehle who is moaning the moment she sees me she comes looking teary.

Me: hey what's wrong?

Lilly: she has flu after you left for work when I went to check her she was burning up so I took her to the doctor they gave her an injection and some syrup.

Me: why didn't you tell me? I could've came back.

My wife looks like a mess right now you can tell she is not taking this well it's like she is about to breakdown at any moment.

Lilly: I'm sorry my mind has been all over the place since morning.

I take off my jacket and tie I take Hlehle from her she needs as break.

Me: did you eat?

She sighs looking at Hlehle who has red nose and cheeks her little lips tremble I know she is about to cry shame my baby girl.

Lilly: how will I eat when she doesnt even want to eat? Let me get you her bottle.

She says walking away I go sit down trying to shush her she's not crying she's just moaning and sneezing her snorts just splash all over my shirt and her face then goes back to moaning she's a drama queen this one. Lilly comes back she puts a clothe over my chest and wipes Hlehle who tries to fight her but ends up crying she tries to sneeze again and she chokes on her snort she coughs as soon as she is done she goes back to crying I look up and find Lilly crying too now my girls are both crying I pull her she sits on my lap and cry on my

shoulder while I have Hlehle crying on my chest, eventually they both cool down and now Hlehle has hiccups.

Me: go take a bath I'll feed and put her to sleep.

I whisper to Lilly she immediately stands and comes back with her syrup and she gives me instructions on how to use it when she is done drinking her milk. I start to feed her she has her eyes on me I don't like I seeing her sick I miss my loud princess. I see sis Busi walk down the stairs I ask her where are my boys I havent seen them since morning and they where sleeping she tells me she just put them to sleep, as soon as this one falls asleep I go put her in her crib today ashes sleeping in our room she's even breathing heavy since her nose is blocked. When I get to our room Lilly is still in the bathroom so I order us pizza. I check the boys and find them cuddling together these two never want to separate we tried and it never worked they cried the whole night so never again. The pizza finally arrived we eat in our

bedroom Lilly doesn't want to leave Hlehles side she keeps checking her every 5 minutes.

Me: let my baby sleep peacefully or you will wake her up.

Lilly: I just hate it when she's like this.

Me: where does she even get the flu ?

Lilly: yesterday she was playing in the freezer I don't even know how she opened the door by the time I found her she was really cold.

Me: your child is naughty why can't she be like the boys and chill in one place?

Lilly: she's your princess so...

Me: she's just always busy and all over the house and her screaming God.

She chuckles

Lilly: at least my windows and glasses are taking a break from all her screaming.

Me: come here I want to hold you I miss you.

She blushes and comes quickly she lays on my chest informing me about how the Khumalo

babies are going to come clean to their parents about the underworld identities they still like being behind the scenes so whatever they do I'm just here for support. I listen to her telling me about her stories and whatever she watches when I'm not here she's just blabbing and I'm turned on since she's wearing my t shirt it means easy access I slip my hand between her thighs and cup her pinky she's not wearing any underwear just perfect she gasps I kiss her neck I hear her breathing changing I start to play with her wet pussy lips and clit now that her piercing has healed it's fun I like it now. I slip my finger in her whole she jerks up and throw her head back moaning out loud I move my free hand under her shirt and squeeze her boob while I finger her she holds my hand and pull it out its dripping wet she licks it clean which turns me on even more she flips over and sits facing me with her legs on my sides I help her take off her shirt I run my hands on her body she has stretch marks on her stomach and around her hips and ass I love them so much. I feel her hand move from my abdomen down to

my underwear I look back at her face and find her eyes staring at me with lust she has her lips slightly open next thing I feel her soft hand grab my dick I bit my lip trying to resist my groan she slowly start moving to up and down it jerks in her hand she moves down to my balls and gives them a soft squeeze I groan as I feel my blood rush she let's them go and comes closer to my face I feel her breath on my face I want to kiss her but she teases me by licking my lips I move both my hands to her ass and pull her closer to my body but she pushes her ass down than I feel her pinky welcome me in she slowly sits I get goosebumps as her walls try to accommodate me my eyes are still locked with hers they follow her and she moves down I squeeze her ass she feels too hot and too tight before I know it she has my whole dick inside her she breaths out and gently start to kiss me she starts to move back and forth I wrap both my arms around her small waist and deepen the kiss she still moves her waist slowly in circles I pull out the kiss demn she's making me lose my breath she throws her head back as she starts to move her

waist faster I trace wet kisses from her neck down to her nipples I feel her walls close in I play with her clit she moans out my name and digs her nails on my shoulders before I know it she starts to squirt her body shakes I quickly pull her up by her waist I put her on her knees with her hands on the headboard she arches her back I give her two quick spanks she squirms I ram into her she feels so wet I groan out and start to thrust her slowly I give her a few slow strokes then I hear Hlehle sneeze I close my eyes praying she doesn't wake up not now Lilly throws her ass back I meet her thrust I grab her hair and move faster she screams covering her mouth I hear Hlehle moan shit she's awake, I feel my build up I thrust faster Lilly is close next thing I hear Hlehle scream out crying I give two more thrust Lilly moans out her orgasm I bust inside her before I could catch my breath Lilly jumps up and goes to Hlehle. Fuck couldn't she wake up like 3 hours later I groan frustrated, I get off the bed and go to the bathroom to clean myself up and take a wet towel and go back to Lilly I find her standing there calming

down Hlehle who is no longer crying but just moaning I stand behind Lilly I gently slap her inner thigh.

Me: open up.

She's moves her leg aside I wipe her from her knees since she was dripping I move up to her minky then slip my finger inside her, her ass is staring at me I perk it and give it a soft bite I just want to fuck all night but I don't see that happening today.

Lilly: Max...

She whispers

Me...uhmmmmmm....

I pull out my finger and stand back up I wrap my hands around her they land on hers since she's carrying Hlehle who looks up at me with her pouted lips I kiss Lilly's shoulder.

Me: let me take her.

She turns around and gives her to me she immediately lays her head on my chest we get into

bed with her I hope she falls asleep now I have unfinished business with her mother.

Its Friday morning Lilly wakes me up I know it's time to get ready for work I immediately go shower and get ready I told Lilly to get the boys ready I'm taking them to work with me at least she will have to deal with Hlehle only who is back to her loud self shes been up looking at us going up and down it's weird that she is so quiet its unlike her as soon as I'm done I take her from the her crib and kiss her cheeks she smiles widely and lays her head on my shoulder I get down and she is feeding the boys I quickly kiss her and go sit down and eat my breakfast well more like trying because this one keeps throwing her small fingers in my food now my eggs and everything is a mess and shoving my eggs in her mouth, anyway me and my boys finally leave they dressed in and black and white Adidas tracksuit I can tell they excited they hardly leave the house and when they do its heaven for them their eyes are wide open looking out the window and they keep making their baby noises and talking gibberish. Eventually I get to work we

walk in well they refused that I pick them up so I'm walking at their pace everyone keeps looking at them smitten I don't blame them my chubby boys are very cute with their mothers blue eyes and curly hair the problem is my boys don't like people that much they never smile at people all they do is I stare at them and look away well they get from me and Lilly has a intense look and they took that from her too the only friendly person we have is Hlehle but that one you can never take her places she makes too much noise the last time I came with her I had a small meeting with her on my lap she was playing on my tablet when suddenly she started to hit the screen and she let out this scream I hate so much it comes from her throat and it sounds exactly like a whistle I literally put my hand over her mouth than she started giggling I swear everyone was traumatized since then I know taking her somewhere is just risky. Anyway since its Friday its half day today so these two are playing on the floor with their toys more like banging them on the floor I lift my head up and look at them they immediately stop and look at me

these two are sometimes creepy they are the same in every aspect not only do I find it difficult to identify them but their personalities are also the same their actions always happen at the same time even when they laugh they always in sync it's very creepy I tell you I move my eyes back to my laptop I get interrupted when my phone rings.

Me: Lilly?

I answer softly.

Her: hey I'm sorry to disturb you...

Me: you can never disturb me, you miss me already?

She giggles.

Her: not really

Me: ouch...

I say holding my chest she giggles again I swear everytime she giggles I get butterflies.

Her: come home so I can nurse your fragile heart.

Me: don't tempt me please.

Her: anyway I'm calling to tell you that you have a visitor.

I sit up straight.

Me: a visitor?

Her: yes his weird I don't even know how he got past security.

I frown .

Me: did he say his name?

Her: yeah... uhmmm he said his Garfield

I chuckle and rest back on my chair.

Her: I'm glad you find this amusing I strongly suggest you come back home before I snap his neck I don't like him.

She says then hangs up I laugh out loud what the fuck is Garfield doing at my house?? I know every time he appears his either up to no good or something is cooking the last time I saw him was 5 years ago he had faked his death well he always fakes his death I even lost count how many times they declared him dead people have tried killing

him multiple times but he always pops up randomly his like a cat with 9 lives hence his Garfield I actually miss him and he does have a loud mouth his a real chatterbox I'm not surprised that Lilly doesn't like him. I quickly pack up and take my boys and go home.

The moment I walk through the door we welcomed by Hlehle screaming jesus this child's voice then there is another scream it's a Male voice I see Lilly walking down the stairs shes wearing grey leggings and a tight white vest her braids are in a messy bun she looks beautiful I think I'm blushing the boys start to wiggle in my arms I put them down they walk to hug Lilly's legs the moment she gets to me I pull her in my arms and kiss her I hear another scream I pull out the kiss.

Me: for fuck sakes!

Lilly: they've been at it for about 15 minutes now I swear my head is going to blow.

I walk to the lounge I find Garfield sitting on the couch facing Hlehle who is sitting on the floor facing him you can tell she is having the time of her

life her face is full of smiles and giggles she pulls out her whistle scream Garfield joins her and start to whistle I swear one of these good days my windows are going to break.

Me: hey!...hay!...hey!...

I say clapping my hands that gets their attention they both look at me Hlehle has a blank look and this idiot is grinning he immediately stands to give me a man hug Hlehle screams again we both turn to look at her and she smiles sweetly I chuckle shaking my head this child is too much Garfield goes to pick her up she squeals happily.

Garfield: I think I've found my wife.

He says kissing her cheeks.

Me: clearly you've had enough of living.

I say trying to take Hlehle from him she clings on him and refuses to come to me Garfield laughs at me mxm.

Me: keep her I'm tired of her noise.

Hlehle looks at me with her eyes popped it's like she can hear me I squint my eye at her maybe she can hear me for real.

Me: I'm kidding my Princess.

She smiles at me sweetly.

Garfield: I don't know what's more creepy between her understanding you or you being married with kids.

He says looking at her weirdly speaking of kids my boys walk in and both give Garfield their death stare with frowns on their faces he also frowns looking at them.

Garfield: I don't like you two.

He says pointing at them Nhlaka throws his toy car at him he ducks and looks at them shocked I bust out laughing I think they scared him a bit they walk to their corner and start playing together he is just looking at them.

Garfield: what the fuck was that??

I shrug chuckling.

Garfield: fucking little gangsters.

Hlehle slaps him hard he looks at her shocked then she giggles.

Me: don't call her brothers names she doesn't like it.

Garfield: demn that was a fire slap.

He says rubbing his cheek Hlehle wiggles out of his hold and goes to join her brothers. We chill catching up while he explains what his been up to since he dried in a bombing in the DRC until Lilly calls us for dinner. We eat over a small conversation more like me listening to endless stories Garfield has Lilly is just starting at him and eating her food while feeding the kids later she shows him where he will sleep while I help bath the kids when she comes back she cleans the mess we made and we put them to sleep the moment we get to our room she can't keep her hands of me we started in the shower then moved to the wall then her wardrobe then the bed until we pass out.

I'm woken up by noise I hear the kids giggling and running Lilly is not in bed I must've been really tired because I didn't feel Lilly leave the bed like I normally do, anyway I quickly get up and go shower my muscles feel tight I need Lilly's back massage even my neck feels tense. Today I need to find out why is Garfield here I hope his not running away from someone and using me as a hideout because that will piss me off my wife and kids are here and I don't want them dodging bullets because of him when I manage to keep these fuckers away from my family I don't need a Balenciaga situation happening again, speaking of him well since our encounter he left for USA and his officially dating sis Busi shes always blushing on the phone but I know soon she will leave us and move with Balenciaga it's just a metter of time his been keeping his distance especially from me but he still calls Lilly I didn't tell her about his outburst beside I had my hands full. Soon as im done showing I lotion and get dressed then fix the bed I go downstairs and find Lilly in the kitchen dishing

out breakfast I go wrap my arms around her and kiss her neck.

Lilly: morning.

Me: you left me alone.

Lilly: you looked tired and the kids were up I knew they will make noise and wake you up.

Me: uhmmm.

I say nibbling on her neck she pushes me back with her ass .

Lilly: stop it I'm trying to finish.

I was about to say something when the kids come in the kitchen running with Garfield behind them they trip and fall on top of each other Garfield immediately freezes we look at them silently they also silence I'm praying no one cries they stand up then Hlehle looks at Garfield then start giggling and running again the boys follow behind Garfield chuckles and starts running behind them the screaming starts shame my chubby babies are going through cardio soon they will be tired and breathing heavy.

Lilly: why is your stranger friend here Max?

I ssigh.

Me: I'm sure he will tell me today I already know his not coming with good news.

Lilly: uhmmm...let's go eat.

She says removing herself from me eventually we have our breakfast as soon as the kids are done eating they pass out in the lounge watching their cartoons I knew Garfield is going to drain their energy but when they wake up it will be back to running and screaming. I'm now in my study with Garfield lilly decided to go see her sisters so I'm kinda on babysitting duty until she comes back at least sis Busi is around on Monday we flying to Capetown they want to inform their parents about their underworld identities but for now let me find out why this one is here.

Me: so are you going to tell me why are you are here?

He looks at me and puts the picture frame of my kids down.

Him: why are your kids fat? Actually what does your hot wife feed you? You look much bigger than before.

I look at him.

Me: are you checking out my wife?

I ask him with a frown.

Him: well not really but everyone can see that she's hot with the capital H..

I chuckle

Me: Garfield why are you here?

He looks at me.

Him: someone is after you well more like after your family.

I sit up straight and look at him to continue.

Him: well according to my knowledge the chubby kids have to go and you have to fall in love with someone else same as your sexy wife.

I look at him I hate that he looks at Lilly but I'll address that later for now I want to know who is trying to test me.

Me; what do you mean the chubby kids have to go?

Him: does your wife have sisters that look like her?

Me: Garfield...

Him: fine fine...well the plan is to kill them make it seem like its your fault then sexy mommy leaves you and finds a shoulder to cry on and you find a comfort between someone's boobs.

I frown why are people so annoying??

Him: and I'm sure you forgot about the gala dinner right.

He says with his eyebrow raised and his right I totally forgot about that.

Me: shit that totally slipped my mind.

He shakes his head disapproving.

Him: it's in two weeks time why do I feel like you slacking? Is your sexy wife making you soft?

Me: it's just ive been dealing with a lot this side.

This really slipped my mind and this side I have to travel to Capetown we will just have to go from Capetown then.

Me: well looks like you going have to go to England since I have to take care of something important in Capetown then my wife and I will meet you there....

He cuts me off

Him: your wife?? What do mean? you coming with your wife?

Me: it's time she knows about that side of my life.

His eyes pop

Him: tell me you kidding she's a house wife she will definitely leave your ass but that's non of my business its just you can never trust her she can turn on you we don't trust bitches and you know that what the fuck is wrong with you??that bitch is making you weak!

I raise my eyebrow looking at him he quickly looks down.

Me: why does it seem like you forget who you talking to Garfield? Are we mates? Never in your entire existence call my wife names or talk bullshit

about her I will give you a purpose to live don't annoy me.

His already shaking in fear see Garfield doesn't really work for me he just feels indebted to me because I've saved him more times than I should have ive told him many times that he doesn't need to do all these things for me but I guess I'm just talking to myself so I just pay him for his services whenever I see him like now and it's always in cash.

Him: I'm sorry it will never happen again.

He says looking down we stay silent for a while.

Me: you know what you need to do I'll call Brain he will be expecting you with those two I'll see when I get there.

He nods his head and stand to leave.

Me: Garfield?

He turns to look at me.

Me: stay away from my wife if you see her take the opposite direction.

He nods than walks out. I sit back and sigh his actually right about Lilly finding out about this other side of me honestly I would've told her a long time ago but I had to study her first and if she will be able to handle it and I think she will but it wont be easy I know there is a high possibility that she will look at me differently. Anyone who looks at Lilly might judge her since she has killed children with no remorse whatsoever but truth everyone has a devil in them all you need is a push or just open that door and Lilly opened that door when I got shot with her first kill once a killer always a killer she may not do it every day just don't get on her wrong side, one thing I know is when she starts killing there's no stopping her once she decides that it's time for you to die then you die. I may not kill kids or be quick to kill people but I know I'm far worse than her I just give people purpose to live anyone who knows the really me fears me more than death I hope Lilly still see me as her Max after this.

LILLY

We just stepped out of the airport and the first thing I smell is the ocean I've missed Capetown the air is really refreshing I see Lu speaking on the phone I'm sure his here to get us the moment he sees us he smiles and hangs up I'm pushing the pram with my babies same as Nono juice and Max are behind us with the luggage Zizi is the first to throw herself on him he catches her and spin her around eventually he came to greet us he helps us strap the kids in the car God I love my sisters kids they are the cutest and quiet I'm looking at them sleeping with their lips pouted at least Hlehle is also sleeping my boys just have their eyes popped out and looking around I gave them their toys and they sucking them they probably hungry I'll feed them when I get home. The moment we get home my brothers literally take the babies from us they don't even care about us mxm I quickly give them bottles so that they can feed them they even woke up the others it's a miracle Hlehle is not grumpy she hates being woken up but shes just enjoying herself. Anyway we find our parents and Baba there I immediately go sit on top of him he

showers me with kisses I swear I feel like Hlehle I can't stop giggling I missed him so much even though we had a date two weeks back I look over to my dad and both Zizi and Nono and clinging on him happily.

Owami: I also exist you know I'm what you call your mother.

Daddy: jealousy doesn't suit you Owami.

She just looks at him we all laugh at her.

Owami: let me go look for my grandkids people who love me.

Zizi: Goodluck taking them from your sons.

She just walks away pouting. My mom is being dramatic I look around for Max and I don't see him I'm sure he is enjoying himself with my brothers I don't know why they like hogging on him his my husband not our husband but every time they are around I have to fight them to get his attention anyway we continue chilling until we hear cheering from the other side.

Nono : I can bet my life that they have a bet going on.

Zizi: let's go check it out.

Daddy: can't your brothers just relax and stop competing on nonsense.

We follow each other with my dad mumbling complaints. When we get to the pool side we find them shirtless cheering on Nkosi who is doing push ups with my boys on his back they giggling enjoying the ride my mom is carrying one of my sisters baby and has a timer on her hand busy counting down for him, I'm not surprised my mom is a competitive freak I go take one of my sisters son this one his name is Langalihle I go sit on one of the garden chairs not far from all that is going on I put him on my lap facing me my hands are balancing his head and neck we both staring at each other.

Me: you look so much like your dad.

He gives me a toothless smile this is cute.

Me: when are you getting your teeth?

He just blinks his pretty ocean blue eyes. I feel someone sit next to me its Max and his holding a cute Mbaliyothando who is cuddled on his chest.

Max: why are you two hiding here?

Me: we like our peace and quiet and we not hiding.

I say still looking at Lihle who now has a serious face his eyes keep moving between me and Max.

Max: they cute babies aren't they?

Me: definitely and they smell nice.

I say sniffing Lihle who decides to fart I quickly move my face away from him he looks at me and giggles I'm just shocked this child.

Me: he just farted in my face.

Max chuckles making some baby talk with Mbali I look at him weirdly he is just as weird with his deep voices sounding like Mendoza I frown until this one farts again I look at him and his face is slowly turning pink okay what is happening??.

Me: Max... what's going on?

He looks at us and Lihle pouts his lips and shouting his eyes tightly his face keeps turning even more red.

Max: why is his face like that?

Me: I don't know...

For a moment I think his about to have a seizure but not until I feel bubbles popping on my lap...wait this child is taking a shit on me. I feel his little body tense up and a soft sound comes out of his pouted lips with more bubbles popping.

Me: Max his taking a shit on me.

He busts out laughing while I look at this one who is literally taking a shit on top of me his lips are still pouted and face is red and eyes closed Max keeps looking at him and laughing I've never seen a child take a shit I only know the mess that happens after this. After what feels like forever his blinking and his body is relaxing his face is turning back to his skin tone then he smiles Max is just amused and I'm traumatized I need a strong drink I stand and leave Max who is still laughing at me I go to my dad

who is standing holding his waist looking at his son's still doing whatever they ddoing.

Me: Daddy please hold here I'll be back.

I say handing over Lihle and I walk away fast until I hear him calling me loudly I giggle and run away I have zero intentions of changing any nappy while I'm here even my kids they will make a plan I'm not touching any shit not after what I went through.

I get to the rooftop and find Khuhle chilling smoking a joint I knew I'd find him here I sit next to him and lay my head on his shoulder we sit in silence for about an hour.

Kuhle: I'm relocating to jozi.

I feel a smile creep on my face oh yes this has been my wish for a while I actually wish all my brothers would move there but they happy here so I will slowly convince them one by one.

Me: took you long enough

He chuckles we chill until it's dark and later go back when we walk in my mom and sisters are

dishing out food perfect timing I'm so hungry everyone is chilling in the lounge since the couches can't accommodate everyone some are chilling on the floor I go squeezing myself between Max's legs my sisters bring food to us one by one we eat quietly watching some horror movie we going to have the meeting tomorrow when Balenciaga is here honestly I'm not sure about letting him in we don't know him well a part of me questions his loyalty even though he has never given me a reason to question it but since everyone voted that we let him in too since he was already working with our parents to find us it's only fair plus his family. After the movies we watch another one until I pass out this is why I love being home I forget about my kids I know my mom will take care of them I also become a baby here I know I'm going sleep peaceful without waking up at night to attend to those little humans.

I wake up in my bed the house is noisy you can tell it's full house there is crying, screaming, shouting, laughing, talking some banging sound I feel a headache already coming I decide to wake up and

go bath and relax in the bathtub I wonder where is Max I miss him. Eventually I finish and go out I find everyone eating breakfast I join in everyone is having their own conversation my mom and Baba are sitting opposite me and Max and dad is at the head of the table Max keeps whispering in my ear and his getting me horny.

Me: Max stop.

I say softly and his smirking at me because he knows what his doing, I feel his hand brush my thigh I quickly close them.

Max: I miss you.

He says in my ear whispering and blows air softly I get goosebumps all over my body I don't know why his doing this because I know he will refuse to give me what I want according to him we will not have sex in my father's house how boring.

Sbu: oh...look Oupa is here!

He shouts we turn and its Balenciaga his face is already frowning he hates this name so much and unfortunately its sticking we laugh at him

apparently we ruining his street cred he will be fine he greets everyone I've notice a vibe between him and Max and I have no intentions of asking what's that about they are two adults so they should fix it together anyway we enjoying our food with Ndu and Sbu asking Oupa 21 questions about nonsense.

Me: Owami can Max and I leave the kids here with you for a week we going on a vacation on Monday we actually leaving tomorrow evening.

Owami: okay baby that's no problem plus we hardly spend time with them so take as long as you can wherever you going.

Dad: where are you going?

Me: Max said England.

My mom, dad and Baba immediately look at Max silently okay what's going on? Baba nods his head and go back to eating my mom looks at me worried and my dad just has a blank look .

Me: Am I missing something?

I ask Max.

Max: don't worry about it I'll tell you later.

He says kissing my cheek now I know his hiding something from me and my parents know what is it. After the break fast Siya asked the parents for a meeting with us so we currently in my dad's office and they looking at us weirdly my home is so big that we actually have a boardroom well my dad's office is connected to the boardroom you actually have to go through his office to get to it so we heading there. We all settle down I actually miss this, this is where we had family meetings more like disciplinary hearings whenever we fucked up that's how we got punishments if you found yourself in this room you know you know you in some deep shit anyway my parents are looking more surprised that we even initiated this they know we hate this room.

Nthando: God I hate this room .

They chuckle.

Lu: yea this room brings memories.

Dad: so why are we here? I'm pretty sure we don't need punishments.

Ndu: actually you do dad we all are not happy with how you do things now.

My mom's face gets serious immediately I did say whenever it comes to our happiness she makes sure we are all beyond happy at the end of the day, on the other hand my dad and Baba are relaxed looking at us one by one Balenciaga just has a blank look.

Owami: we listening.

Sbu: we are not happy that we no longer get any allowances.

Lu: uhmmm....yes now I can't take the babes out properly.

Nthando: and my standard of living has dropped.

Siya: yes so we have come to the conclusion that we should received R30 000 each.

Ndu: yes and that mean each parent has to give us R30 000 per child.

All the Khumalo babies nod their heads in agreement.

Kuhle: just to clarify its R30 000 per child from each parent.

Lu: this does not include the girls since they married and their husbands give them everything that they don't even need.

Me: hawu..!

Nono: hai hai hai I don't agree!

Zizi: yes we get whatever we want from our husband but a girl can never have enough.

She says pouted.

Siya: girls you not included in this deal we not even discussing it.

Me: if that's the case then my lovely parents you don't need give them any allowance these people are fine.

They all exclaimed loudly at me.

Zizi: uhmmm so decide we in the deal or no one gets nothing remember all Nthombi ka Baba just

has to do is blink her cute eyes at them and they will agree to whatever she says.

My brothers go silent and look at each other they at me.

Ndu: okay fine but that means Entle has to convince the oldies that they have to give R40 000 since they have more money.

They nod their heads again in agreement we all turn to look at our parents and they looking at us shocked.

Dad: I don't know whose kids are you certainly don't belong to me.

Baba : I don't Know what you all are smoking but I suggest you stop it it's not for you.

Wow these men.

Balenciaga: you all are serious?

My mom just looking at us.

Owami: you ain't getting shit from me.

Nthando: hauw ma.

Siya: okay Nthombi ka Baba do your thing.

I look at my dad.

Me: daddy... we asking nicely please.

I blink looking at him then turn to Baba.

Me: Baba ka Nthombi your grandchildren are hungry you should see Thandos fridge it just has an empty water bottle and one onion his this silent because of hunger look at him hunger is written all over his face.

I say sweetly blinking my long lashes and pout my lips as little he looks at Thando he has a blank look my brothers are holding in their laugh. Baba turns to look at dad.

Baba: okay fine we will....

Owami: haaai you two are weak man she didn't even have to bag just two words here and there and you already giving in?? Wow you disappoint me Khumalo.

Dad: come on Owami you saw her face and look at Thando my son is hungry.

We bust out laughing.

Juice: I can't believe that you hold so much power over the deadliest man in this continent.

Nono: it's called last born potion.

Balenciaga: well that potion does work because my cheque book is ready.

Owami: weak men I tell you! How to you even deal with her?

She says clapping her hands looking at Max.

Max: I just give her whatever she wants .

My mom looks at me and clicks her tongue dramatically we laugh at her.

Siya: okay that's enough let's get to the reason of why we all here.

We all get silent and give him our attention.

Siya: we heard that you've been looking for some people who don't want be found.

They look at each other and back at Siya.

Baba: if you talking about the underworld then yes we've been looking for a few individuals.

Ndu: and how is the search coming along?

My mom groans frustrated.

Owami: the others I was able to find but there's are some who I just keep hitting a dead block honestly its tiring and irritating me.

Thando: who exactly are you looking for?

Dad: well we more interested in finding the kk table then there is Silence, blue twins, stones and Medusa.

We silently look at them.

Sbu: why are you looking for them.

Owami: please don't tell me you forgot everything that we taught you.

Ndu: always know who is in your circle even if you do not interact with them or they don't affect you.

Lu: knowledge is power.

Juice: quick question...when you were raising them, were you raising an army?

My dad churches.

Dad: no we not raising an army but Owami and I wanted to raise you all in a way that if it happens that we die we know that we have given you all the equipment and skills to do this life thing by your own without asking anyone for anything because at the end of the day no one owes you anything. We had to make sure that you are each others back bone you lean on each other I know you will always look out for each other.

We get silent again.

Siya: what if we told you that everyone you have listed is sitting around this table?

We just silent looking at each other my moms eyes keep running amongst us I can see the wheels turning in her head.

Balenciaga: I'm so confused.

No one responds Baba starts to laugh out loud I smile I know he has figured it out.

Owami: there's only one person who can block me out online and make sure that non of you exist you

literally are ghost and that person knows my work through and through

She says directly looking at me I smile sweetly at her she looks pretty.

Owami: Nthombenhle what did you do?

Baba: let me take a good guess Nthombi ka Baba you Medusa right?

I nod my head and he laughs again Balenciaga and Juice look like they about to faint Max keeps brush my thigh his so silent today it's like his not here.

Dad: and you two are the blue twins?

Nono/zizi: yes daddy.

Juice keeps looking left and right since they beside him his face is in disbelief clearly this is news to him.

Balenciaga: you two saved your great grandfather.

They nod their heads Baba just has an amused face you can tell his happy about this revelation.

Dad: kuhle you Silence.

Kuhle has a naughty smirk.

Baba: that was a given this one has been in your shadow for as long as I can remember his basically your mirror.

Dad just has an intense look Juice looks like his about to faint at any given time.

Balenciaga: can someone tell me what's going on?

Siya: what we are saying is you are sitting with the members of the KK table, Medusa, Blue twins, Silence and Stone.

Juice has his jaws on the floor Balenciaga has his eyes popped out Baba busts out laughing again mom and dad are just looking at us weirdly.

Thando: what we are basically saying is that please stop looking for us you are attracting unwanted attention that we don't need, yes?

Dad: you are so secretive wow are you even my kids?

We chuckle.

Owami: you guys have been at this for years and I don't know if I should be proud or worried.

Ndu: be proud mommy you gave birth to legends.

My mom giggles.

Dad: my powerful sperms.

Kuhle: hai hai dad we don't need to know that.

He says with a frown.

Balenciaga: so what you are telling us is that you are running the underworld?

Lu: well... we didn't know that but yes.

He says shrugging his shoulders.

Balenciaga: I think I'm relieved that it's you not a stranger.

Owami: actually while we on that your dad and I had a discussion that we going to retire meaning it's time we hand over to you all.

Zizi: we listening.

Owami: you three girls have to take over the black eye and my legitimate businesses.

I sigh.

Me: honestly Ma that might be too much for me because not only am I doing my job but also as a member of the KK table there's so much to do and we all know here that most of your work will fall on my shoulders I will need assistance but I know I won't get that from your daughter's they are doctors they know nothing about business at least when it comes to Blackeye I can only take the IT side of things everything else we can separate amongst ourselves considering our skills. Zizi and Nono can takeover dad's hospitals I will assist them where needed.

Dad: Owami I agree with her remember you also have Pandora's Box Entle can't take that transporting such is more of Nkosis job Entle can take over your corporate businesses since she has been trained by you and Baba for such and we all know here that she's really good with that.

Owami: okay I hear you.

We all discuss who is going to take over of what by the end of this meeting I'm hungry and I miss my kids I haven't seen them since morning Max has

been on my side silently I know when his like this something is bothering him and his probably scared to tell me but I know he will open up I just have to give him space and be patient with him. I find all the kids in the play room with the helpers the moment my princess sees me she starts to scream happily I actually miss her screaming my boys throw themselves on me the moment I sit on the floor. There is toys and balls everywhere this playroom has not changed much since I was small anyway I play with them and my sisters kids until Baba disturbs me.

Baba: let's take a walk.

I nod and sneak out the playroom he drives us to the beach the moment I get there I sink my feet in the soft sand I'm not a fan of the beach but once in a while its actually refreshing he takes my hand into his we start to walk slowly.

Baba: so you going to England tomorrow.

Me: yes I am.

He goes silent for a while the breeze is so nice and fresh and gentle I'm enjoying this.

Baba: how much do you love Max?

I smile softly.

Me: a lot I don't think my life would make sense without him.

Baba: I need you to do a favor for me.

I wait for him to continue.

Baba: always remember that love you have for him and always remember how much he loves you regardless of whatever color or character he chooses to reveal about himself to you always remember the love you both share for each other as much as I didn't want you to marry Max for reasons that are about to be revealed to you all that changed when I saw how he looks at you, no man will ever look at you like he does.

This is a bit confusing

Me: how does he look at me?

Baba: like the world begins and ends with you, you bring out the human in him.

I look at him.

Me: is that how you looked at grandma?

He nods his head.

Baba: I miss her so much my world did begin and end with her but unfortunately my world ended sooner than I expected the only reason I held on is for our kids and now our grandchildren but truth is my human side and so much of me died with her even though people say time heals but honestly all it has done for me is teach how to live without the love of my life and that is not easy because the longer I live without her harder it gets the more I die with her.

I never knew Baba has been this sad and lonely if there is one wish that would come true for me is to have my grandma back and alive it would fill my heart if only I could see Baba genuinely happy and content just once but unfortunately we don't always get what we want in life and some wishes

are not meant to come true. We stop walking and just hug him tightly he rests his chin on top of my head while I listen to his heartbeat his chest is warm.

I'm woken up by Max so early its 3am our flight leaves in an hour his already dressed and ready I just want to sleep. I lazily drag myself to the bathroom and take a quick shower hoping it will make me feel better but nope the only thing that will work is sleep I get dressed in Max's warm tracksuits they so baggy and comfortable and cuddly anyway as soon as I'm done I go kiss my babies goodbye I'm really going to miss them. My dad's driver takes us to the airport we will be using the private jet as soon as we settle in I go on top of Max get comfortable and pass out.

The moment we land in England we find 3 black Lamborghini trucks waiting for us with about 8 huge scary guards standing next to them. the weather here is rainy the skies are grey I could be home chilling in front of our fireplace this weather is not motivating me to explore this place. The

moment we get them the bow their heads and all sing “ good day Master “ honestly I’m beyond shocked anyway we drive to wherever since Max refuses to tell me for some reason I’m feeling unsettled like something doesn’t feel right even the guards here are scary unlike the ones I’m used to back home I cant even say hello to these ones we never even drive like this at home the only time we have a convoy is when we going to one place using different cars my guards don’t follow us like this but now I feel like a president or we carrying something important in this car.

Me: Max..

Him: hmhhhmm..

his not even looking at me.

Me: why are travelling like this?

He looks at me.

Him: why are you whispering?

I look at him blankly then look at the two guards in front then back at him he chuckles

Him: you scared of them?

Me:....

I just look at him fuck yeah I'm scared of them but I'm not going to say that to him he just shakes his head and go back to his phone, We continue driving in silence until we pass some tall green trees eventually I see a big tall wall it's like it's been built with a big black stone's behind it I see a castle I swear this is your Disney type of castle that looks more like a game of throne type its huge and black I've never seen such in my entire life okay only on tv I thought such places only existed before my parents were born anyway I see the gate open it's a heavy big metal that's been held by big chains on both sides it slowly goes down I swear this is some game of throne shit. We drive in and I see more guards this place is fortures it's clear nothing comes in or out without these people seeing it.

The air in this place is different it feels uneasy I look over at Max as we still driving in and his whole demeanor has changed his aura feels heavier than normal I honestly feel uneasy it's like

there is some shadow larking around I definitely know that this place is going to give me nightmares anyway we park and we step out the car looking at the sky it's a bit foggy this place is haunted. Max holds my hand and we walk towards the big wooden doors the closer we get the faster my heart beat increases I swear someone is behind me I feel a heavy presence I turn and find no one my body shivers I hold Max's hand tightly he looks down at me.

Me: Max why are we here?

I'm trying to hide the fear in my voice but I'm failing. When I look up at him I see a different Max I've never found Max scary or intimidating like how everyone sees him but right now I swear my blood just froze.

Max: you shaking Lilly...

He says looking at me intensely and his right my whole body is shaking in fear his eyes look darker even the gray eye looks much more darker it feels like his about to snatch my soul I really don't

recognize this Max, he turns and cups my face looking into my eyes

Max: hey relax nothing is going to happen to you here okay?

I nod my head like a kid my voice just failed me he kisses me gently his lips feel cold and soft.

Max: remember I love you okay?

I nod my head again he takes my hand and we continue walking towards the big wooden door everyone keeps bowing their heads when we pass them. The moment we get to the door he holds that big black metal thingy that's for knocking he hits it twice against the door we hear the door open it makes a wooden and metal noise the slowly open I'm holding my breath in the moment I some light the wind hits my face I see an elderly white woman with white short hair she has an apron on next to her is a younger white lady with ginger curly red hair she's probably my age or older she's also in an apron they both bow their heads and chant "good day Master" the younger lady keeps looking at me and back down she's trying to see my

face they move away and allow us to pass and follow us as we walk in the first thing I see is a big staircase with wooden rails on both sides its literally in the middle of the room I look up I see a big beautiful chandelier as we about to walk up the stairs the old lady speaks.

Old lady: Master I will fix a room for your guest I'm sorry I was not made aware that you coming with someone.

We both turn to look at her.

Max: don't worry about that Mary she will be staying my room we want to rest now we will be down for dinner.

The girl immediately looks up at me and quickly looks down okay she is weird this place is weird anyway we continue walking and I'm just looking at everything I don't know if I should say its beautiful or not it's just I feel like I'm in a Disney movie we keep passing doors and I still feel like something is going to jump at me this passage is dim it doesn't make things easier anyway we walk into a big wooden door it's so big and tall. The first

thing I see is a big bed in the middle it has four golden pillars that have white sheets hanging nicely it looks beautiful there is a big white fluffy rug on the floor a small two seater couch and a small glass coffee table the next corner has a big wooden wardrobe this room feels like I'm queen Elizabeth's room I don't know how it looks like but I'm sure something like this. I'm brought back by Max who is stretching his neck I hear his muscles crack I go on top of the bed and crawl behind him and remove the sweater his wearing and start to massage his shoulders he groans out.

Me: why are you tense?

He just groans at me I continue and the door opens I look over and it's the ginger red hair girl she stares at me for a moment then move aside for the guards to bring in the bags I get off the bed and go to my cosmetic bag I pull out my baby oil when I turn back I find ginger red hair girl still looking at me I frown looking at her she turns and walks out. I walk back to Max and stand between his legs he

wraps his arms around me and pulls me closer I smile at him and peck his lips and take off his shirt.

Me: lay down on your stomach.

He does as told I pour some baby oil on him and start to give him a back rub and his shoulders he keeps groaning until he falls asleep I cover him with a fleece and I change my clothes and get comfortable on top of him he feels warm and cozy. Later I'm woken up by Max busy kissing me and fiddling with in my vagina I'm already wet and ready for him it's been a while, he flips me over and gets between my legs I feel him slide in its like he knew that I dont want four play I hear him curse softly in my ear as he adjusts inside me I grab his ass and pull him closer to my skin and arch my back I already feel my tears threatening to come out I swear Max is my drug he pulls my thigh up on his side and pushes in deeper I moan out and squeeze his ass he has a firm thick ass. He starts to move slowly in and out I meet his thrusts following his rhythm, his waist start to move in circles I dig my nails in his back as I feel my blood

rush I feel his lips and tongue on my neck I think this bed is spinning his kisses move to my jawline before I know it I'm sharing my breath with him. My body starts to heat up I try to catch my breath but Max is not giving me a chance before I know it we cum together he relaxes on top of me while I catch my breath he looks up at me for a moment and I see my Max he gives me a passionate kiss that leaves me breathless again.

Max: you look beautiful.

I blush.

Me:thank you.

He stares at me he wants to say something but his holding back.

Me: talk to me.

Max: remember when you told me about your underworld work?

I nod my head.

Max: well since you already know about my drug business there is a side of it I never told you about.

Okay what could be worse than being married to a drug lord?

Me: please don't tell me you into human trafficking.

Max: no I would never do that but its probably much more worse.

We stare at each other for a while I'm trying to think what's more worse I'm not in a position of judging him but I'm scared for the first time in this marriage I'm scared that whatever he wants to tell me might make or break us.

Eventually we go have dinner everything here feels like royalty we dinning on a very long table that's filled with so much food we not even going to eat half of this.

Me: why is there so much food just for two people.

Max: whatever is left here the staff eats it.

Me: okay how many people live here?

Max: here just me and the guards but they all sleep in their quarters.

Me: why exactly do have this place? You do realize its creepy as fuck right?

Max: you will find that out tomorrow now let's go sleep.

He says lifting me up from my chair I quickly take the chicken tray I'm not done with it it's so delicious, I see some one at the corner of my eye quickly hiding away maybe I'm seeing ghosts or my imagination is playing tricks on me. The moment we get into the bedroom we call my parents to check on the kids then call my sisters too.

In the morning I woke up alone in bed I sit up and check my phone first as I'm busy a girl suddenly walks in from the door that's inside Max said it's the bathroom she quickly looks down.

Her: morning mam I'm here to help you with your bath.

I frown.

Me: help me with my bath??

Her: yes mam.

Okay this is some weird shit anyway I need to pee so I just get up and follow her the moment I get in there I see a something like a pool that's filled with water at one corner it's the toilet the other corner is a basin and a mirror. I see another girl who is busy checking the water temperature I greet her and quickly go pee then strip naked both the girls avoid looking at me I walk into the warm water it feels like I'm walking into a muddy bath that's hot this is it's not even a bathtub it's a built in bath I don't know if I'm making sense it has a sitting space inside the water is up to my shoulders my feet are floating but it's nice. I relax as they both wash my body I could live like this forever I don't know about other people but I know that I sometimes get lazy to bath or shower so this right here is heaven sent. As soon as I'm done getting dressed I walk out the room I wonder where is Max I look both sides of the passage and decide to take the left side I think that's where we came from last night I keep walking looking at the pictures and paintings on the walls one thing I've noticed is the X signs almost everywhere even in our room there

is a painting that has a X that's on fire. I eventually see the staircase I walk down I look left then right I see no one I feel the hair in the back of my neck stand I quickly turn only to see a shadow disappear by the corner my heart is beating so loudly its silent too silent here I jump when I hear a banging sound only to find Max closing the door he looks wet and his breathing heavy I can tell he comes from jogging I just throw myself on him he catches me.

Max: hey why are you shaking? Are you okay?

I don't know whats wrong with this place I just don't want to be here.

Max: you do realize I'm wet right.

I just hold him tightly. He starts walking I don't care where his going all I know is I'm not leaving his side in this haunted place.

Max: Lilly what's wrong?

Me: just don't leave me alone again.

I say removing my face from his neck and look at him the moment I see his dark eyes I get off him

that is not my Max I go sit on the bed as he goes to take a bath I sit alone waiting for him something is not right here if it's not the shadows lurking around it's the creepy helpers then there is Max who looks and feels nothing like my husband. I miss my kids I want to go home, I get distracted when Max walks in naked he not minding me his even whistling a tune only known to him I watch him lotion his body this man is a work of art I watch as he lotions his toned legs he has a really nice ass.

Max: stop being a pervert.

I blink a couple of time I didn't realize I zoned out I find him looking at me with a smirk on it's not his usual smirk he actually looks more evil than anything I really don't like how he looks I shift uncontrollably he frowns at me why am I suddenly uncomfortable with him?

Max: Lilly...

I jump frightened I didn't see his in front of me his just shirtless when did he get dressed?? I look up at him and I find a concerned face but his eyes says

something different they not as warm as they usually are when he looks at me for a while then he sighs out and sit next to me he picks me up and I sit on his lap with my head on his shoulder.

Max: I'm sorry.

I don't say anything I don't even know why his apologizing I also don't know what to say to him all I know is everything here is scaring me.

Max: it's not my intentions to scare you I'm just a different person when I'm here but know I would never harm you in anyway I love you.

I stay silent for a while.

Me: I want to go home.

Max: we will I promise I just want to show you something first I was hoping it will be today but we have a dinner we need to get ready for tonight then I'll tell you everything.

Me: what if I don't want to know?

He sighs.

Max: you have to know.

He says gently brushing my back I think I feel better.

Max: just know that whatever I show you and tell you doesn't change my love for you I'm still your Max and that will never change.

I stay in his arms for a while I even fall asleep. He later wakes me up to eat we have brunch while my mind is overthinking everything the helpers are very busy today including the guards Max says they getting ready for the gala dinner that is happening tonight I thought that's a celebrity thing but clearly Max has his own thing going on here. I spend the rest of the day lazying in our bedroom I think it's the only room that is not haunted well I didn't check other rooms I'm scared that something will jump on me if I open one of those doors but Max said he is going to give me a tour I rather do that with him.

Right now its afternoon and Max got me four ladies to help me get ready for tonight they silently doing their job those two girls came to give me a bath again now these ones are busy with my nails and

hair they came with big princess gowns wuuuu... looks like I'm going to be Cinderella tonight I've always been scared of ball gowns because I'm short I feel like they will drown me but we will see. As soon as the ladies are done with my make up and hair I choose this deep red glittery dress it has a off the shoulder sleeves its beautiful my hair is tied up nicely in a bun that has a small crown. I step into the dress the two ladies pull in up looks like it's a corset the lady behind me starts to pull the strings tightly I don't think I'll be able to breath or even get anything into my stomach as soon as she is done I breath out this is really tight. She tells me to turn to the mirror and man this dress is heavy the moment I see the mirror I'm speechless literally my jaw is on the floor I look so beautiful this highlighter makes my cheekbones look amazing my blue Eye is popping tonight. I cant stop starrng at myself it's a good thing I'm wearing comfortable heels because it was going to be hard walking in this heavy dress plus it has a tail so you can imagine anyway as soon as I'm ready one lady leads the way I follow her we walk

down the stairs and I see Max waiting for me his eyes are glued to me my blood rushes through my body I love it when this happens. He is dressed in a nice black fitted tuxedo he looks all sorts of sexy the moment I get to him he pulls out his hand for me I take it blushing like crazy.

Max: you look beautiful.

He says softly looking down at me I feel tingles in my stomach.

Me: thank you.

He starts walking with my arm hooking on his arm his demeanor has changed again he feels heavy it feels like I'm walking with a big boss I feel my confidences going from 0 to 100 I turn my head and see the girl with ginger red hair looking at us more like staring I stare back at her something is up with this one and I cant put a finger on it but I'll find out later. We finally make it to the dinning hall I see three long tables with people sitting around them the tables are set with glasses,spoons and center pieces it's all in gold and white its beautiful the moment they notice us everyone stands and

look at us walk in I notice it's a room full of men in suits our table is up front with two chairs in the middle this is some royalty shit when we get there we sit then everyone sits everyone has been quiet looking at me and Max the moment I settle comfortably on my chair it's a good thing that it can accommodate my dress I start to run my eye through every face some look familiar too familiar actually it then clicks that most of these men are drug lords that run some African countries but according to my knowledge Max supplies them so technically his the man behind the scenes I get distracted when Max starts speaking his voice fills this room I look at him.

Max: Good evening it's always lovely having you all here and looking clean. I normally welcome you with a long speech but tonight its different as you can see that the queen of this castle has joined us I expect you to give her the same respect as you give me because in my absence she will be running everything.

I ain't running shit his crazy I'm not going to run a haunted castle somehow my eyes find Garfield he is standing next to the guards awkwardly looking at me I seriously don't like this guy he has an off vibe about him I don't like it. Max finishes his speech well I hear everyone count.

Everyone: Yes Master X.

Okay I didn't hear half of his speech wait...what did they say?? Master X?? I look at Max who is whispering something to the waitress since they now walking in with food. My mind is still stuck on Master X he cant be Master X, Master X is a myth to scare people he doesn't exist he cant exist I look around this room that has about 50 men who warship Max which is impossible since they are druglards these men are prideful they can never warship anyone like they do with Max this doesn't make sense at all.

I have my dinner silently while Max who is entertaining his guests he keeps introducing some of them to be honest my brain is working over time the level of respect they show Max is shocking

some you can even see the fear in their eyes. A huge part of me is praying that Max is not Master X but a small part of me knows that it's just wishful thinking clearly I don't know the man I'm married too. Anyway I enjoyed the food even though I couldn't eat as much as I want because of the corset the moment I took it off I could finally breath. I'm listening to Max who is snoring on top of me his so heavy and he likes doing this especially when he has so much to drink like tonight now his huge head is comfortably pressing my boobs with his legs and arms wrapped around me like a super glue I know we going to stay in this position till morning even if I sweat he wont move I wont even pee till morning. I don't know when I fell asleep but I'm woken up the urge to pee and Max is still wrapped around me I even feel a cramp coming on my leg we've been in this position for too long I start to wiggle out of his hold trying to loosen his arms but he decides to to groan and reposition I'm really going to pee myself I wiggle again.

Max: uhhmm.... Stop moving.

He says in his sleepy voice I just want to say nut in me.

Me: I need to pee.

He is snoring again I wiggle again he starts groaning.

Me: Max move I need to pee.

He moves over I quickly go to the toilet and relieve myself when I'm done i walk towards the balcony and open the door for some fresh air the wind hits my skin violently I get goosebumps the view is breathtaking all I see is tall green trees with fog covering the ground they sky is gray this is really refreshing you can even smell the trees there are no houses here or roads or something that shows that there other people living here it's just us creepy I tell you. I feel strong arms lift me up in the air I squeal as he scared me he walks back to bed to bed with me he covers me with the blanket and wraps himself on me again I thought he was sleeping.

Me: Max I don't want to sleep anymore.

I say looking up at his face he has his eyes closed.

Max: shhhhh... you could close your eyes.

Me: no I don't want to sleep.

He just kisses my forehead and ignores me. I stare at him, his breathing softly. I run my finger on his lips, then move to his huge scar, then his jawline. Then I cup his cheek, his lip slightly pout. I pull myself up and kiss him. He groans, tightening his grip around me. I bit his bottom lip. I feel his dick jerk on my thighs. He quickly pulls out the kiss.

Max: we can't. I will hurt you.

He still has his eyes closed. As much as I'm horny, I know that I don't want to hurt him. So I just snuggle on his chest and fall asleep. I'm woken up by Max, who is nibbling on my ear, whispering. God knows what I moan, trying to tell him to stop.

Max: wake up, there is something I need to show you.

Me: later.

I whisper back, I feel too sleepy.

Max: no now.

He says getting out of bed he pulls me out as well I know his carrying me to somewhere I just want to sleep next thing I feel warm water cover me from my legs to my night dress I open my eyes and see that we in this huge bathtub you know I don't complain about such things anymore Max does whatever Max does I can complain till kingdom come but I know he will keep doing whatever he wants. He pulls up my night dress then throws it on the side I'm just looking at him I don't want to bath or do anything I'm tired and he doesn't get it we slept late. I feel his hand slip into my underwear then his finger into my nunu I relax in his arms and take in all the pleasure he removes his finger he grabs my underwear I feel it tear years later he still tears all my underwear I think I buy a new pair every week sometimes I don't want to wear it and he complains he says he likes seeing me in my sexy lingerie okay back to what is happening buy now I'm about to cum his long fingers keep digging deeper inside I'm about loose it I moan out releasing everything. I catch my

breath I want more of him I want to feel him inside me but he still refuses I sulk and he doesn't mind me instead he baths me and himself when his done his dressed me warmly.

Max: come.

He says already taking my hand and we walk out we keep walking and turning corners we get to this other staircase its spiral creepy very creepy I hold him tightly as we keep going down the moment we get down the door opens we walk in this is a dungeon a huge dungeon it has thick metal cages it doesn't smell nice in here I gag I see guards standing in corners my eyes move to some corner it has those old torture equipments my heart rate keeps increasing by every passing minute my blood is rushing this place doesn't feel right. He pulls me in one cage I see two pitbulls and 3 rottweilers these dogs look like they hit the gym why do they have so much muscle but they look cute I want to pat them I move closer to the cage they just looking at me I put my hand in to reach on the pitbull it has gray eyes reminds me of Max

I'm actually going to get myself a pit pull that looks like this one. As I'm about to touch it Max quickly pulls my hand back.

Max: I wouldn't do that if I were you.

I was about to ask why but one guy walks in with a bowls it looks bloody he opens the cage then push the bowl inside and close the door the dogs walk to the bowl and pull out the meat I guess its feeding time I see one dog that's holding a piece of meat I realise it's a hand wait what??.

Me: Max that's a hand.

Max: they eat human flesh fresh human flesh that's why I don't not want you to touch them they would rip your hand off your body.

I gasp. We walk in deeper I notice a small body curled up in the corner that person looks like a possessed person who is so skinny and going through the most I know I've killed mercilessly before but I would never torture a person it's not my thing. Max hits the metal twice I hear the sound of chains fill the room I look over at some cages

that's where the sounds are coming from I realise its people standing up and moving close to the door I take a step back as I feel my heartbeat racing. They all chant "Master" with their heads bowed I look at this one who is closer he has a hug heavy looking chain that is hanging from the neck to the wall. Max walks slowly to one cage he stands in front of the person who still has his head down.

Max:Fiona.

Person: yes Master.

It's a female voice I'm scared to move closer but I find myself moving towards Max I want to see this person.

Max: look at me.

She slowly moves her head up I gasp as I realize its Fiona who kidnapped him but this looks like a shadow of Fiona she is skin and bones she is bold I literally see her cheekbones and skull she is just wearing a vest and underwear she is shivering I see the fear in her eyes she has these dark circles around her eyes her lips are purple grayish her

thighs look like my arms that's how skinny she is I can see her kneecaps the fear in her eyes can not be missed it makes me wonder what Max did to her she is so submissive in a scary way.

Max: sit.

She immediately goes on her knees and bows her head she looks so small this is disturbing Max takes my hand and I follow him we walk towards the end of the room the door opens it heads outside first thing I see is a garden it has sprinklers on I see fruits o think its watermelons the sprinklers stop as we wall towards them I then realize those are not watermelons they are people heads alive people their bodies are buried the only thing outside is their heads they guy next to my foot is breathing heavy what the fuck is this?? We pass this one I see the next one behind him his trying to move his head away from the earthworm that's crawling towards his face I want to remove it.

Max: don't even think about it.

Me: but it might go in his nose.

Max: if his smart he will open his mouth and eat it.
I look at him astonished and his actually serious his face is hard for a moment there I'm intimidated by him he takes my hand and pulls me I follow him passing the heads I don't know what kind of gardening this is I can not even imagine how these people feel not being able to move. We finally come to the end of the garden we step on a concrete I see a lot of drains here you see those round metal drains you find in the middle of the streets yes those but there is a lot of them here too many actually I'm looking at Max walking around them I'm just trying to figure out why there so many drains in one spot.

Max: Lilly.

Me: huh??

Max: come.

I walk towards him his standing between two drains his eyes are drilling at me my blood still rushes whenever he stares at me even though I don't recognize my husband but he still gives me

the same effect like the first time I met him. I stand in front of him I look up at him he kisses my cheek and I blush.

Max: this here is the first stage.

He says bending down and opening one drain he pulls the door up.

Max: come.

I walk closer and look inside I see a man inside he looks up at us covering his eyes with his hand I think the light is too bright for him it's not even sunny. This looks like a deep cylinder there is a bucket next to him you cant even stretch his legs in here unless he stands up. With this weather I can bet that its shit cold in here, I step back then he closes the door and stands he takes my hand I silently follow him he shows me everything from what they do when they get new members until they sent them to the streets honestly I understand why this place is haunted Max has created a place that literally snatches souls he is like the devil himself the only difference is that you don't give your soul willingly instead he takes

it if he sees fit I'm really scared of him too scared of him what happens if I do him wrong? Maybe cheat on him not that I would do that willingly but shit happens as much as I hate it I know I will hurt him unintentionally it's just im human and Max is a monster walking on earth I know he loves me but now the question is would he put me through all of this because I hurt him? People like Max are unpredictable I can never over exaggerate myself place in his heart that's if I have a place in his heart as much as I believe that our love is enough but I know things can take a different turn. now it makes sense how he distance himself from his family and friends he has bounties at first I thought its because they disowned him but I think that is when he found this dark a Side of him and this side doesn't allow him to love to the fullest I think he tries but it will never be enough. We walk into some garden it's so beautiful it has these beautiful colorful flowers and a beautiful greenery there is a swing and a small waterfall I could have the most beautiful picnic here how these flowers blooming beautifully in this weather either way I

think I'm in love with this place I'm not a garden person but this I would definitely have. I think growing flowers has its people not everyone can master the art of growing flowers and plants maybe I'll just have my gardener help me with it. Back to now we both sit on a bench that is covered with small white roses around it, I lay my head on his shoulder our fingers intertwine we sit in silence for a while I don't know what to think of about all of this I cant say if I'm angry at him for being that monster he is but in all of this my love has not changed I think the conversation I has with Baba has a lot to do with this truth is I love him more than life itself I know if he were to put in this place my love for him would be the only thing that keeps me going as much as sounds toxic I would rather loose my soul to Max than anyone one else. This place breaks you in every possible way then Max comes to built you and mold you into what he wants you to be after you start to see him as a God your God you warship him in every way possible you fear him more than death now can somebody please tell me how do I live with such a person and

not have doubts in the back of my mind?how? Its impossible. The problem about life is that shit happens for suck sakes we humans shit goes up and down all the time what if just what if I push him far enough to put me in this place? Honest for the first time im scared of Max.

Max: you know this doesn't change the Max you fell in love with?

He says softly but truth is I don't believe him I really want too but I just cant this doesn't change the fact that I'm married to a Monster Max is the devil if he grew horns right now I wont be surprised I'm not trying to be judgment but this man here owns people's souls. How do you torture a person to a point where they fear you more than death? These people cant commit suicide because in their heads they think they will find Max waiting for them in the other side to punish them. They cant even have lives all they know is Max they cant have families because he wipes them all out then remove their ability to make families meaning they dont have dicks he chops them off they don't

see reason to live besides Max I could call any woman and they wont have any effect on them because they live to warship Max for fuck sakes who am I married too? It's one thing to torture and kills someone but to break them to this point its just beyond me I'm seriously failing to understand.

I sit in silence listening to my thoughts he gets called by one of the guards he lives me to my thoughts I even have a headache this is too much I sit there for a while eventually I back to the house I got lost a few times luckily a guard helped me when I get inside I find the helpers setting for lunch time I go take a quick bath how I wish they had a shower here maybe I would feel better all I know is I'm feeling down I don't know if I'm doubting my love with Max or I'm just scared of the monster he is. As soon as I'm done getting dressed I go sit for this lunch I don't even have a appetite I sit and dish up for myself and start eating slowly I keep zoning in and out I get distracted by ginger red hair girl who is staring at me I don't even know where she comes from honestly I'm not mood for her.

Me: what??

I say with so much attitude.

Her: are you the masters new mistress?

Me: are you the masters old mistress?

She just looks at me I just realised I've been living in the same house with Maxs boody call can my live get better than this?? I cant even put her in a jealous type shes just weird its like she wants us to be boody call sisters I'm really not in the mood for this she eventually walks away I eat my food in peace then go to a room it's a library Max showed me earlier on. I pull out a random book to read just to distract myself fro my thoughts this is not working so I go to the kitchen and start baking a storm I chased everyone out the kitchen to hear myself think and everything in me screams fear Max my tears are not even doing me justice I don't know why I'm crying I keep wiping them but it makes no difference I'm scared, I'm scared of Max, I'm scared for my marriage, I cant stay married to someone I fear I'm doubting his love for me. I suddenly finding it hard to breath I keep gasping

for sir I grab my shirt tightly trying to pull it I feel someone grab me and remove the apron and sweater quickly I then realise its Max I'm left of a bra on he takes a step back looking at me.

Max: lilly breath please...

He pleads with me his eyes are blood shot red I exhale loudly and inhale again slowly closing my eyes I need to regulate my breathing or ill have a panic attack I breath a few times I open my eyes and find Max hovering over me I hang my head on his chest he pulls me closer I inhale his scent I really live for this man I don't know what I would do without him his the air I breath. When I've calmed down Max carries me to our room he lays me on top of the bed I cant help but think that Max will hurt me one day another part of me feels like I'll never view Max the same I always knew that his not perfect but this is too much. I'm brought back from my thoughts when I feel Max lay on top of me we both naked clearly that happened when I was still zoned out he looks into my eyes and all I've

been doing is crying I'm searching for my Max but I'm not finding him.

Max: I love you...

I just keep looking into his eyes I think I need the reassurance more than anything.

Max: Lilly I love you...

He says softly again looking at him I feel him kiss me I freeze but that doesn't discourage him.

Max: it's me Lilly... I love you

He says in my mouth I find myself responding to his kiss my arms go over his broad shoulders I run my nails down his back he shivers groaning his lips move from mine to my jawline then my ear he nibble on it making my head spin.

Max: I love you...

He whispers I open my legs for him and pull him closer his dick is knocking on my nunu I move my hand to his dick I stroke it a few times then direct it into my nunu he pushes himself in I moan softly and he curses he makes love to me whispering how much he loves me by the time we done I'm

worn out and we pass out cuddling I feel much better now I think all the assurance has made me less emotional and less overthinking I think we going to be okay.

I wake up still tangled with Max my stomach grumbles I haven't had anything since morning all the crying and love making has me starving. I'm listening to this one breath I know his not sleeping.

Me: Max...

Max: just pee on the bed it's fine..

He says snuggling his head on my shoulder I chuckle.

Me: I'm hungry.

Max: uhmmm...eat me

Me: no I want food.

Max: I'm beef steak with your green salad.

I laugh.

Me: no let me go find something to eat.

Max: it's nearly dinner time don't wo they will call us.

Me: speaking on that why didn't you tell me about ginger red hair.

Max: ginger red hair??

Me: the girl who is always following Mary around.

He laughs.

Max: oh.... You mean Victoria? There is nothing to tell there she was just my sex toy for when I'm here.

He says coolly.

Me: was?

Max: yes was I stopped when I met you.

Me: uhmmm... she has a weird vibe.

Max: that's because I made her submissive she will never do anything to piss me off that means she will not mess with you since I've made clear that you must be respected just like me or they will face whatever punishment I see fit.

Me: uhmm... okay now tell me why is Fiona the only girl you have here.

Max: I've never been interested in taking in woman.

Me: why?

Max: men are easy to break we not as emotionally and mentally strong as you women even with Fiona I had to be more extreme compared to the men no man would survive what I've done to her and yet shes still standing. She is more of an experiment if she makes it out like I think she should then she will be running Rome for me I will watch her closely and if she in anyway tries anything I will kill her.

Okay I dont know what to say to that.

Max: anyway after dinner there is something we need to attend too.

Me: which is?

Max: don't you miss the smell of blood?

I didn't expect that question.

Me: does it make me a bad person if I say yes?

Max: I wouldn't say a bad person but it definitely makes you Mrs X. I knew you were specially made for me when I saw the video of you killing the Portuguese.

Me: I can't believe that this is our pillow talk.

Max: we are a weird couple I'm your beast your my beauty my beautiful delicate flower it's always been you and I against the world and it will always be like that.

Me: over a cliff huh?

Max: just like at our first date.

I blush his right ever since we jumped over that high bridge together when he first took me out I know I would do it over and over again as long as it's with him.

We just finished having dinner we go take a bath and get ready for whatever he said we need to handle his dressed in all black looking sexy it's weird how I'm now in love with his alter ego he doesn't scare me as much anymore I don't know if the power he carries that has me turned on or I'm

just a monster like him. I'm currently dressed in a body hugging long dark green dress its plain with a high neck and long sleeves my back is bare since its a open back my ass and hips are popping. We make our way to the place he showed me where it all begins we walk into the dark room I hear fiddling and sniffing the lights go on I look on my right and I see a bunch of people including kids I notice Bongi holding two kids tightly who look terrified next to her I see Palesa also holding her daughter why is Amu's family here? I see another mix race family next to them. I look one side and see Amu and Miss Brazil tied on chairs behind them I see we have an audience it's the guards and some helpers I'm actually standing in the middle of the room Max has been standing behind the door with his hands in his pockets looking all sorts of sexy with his deadly face.

Me: what's their story?

I ask Max.

Max: well according to Garfield they asked him to assist them in killing the kids and make it my fault

so you can leave me and run back to Amu and somehow I end up with Monica.

The moment I heard my kids being killed my blood froze I slowly turn to look at Amu and miss Brazilian you can see Amu is scared as for Monica shes a tough cookie I guess being with Balenciaga has showed her a few things. Well since this is the first phase Max kills your family in front of you then go to the cylinder for 3 months, back to now I look at miss Brazilian and she has this daring look let me start with her I tuned back to her family I see a teenage girl who looks so much like her it's either she is her younger sister or her daughter either way I don't care.

Me: bring her to me.

I say to the guards pointing at her shes pretty it's a pity that such beauty is about to go to waste because of stupid people, one of the guards goes to grab her with her arm shes is already crying and kicking I look over at miss Brazilian and her eyes on her shes trying to be strong I admire her for that let's see how long that is going to last. He puts her

on her knees right in front of me we both facing miss Brazilian I look behind her I see ginger red hair and Garfield let me show him what happens when someone messes with what's mine I don't like him just like Bongs he has a off vibe when I get home I need to do some research on him.

Me: get me a knife that hurts.

I say to the guards before he goes back to his spot as he goes I remove the tap covering this girls mouth she immediately starts bagging for her life and praying nothing hurts like hearing your loved one cry and you cant do anything about it that shit hurts from your chest to your stomach and you will never stop hearing her cries. The guy hands me a knife that's medium size and looks very sharp at the top it curves making it look like a hook that is very pointy at the tip. I walk closer to her and pull her up with her ponytail shes still on her knees now miss Brazilian has tears threatening to come out, I feel a warm hand wrap around my waist I already know its Max his still the only who makes my blood rush I shiver a little I turn my

head slightly to look up at him he kisses the corner of my lips.

Max: over a cliff.

He whispers I turn back to miss Brazilian her eyes are glued on the girl I move my hand with the knife the hook points just under her ear I tighten my grip around it I move the knife and it digs on the side of her neck she screams painfully my eyes are still on miss Brazilian I see her tears drop I pull the knife it digs deeper I hear her gasping and gagging I slightly turn my hand and roughly pull it out the knife is hooked it pulls out her throat her blood splashes on miss Brazilian and all over the floor. I move my eyes to the audience Garfield and ginger red hair look frightened I wink at them and blow a kiss Amu is busy vomiting I throw her body a her feet her eyes have not left her Max kisses my neck is it weird that ii enjoy having him this close to me he does things for my ego and self esteem.

Me: who is next?

Max and I kill one by one by with him kissing and hugging me from time to time its actually the first

time I see him in his element I've never seen him kill ruthlessly before and I must say it was a beautiful sight to see by the time we done Amu and miss Brazilian look like they lost weight in a few hours my dress is covered in blood the smell of blood is so satisfying its like the smell of rain mixed with soil that unique smell that wants you to outside and eat that soil it's the exact feeling I get from the smell of blood.

MAX

I'm currently sitting in my office going through my paperwork I lift my head up and I see no one on my PA desk then her head pops up from under the table she gets back on her chair and starts typing on her laptop she still looks like the most beautiful woman I've ever seen. I'm talking about Lilly yes she is my PA this was the best decision I've ever made having her here makes coming to work amazing and fun shes been here for six month and I have no intentions of letting her go. This was supposed to be a temporary thing because my former PA got married and her and the husband

were relocating so I didn't have a PA for about two weeks until Lilly didn't like how I come late from since everything was a mess she offered to help me so I just told HR that we keeping her, anyway it's been amazing let me not even start with the office sex funny story people think I'm having a secret affair with my PA which is something I didn't expect because I thought they knew my wife but clearly not and most of them hate her she takes making appointments before seeing me serious so people don't just walk in my office like before worse she changed the door handle the moment you close the door it automatically locks and it can only read my finger prints and Lilly's to unlock then there is a button under my desk that allows me too open it without physically doing it most of the time the door is closed because some tried to ignore her and walk past her to my office the moment you try to open it I know she didn't let you in because she would come then I open for them or call me to open. Monday and Tuesday are my administration days so I see no clients or have any meetings those are moved to Wednesday,

Thursday and Friday now I'm never behind with paperwork and this has really helped now I don't get those unnecessary horny women who come to ask me stupid questions attempting to seduce me she even handles meetings with my underworld clients honestly Lilly is literally running my life without her everything will fall apart plus she sets up my schedule so well that we always home by 5pm, did I mention how strict she is with time so if you have an appointment and you come late we don't let the meeting go over the agreed time and she makes sure I'm on time all the time she even has my iPad set up with reminders and shit it's amazing I don't miss anything I love it. She sometimes attends meetings with me or on my behalf if I cant be in two places at once this where her business skills and bossy self shines and its sexy whenever she takes over in boardroom I love how her presence is felt she really boosts my confidence my ego is on steroids because shes just everything.

Me: Lilly.

I say answering my office phone while looking at her she's just has the phone between her shoulder and ear typing on her laptop I wonder what has her so busy.

Lilly: your 11am should be here anytime now, the purple file on your left is a summary of what they want.

Me: okay I love you.

She looks at me through the glass wall smiling.

Lilly: love you too now get into it call me if you need any clarification.

Then she hangs up and goes back to what she is doing I see the file and take it I look over the clock it's 10:30am I quickly run my eyes through it well this a client who just finished building their hotel so before the opening they need employees, marketing etc that's where we come in besides running my hotels we also do consultations for other hotels and outsource a whole team and employees to make sure your hotel is a success. I hear the door open I look up Lilly is opening for a

lady who looks like a model with a big ass and boobs those look fake she has a short tight black dress her sweet perfume fills my office I take my air conditioning remote and turn in on and drop the temperature a little.

Lilly: your 11am Mr Ngidi.

She says standing at the door looking sexy in a navy suit so professional I nod my head closing the file she immediately walks out closing the door. I turn my eyes on this one I stand and shake her hand she has long fingers and long nails, make up the works.

Her: I'm Fifi short for Refilwe Moloji.

She says running her eyes on my body to my face I have my blazer off I'm left with my shirt which looks a bit tight

Me: I thought I was meeting Mr Moloji.

Her: that is my father he bought the hotel for me as a birthday gift so it's my hotel.

Me: okay well let's get into it I've went through your profile can you tell me in detail what exactly do you want for me.

She starts to tell me slowly in a seductive way what she wants shes blinking and biting her lip my eyes move to Lilly and she is bending over her photocopy machine her round ass looks good in those pants this girl snaps her long fingers in my face I frown turning to look at her she turns her head to look at Lilly and back at me.

Me: I'm listening continue.

She leans over the table putting her long hands her boobs look like they about to fall out I look at her blankly she continues talking and talking I ask questions here and there I wish Lilly was sitting in this meeting. This goes on for a while until my phone rings I look over and its Lilly.

Me: excuse me I need to take this.

Me: Lilly.

Lilly: wrap it up its lunch time in 20.

Me: I feel like something meaty.

Lilly: okay let me order some.

Me: okay.

She hangs up.

Me: okay I heard what you said and I will get my team together and come up with two separate ideas that you will choose from then we will take it from there.

Her: okay we can have lunch together I'm starving.

Me: unfortunately I don't do lunch meeting and this meeting has come to end.

Well those are Lilly's orders I don't do lunch meetings when its lunch time its either I eat alone or with her apparently that's my break time it's meant for me to recuperate at the end shes the boss so whatever she says goes.

Her: it wont be a lunch meeting it will be us just getting to know each other since we will be working together.

Me: you wont be working with me directly there will be a project manager who will be handling you

and your hotel I don't work directly with clients unless its necessary.

Her: what if its necessary to work with me.

Me: I have too much on my plate to take on such a project it has too much work.

Doesnt she get the hint?? I don't want to work with her horny self, she was about to say something then the door opened Lilly walks in with food it smells like braai meat she has her blazer off so her tiny waist makes her big ass look even more sexy she quietly goes to set up the food on the small table next to the couch I turn back to this one and shes giving Lilly the stink eye Lilly is not even aware shes just doing her thing.

Me: Miss Moloji it was nice to meet you I'll Have my PA contact you for the next meeting.

I say walking around the table she needs to leave she looks at me standing slowly .

Her: please call me Fifi.

She says stand so close to me I move away from her and open the door so she can leave she glances

at Lilly who is comfortable on the couch chewing and going through her phone.

Me: bye bye.

She looks at me and walks out I go sit next to Lilly who is stuffing her face I think shes pregnant again oh... I forgot you tell you that it's been 2 years since the England trip and ever since that we are closer than ever my kids started kindergarten they no longer chubby like before the boys keep looking like me everyday Hlehle looks like her mom she doesn't scream as much anymore but she is very bubbly the boys are more reserved and always together you will always find them together at least now I can tell them apart. A lot has happened since then but nothing hectic I'll get to that later back to my Lilly as I was saying I think she is pregnant well I know that she is pregnant her boobs are bigger her hips are wider and she loves to sniff me apparently I smell amazing she loves cuddling on me she's really clingy and cute and very sweet unlike her last pregnancy I love this pregnancy more. I think her implant has expired

she was supposed to renew it I think 4 months ago I'm not going to remind her she will figure it out herself . We have our lunch over a silly conversation when we done she has me massaging her feet she falls asleep on the couch I cover her with a flees I got for her she sometimes takes naps here. I know I have a stuff meeting for miss Moloji so they can start with the designs and such I'm leaving Lilly here she hardly ever takes naps during the day but for the past two months it's been her thing I take my iPad and walk to the stuff boardroom before I get to the door I hear them talking about Lilly.

...: argh I don't like her ever since she got here we don't have a open door policy with the big boss

...: you just mad because you want to fuck him now you cant go seduce him with your "reports" you always claiming you taking to him.

....: I've seen the PA seduce him I think they fucking.

....: oh... come on we talking about the big boss here if Bianca the basic hoe couldn't seduce him

what makes you think he will fall for a PA?? Plus his married.

.....: married or not that PA is sexy af I would bury myself in her ass.

.....: wow Tebogo why am I not surprised??

.....: I'm just being honest and don't lie shes beautiful so if the big boss is tapping that I need to give him a hand shake girls like her don't come easy.

.....: Tebogo you poor so why would she fuck you her one outfit covers your monthly salary and I'm not talking Gucci.

.....: that's what happens when you fuck the boss he blesses you.

I decide to walk in and stand on the door looking at them they don't even notice me. I know Bianca shes a colored girl shes one of the ones who would come to my office to seduce me. Tebogo is one of my projects managers his good at what he does but his a huge player his probably fucked every girl in this room.

....: look all I'm saying is she must chill she walks around like shes the boss and she shits rainbows but shes just like every girl who wants a rich man to spoil her.

....: she even has her lunches in his office I seriously salute her pussy.

....: did you see her the last time we had a pitch with Mr Dladla??

....:shes beauty and brains she handled that meeting like a pro.

....: fuck that it's called pussy power Mr Dladla couldn't take his eyes off her shes probably fucking him as well clients don't just sign after one meeting.

Tebogo shakes his head disapproving Neo moves her eyes to the door she gasp frightened.

....: I saw a huge rock on her finger isn't she married?

.....argh anyone can buy themselves a ring and pretend to be married.

.....: no Bianca not that kind of ring.

Neo: Boss...

They all turn quickly I'm not even going address this. I quickly tell them about Miss Moloji and her hotel and what she wants Tebogo has send me an email asking me to mentor him how he handles this project will determine if I agree or not but I can already see potential in him I wouldn't mind mentoring him his smart and a hard worker.

Me: I expect your designs and detailed proposals submitted on Monday morning Lilly will be there to receive them.

Neo: but Sir that is too soon we need more time.

Me: if you have time to gossip about nonsense I'm sure you have time to get this done. Tebogo you will be heading this one don't disappoint me.

I say standing up they all silent I go back to my office I wake up Lilly as it's time to home. The moment we get home we welcomed by giggles I find Kuhle and Michael playing with them well these two became close when Kuhle moved here they always together Kuhle has a new girlfriend

she is so sweet and chubby big cheeks and all shes a nurse dark skinned always has short hair Lilly adores her shes quiet shy too she is Venda her name is Rendani, well Mbali didn't take that well when she found out but Khuhle put her in her place quickly plus Juice found out she had blessers and such he literally whipped her with a belt sold her apartment and car he bought for her and shipped her back home it was so shocking we really didn't expect such from her. Then there is Ndu and Sbu who are always here for Amahle and Esihle, Amahle is officially dating Sbu and Ndu is always cockblocking Esihle and it annoys the shit out of her its actually funny to watch I think he likes her too but is struggling to express himself their reality show is still on and its bigger we do appear here and there people love Amahle and Sbu apparently they are goals. Nthando has a baby girl who just turned one his a single father which caught us by surprise well some girl tried to trap him with a baby which never worked so she dumped the baby on his doorstep and he stepped up we thought he would take the baby to his

parents but he got a nanny and his raising her beautifully the princess is spoiled rotten and shes is the cutest baby . Then there is juice well Juice got Zizi pregnant when their babies were 4 months old and she was really not happy with that but she eventually forgave him and gave birth to a baby boy they love their kasi life I cant believe he took snobs and turned them ghetto the girls are doing amazing in the medical field Terminator couldn't be the proud they soo good at what they that they not under any hospital if you want them to operate for you then you pay big bucks their success rate is 98% and now they working on opening a pharmacy we all proud of then medicine is really a calling for them. Lilly obviously still has her side hustles on the side but now she handles her mother's businesses I don't even know how and where she gets the time to do all these things I married a super woman but I do worry about her sometimes I feel like shes carrying too much and now she is pregnant I need to gather a team that will help her with her business or I'll call her grandpa I'm sure he will help me speaking of him

he officially retired from being a mafia leader and his son Lilly's uncle who he was grooming has taken over so his living his best life travelling. Then Balenciaga finally married sis Busi they now live in the states they both happy he doesn't even care about where is monica his sons live in South Africa the one who studied law opened his law firm with Lu who also studied law both his parents past on last year it was sad but he got through it I guess sis Busi also helped. We have two helpers and two nannies they are good I guess Lilly has never complained about them